

The University of Chicago
Libraries



DURRETT COLLECTION

DAY THOUGHTS

ON THE
NEW TESTAMENT

CHICAGO LIBRARY

OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST.

WITH

BRIEF NOTES AND INSTRUCTIONS,

ALSO LINKING TOGETHER, INTO A CHAIN OF TRUTHS,
OLD TESTAMENT SCRIPTURES WITH THE NEW,
AND GOD'S BOOK OF NATURE.

BY

R. TENNENT SHAW.

TO THE LAW AND TO THE TESTIMONY: if they speak not according to this Word,
it is because there is no light in them.—ISAIAH viii. 20.

PUBLISHED FOR THE AUTHOR BY
J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO., PHILADELPHIA.

1875.

2258
SH 27

Y 125 1873
TO
Y 125 1873

BS 3540
S 55

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1873, by
R. TENNENT SHAW,
in the Office of the Librarian of Congress at Washington.

INTRODUCTION.

JESUS said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes. Even so Father; for so it seemed good in thy sight; Matt. xi. 25, 26. 1 Cor. i. 18: For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God. To worship a dead blood life body, a cross, or an image of a dead Christ, is not only foolishness, but mockery of Christ. Spirit born of the soul mind alone have an experimental knowledge of the glorious love and peace happiness, wisdom of God, and power. For it is written, Isa. xxix. 14. The wisdom of their wise men shall perish, and the understanding of their prudent men shall be hid. 1 Cor. i. 20: Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world (with sectarian spirit Babel towers; but in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men: Matt. xv. 9). Hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world (which grasps after dead bodies to resurrect, instead of a spirit born living new creature in Christ, 2 Cor. v. 17)? 21: For after (the spirit birth of the soul mind life immortal wisdom of God) the world by (collegiate) wisdom knew not God. 27: But God hath chosen (apparent to unspirit born, John iii. 5) the foolish things of the world to confound the wise (in their own conceit, Prov. xxvi. 12; and ignorance of spirit birth life love peace joys, wisdom); and things which are not (until spirit born), to bring to naught (blood life bodies, and souls) things that are: (29) That no flesh should glory in his presence. David with a smooth stone out of the brook slew Goliath the Philistine giant of Gath. And the Lord said unto Gideon, The people that are with thee are too many . . . lest Israel vaunt themselves against me, saying, mine own hand hath saved me: as do bishops, D.D.'s, popes, etc., who claim they by baptizing with water remit sins. But the

Scriptures give all glory to God, where it all belongs in Christ's sacrificial offerings. John i. 7: But if we walk in (love) light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin: when spirit begotten and born of God, v. 18. No pope, cardinal, bishop, D.D., or any other man official, by water baptism cleanseth any mortal from sin that is of Eden's beguiling serpent man glory. John baptized with water unto repentance. Matt. iii. 11: Christ shall baptize you (spirit born) with the Holy Ghost and with fire.

Ps. cx. 4: The Lord hath sworn and will not repent, thou art a priest forever after the order of Melchizedek. Heb. vii. 21-28: For the (mosaic) law maketh men high priests which have infirmity; but the word of the oath, which was since the law, maketh the Son, who is consecrated forever more. Those high priests of the law were made without an oath. Popes, cardinals, bishops, and other church officials that are sworn, are plainly false antichrist mockers of Christ, and show by their acts their desire to break the oath of the Lord, and substitute themselves in the place of Christ. And Peter for their chief corner-stone rock, of their spirit Babel men creed churches. Deut. xxxii. 31: For their rock is not as our rock, even our enemies themselves being judges. Ps. xxviii. 1: Unto thee will I cry, O Lord, my rock. Ps. lxxxix. 26: Thou art my Father, my God, and the rock of my salvation. 1 Cor. x. 4: For they drank of that spiritual rock that followed them; and that rock was Christ. There could be no other priesthood, since the Saviour alone is the priest, and he has no successors. Thus clearly showing that God's spirit children are placed on a level.

Adam's blood life, or soul, are nowhere in the Scriptures taught to be immortal. And no child of God, spirit born of the her soul mind, is in any way whatever dependent upon Adam's soul life being. The child of God spirit born, John iii. 5, is of seed sown in the soul mind by Christ's love, Matt. xiii. 37, 38. Christ is the resurrection of, and the life of those resurrected: who have no alliance whatever with Adam's life, being all spirit born new creatures in Christ (not Adam's seed, as falsely taught), 2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15.

The Scripture's spiritual truths all bear the one language of childlike love humility and faith which worketh by love in all their requests. Jesus said, Except ye be converted, and become (by spirit birth, John iii. 5) as little children (of God), ye shall

not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Matt. xviii. 3-10: If thine eye, thy hand, or thy foot offend thee, pluck out the eye that offends thee (not God, or any of his laws, or any other person); cut off thy hand or thy foot that offends thee, nobody else, and cast them from thee. (A man in England last year had, when found, nearly severed his offensive right hand, and nearly plucked out his right eye.) It is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands, or two feet, to be cast into everlasting fire; rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire (v. 22). Whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. What sane man or woman would wish that Scripture to mean a place of endless fire torment? Because a man or woman's eye, hand or foot had offended themselves, nobody else is stated: as quick would they infer heaven was a place fitted up for one-eyed and one-hand and one-footed citizens; and what infinite horrid demoniac injustice, to put a poor mortal into endless hell fire and brimstone torture, because they had not maimed their own body, that had only offended themselves; or, for calling a brother a fool, to be punished eternally beyond the grave. Hell fire danger is clearly a danger of incurring the anger of the brother he called a fool, and perhaps a beastly fight of the fists into each other's eyes and angry kicks of the feet, being intoxicated and insane with hell fire anger, that consumes love and heavenly peace, and, unrepented of, would exclude them from heaven's land of love, where no anger hell fire hatred can enter. False creeds of men are the blunders that from childhood form the blind mortal's belief habits and second nature, and men creeds and men popes, and lawyer priests, who plead for their men commandments creeds for a salary, and the poor hard-working church member is of no account unless he takes his hard toil earned money, and gives it to the creed preachers, who to-day like the horse-leech cry, Money, money. Christ says, Follow me: humble shepherd, feed my sheep, not fleece my sheep. Salvation Christ placed as the grass upon the ground, and the living waters, and the sunlight, his free grace love message from the Father of all spirit born that live beyond time's close. Easy of access to all who humble themselves as a little child and in secret, and in public seek God through Christ the spirit medium mediator for spirit life immortal, love to God supreme, and to thy neighbor as to thyself. It is a matter of life and death of blood life, and soul life, between thee and thy Creator by way of Adamic blood life,

and new creature spirit birth life obtainable only of God, through Christ. Preachers for soul life's spirit birth, like doctors for the blood life body, are but poor helps. None but spirit born of God of Adam's race, by way of the soul mind, partake of immortality beyond earth's fire flood, that only requires the word of the Judge of all the earth, to burst forth its ocean of molten lava pent up in earth's centre, save volcanic eruptions, and consume the earth, 2 Pet. iii. 10. The claim of apostolic succession is a false serpent beguiling fraud upon the people of earth. Authentic history clearly shows that there is not a church on earth that has any truthful claim to apostolic succession; and if they had, it would be of no possible value here or hereafter. It is Christ's blood that cleanseth from all sin; not water baptism. Christ sows the good seed. It is a matter between Christ and the seeker for immortal life; not between thee and thy fellow-man. Though he clothes himself with a triplicate crown, he is a poor perishable pope rebel against God, sentenced to death, as well as all Adam's race. John iii. 5 gives the brief ultimatum: Except a man have spirit birth, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. If spirit born, a new creature in Christ who is its resurrection and life, wholly disconnected from Adam's sin lust blood life: as the dragon fly, and the mud grub, dead and perished. There is no Scripture that justifies the office of pope, cardinal, D.D., etc. Christ flatly forbids all such titles in his church. Matt. xxiii. 8: But be not ye called rabbi; for one is your Master, even Christ (no other); and all ye (spirit born holy) are brethren. 9: And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father which is in heaven: 10, 12.

The spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the Lord hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the broken hearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and opening the prison to them that are bound (by false creed pledges). And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely (Rev. xxii. 17).

DAY THOUGHTS.

ETERNITY PAST O, O ETERNITY TO COME.

CREATIONS of eternity past had no beginning time; the Supreme Sovereign of the universe of boundless lighted space, being a self-existent Spirit, God of eternity past, and eternity to come; endless; who only hath self-existent immortal life; whom no mortal man hath seen, nor can see, nor comprehend even in his infinite minutiae of life, and power ways, or attributes infinite; to whom be honor and power endless, amen; and who dwells in his endless towering spirit heavens of eternal beatific glory, and is the supreme boundless inexhaustible ocean of spirit life's immortal light; and the Father of all spirit life immortal (Heb. xii. 9; John iv. 24).

Each round sun and world are eternity emblems. The spirit self-existent Father of spirits immortal in life hath revealed through his spirit word creation power Son, the Lord God, his spirit word creation powers to create suns, and systems of innumerable revolving worlds, that obedient to his command swiftly fly around them, in the created heaven and the earth; infinite power, wisdom, knowledge, and omnipotence to create and sustain probation suns and systems of ponderous worlds; and hath revealed his infinite goodness, justice, love and mercy that endureth forever, and salvation power to redeem all who comply with his grace covenant faith conditions of spirit-birth holiness, brought to light in the scripture gospel by his spirit-begotten Son of love, Messiah Immanuel Lord Jesus Christ, his messenger and fulfiller of his law, by his messenger Moses, and his prophets.

TIME'S PARENTHESIS NOT ETERNAL, BUT WITH A BEGINNING.

In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. When was that beginning commenced between eternity past and eternity

to come (time's parenthesis)? Six thousand years ago, say some bishops and orthodox preachers, and some geologists, and many others; I say, the beginning might have been six billion ages ago; the time is not stated when the beginning of created worlds began, including the earth, when the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. The mists chaotic darkness boundless deep, now occupied by suns and systems of worlds, formed by the spirit self-existent immortal Father of spirits, word Son of creation power, who said, Let there be light, and there was light, which he condensed into vast oceans of light suns.

And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters; let the waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear earth, and the waters seas.

And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit-tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself.

And God said, Let the waters (then purified by God's word light) bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowl that may fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven; and God created great whales and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly after their kind (not Darwin progression); and God saw that it was good. The large fish did not then prey on the little ones; all was peace, no war of races, each had an abundant supply of food no doubt provided by their Creator. God had made Adam in his image as ruler over the earth life, as he was ruler over the universe and all life; and as having his quickening to life seed-power, as in all males of every species, and in vegetation, life after his kind. Adam's fall, and obedience to Satan's viper messenger of beguiling false creed, Ye shall not surely die, ye shall be as gods immortal. The same ambition for exaltation that no doubt caused Satan to fall from his exalted probation state caused Adam and Eve to sell their image of God birthright for, not a mess of pottage, but stolen lust producing sin fruit.

Thus the devil, by Adam and Eve's obedience to his commands by his serpent messenger, became slaves; and Satan became the prince and power of darkness, ruler over earth life, and murderer of Abel by Cain; the first seed of sin lust, and wars of Adam's race on each other.

And beasts became like Adam's race, ravenous, and preyed on the defenseless helpless creatures of life; and fish under Satan's,

prince of darkness, rule warred and devour each other, especially the large and powerful prey on the weak and helpless. Thus Adam and Eve to become Satanic myth beguiling gods, to know evil, previously knowing only good. All life under Adam's administration became also slaves to Satan's evil power death : war, strife, and all their attendant miseries of malignant diseases, pains and sorrows. For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now (Rom. viii. 22).

And God's sunlight life quickening word continued, as now, to shine through earth's atmosphere, contaminated by the unclean prince of darkness and power of the air (Eph. ii. 2). And his unclean angel spirits and tare seed children, slave descendants of Adam and Eve, in sin lust thoughts evil continually.

Gen. vi. 7: Then God destroyed all Adam's sin lust seed, save Noah and his family on the earth. Still Satan, the prince of darkness evil, continues his probation, and will until time's earth fire flood, when the devil and his unclean spirit seed will be destroyed, annihilated (Matt. xiii. 38-40; Heb. ii. 14).

Now the sun shines through the sin unclean atmosphere, contaminated by Satan's unclean hosts; still he is the prince of darkness impurity and war-power of the air; and the impure stagnant waters of earth under the warming rays of the summer sun produces living, moving, unclean, ravenous war, water devils that devour the smaller animalculæ seen through the microscope in innumerable numbers; the musquitos also that fly from stagnant waters in armies of thousands, as they mature under the warm sun's rays of life quickening power; and they make war at night under the banner of the prince of darkness, upon the living creatures of earth, and upon mortals they bravely charge at night, and seek for their heart's blood of life, as doth their prince of war darkness king, Satan, by beguiling the mortal race of Adam, by hallucinating false mirages of ambition in earth's wars of mortals upon each other, on hell fire and brimstone battlefields, and iron and lead hail storms, and cannon thunders of hell fire and brimstone lightning flashes, and bombshell scorpion serpent messengers of death.

Ps. cxix. 165: Great peace have they which love thy law, and nothing shall offend them.

Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15; v. 6: Be not deceived; God is not mocked. He is not a resurrector of dead corruption bodies, to torture *ad infinitum*. For whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption;

but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting. For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature. Faith which worketh by love.

Rom. vi. 23: For the wages of sin is death. But the gift of God is eternal life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5: Jesus said unto his disciples, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of Man. The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom (of God); but the tares are the children of the wicked one (the devil). Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

Rom. viii. 8: So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. But ye (spirit born, holy) are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

1 Cor. xv. 22, 23: For as in Adam all die (all Adam's sin-lust seed dies), even so all in Christ shall be made alive; but every man in his own order; Christ the first fruits, afterwards they that are Christ's (have his Spirit, Rom. viii. 9, no others), at his coming.

1 Cor. ii. 14: The natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God; for they are foolishness (incomprehensible while unspirit-born) unto him; neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

Gen. ii. 7; 1 Cor. xv. 44-50: And the Lord God formed man of (nature's earthly matter) the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of lives. (Job xii. 10: In the Lord's hand is the soul of every living thing, and the breath of all mankind.)

Gen. iii. 17: The Lord God commanded Adam not to eat of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil; for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die. (Nothing reserved.)

Gen. iii. 4: And the serpent (Satan's messenger of lies) said unto the woman (Eve), Ye shall not surely die. (Nothing reserved.) All who preach the immortality of the wicked agree with Satan.

2 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen nor can see.

Gen. iii. 15: And woman's seed shall bruise thy (the serpent devil's death power) head.

Heb. ii. 14: To destroy him that had the power of death, that is the devil.

Matt. xiii. 38-42: The tares are the children of the wicked one; the enemy that sowed them is the devil.

As therefore the tares (a foul weed gathered and burned in that country) are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of this world.

Gen. iii. 17: Cursed is the ground for Adam's sin; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it, all the days of thy life. 19: In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, until thou return unto the ground; for out of it thou wast taken; for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. 22: And the Lord God said, Lest Adam put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life (immortal spiritual), and eat and live forever. 24: So God drove out the man (God's infinite love, goodness, mercy, and justice prevented mortals from partaking of immortal life, while unrepentant and unspirit-born new creatures in Christ, the promised Messiah, soul-mind Redeemer: in a state of Adamic nature sin-life of sorrow and misery). So he drove out (from Eden Adam and Eve) the man, and placed at the east of the garden of Eden cherubim (angel of power), and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life, and prevented Adam and Eve's sin-lust race (Ps. li. 5) from prolongation of nature's sin-life beyond the grave; in unspirit-born spirit-life of the soul-mind, through belief of God's truth.

Heb. xii. 23: Spirits of just men made perfect. 24: And Jesus the mediator of the new covenant.

Matt. xxii. 37-40: Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

Gal. v. 16, 17, 25: Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lusts of the flesh. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh. And these are contrary the one to the other. If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

John iv. 24; iii. 5, 6: God is a Spirit, and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

Matt. xiii. 23, 30; v. 7, 11: He that received seed into the good ground (the soul-mind, through faith which worketh by love; will-door of the mind, belief of God's truth) is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it: which also beareth fruit, and

bringeth forth, some a hundred fold, some sixty, some thirty. Let both (wheat righteous and tare sinners) grow together until the harvest; and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them (That I may consume them in a moment: Numb. xvi. 21; Deut. iv. 24). But gather the wheat (righteous) into my barn (heaven). Blessed are the merciful, for they shall obtain mercy. Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit (spirit love-life), immortal seed sown by Christ Jesus in the her soul-mind, spirit-egg, intellect (Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul shall make her boast in the Lord), and believed unto conception of God's spirit-love life-light immortal.

1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality, and is the Father of all spirit-life immortal.

Heb. xii. 9: His spirit-children are spirit-born of God (1 John v. 18), by spirit-love of God in Christ the medium, or spirit-doves brooding of the Holy Ghost (Christ Jesus, Luke xxiii. 46), and abiding in God's love in Christ.

1 John iv. 16: God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him (born of the Spirit); or, he cannot enter into the (spirit) kingdom of God.

2 Cor. v. 17: Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature.

John iii. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. 16: For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. 18: He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already. 19: Men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.

Rom. viii. 6, 8-10: To be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. They that are in the flesh cannot please God. But ye (spirit-born holy children of God, 1 John iii. 10) are not in the flesh but in the spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now, if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. And, if Christ be in you, the body is dead, because of sins (sentenced to death irrevocable: Gen. iii. 19: Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return); but the spirit is life, because of righteousness (spirit-birth).

1 John i. 7: If we walk in the light, as Christ is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus

Christ God's Son cleanseth us (who are spirit-born, holy) from all sin.

Lev. xvii. 11: For the life of the flesh is in the blood; and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your souls. Not bodies' blood life, sentenced to death (Gen. iii. 19). For it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul.

1 John iii. 1, 9, 10; iv. 16; v. 18: Behold what love the Father (of spirits immortal: Heb. xii. 9) hath bestowed upon us (spirit-born of the (her) soul mind), that we should be called the sons of God. Whosoever is born (spirit birth of the soul's spirit-egg mind) of God (promise word conditional covenant of faith, which worketh by love of God, sown by Christ) doth not commit sin; for his seed (spirit love) remaineth in him; and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother. God is love: and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. We (spirit born) know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and the wicked one (the devil, tare seed sower) toucheth him not.

2 Sam. xxiv. 14: David said, Let us fall now into the hand of the Lord, for his mercies are great; and let me not fall into the hand of man.

Heb. xii. 9: Furthermore, we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and LIVE?

Eph. ii. 1, 3, 4, 5, 8: And you hath Christ quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. But God, who is rich in mercy, even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us (spirit-born holy), together with Christ (Christ is resurrected from blood-life), so are all spirit-born new creatures in Christ. For by grace are ye saved, through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God.

v. 14: Wherefore he saith, Awake, thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ will give thee light.

John i. 12, 13; v. 24, 25, 40; xi. 25, 26; xv. 4, 5, 6: As many as received Christ, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. He that heareth Christ's word, and believeth

on God (the Father of all spirit-life immortal) that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life. The hour is coming, *and now is*, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. And ye (incorrigibly wicked) will not come to me (Christ), that ye might have life. Jesus said, I am the resurrection, AND THE LIFE: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth (is spirit-born of God), and believeth in me, shall never die. (Then they are resurrected from the dead, spiritual life immortal is begun.) I (Christ) am the vine: Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine: no more can ye, except ye abide in me. While they abide in the spirit-life love of Christ, and God, they cannot die: they are resurrected from spirit-death. God only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen nor can see.

The Spirit God (John iv. 24).

Heb. xii. 9: Shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live?

1 John iii. 10: Children of God are, like their Father, spirits (2 John iii. 2): They only have immortality of all the race of Adam and Eve, when spirit born of God (1 John v: 18); they partake of his immortal love life.

John iii. 5: Except a man be born of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the (spirit) kingdom of God.

John xi. 25, 26: Jesus said unto HER (Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul shall make HER boast in the Lord; the humble shall hear thereof, and be glad), I am the resurrection and the life (Adam's blood-life seed is all sentenced to death, and Satan and his tare seed criminals, at time's close, are sentenced to death, with earth's fire-flood destruction, the end of the world. Matt. xiii. 37-42; Heb. ii. 14; 1 Cor. xv. 26, 28.) He that believeth in me, though he were dead (Eph. ii. 1: And you hath Christ quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins), yet shall he live (no others of Adam's sin-lust race); and whosoever liveth (is spirit-born, love life holy) and believeth in me shall never die. Such are resurrected from spirit death by spirit-birth of the soul-mind (spirit-egg mind), quickened to spirit life.

Luke xx. 35-38 (the second resurrection. The resurrection of the righteous from dead blood life bodies): They which shall

be accounted worthy to obtain that (spirit-life everlasting) world, and (accounted worthy of) the resurrection from the dead (blood life body, at its death), neither marry nor are given in marriage. (Gal. iii. 26: For ye are the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.) 27: For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ (1 John iv. 16: Love) have put on Christ. 28: There is neither male nor female: for ye (spirit born holy) are all one in Christ Jesus. 29: And if ye be Christ's (spirit birth, love life immortal), then are ye Abraham's seed (faith love covenant), and heirs according to the promise. Neither can they die any more, for they are equal to the angels, and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection. (No wicked, nor dead bodies, are God's children.)

Children of men, Adam and Eve's sin-lust begotten race (Ps. li. 5: Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me) are all sentenced to death.

Gen. iii. 19: Children of the devil, and the devil their father, are all sentenced to death (Matt. xiii. 38-40; Heb. ii. 14).

1 Cor. xv. 26: The last enemy (there can be none beyond the last) that shall be destroyed (annihilated) is death (Satan, Heb. ii. 14). 28: And when all things shall be subdued unto God, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all (then in existence). I asked a prominent orthodox preacher for his views of the destruction of death. He said, that when death was destroyed all life that ever lived on earth would then return to life; then, said he, the dead bodies of all Adam and Eve's race will return to life, and thus be resurrected: I asked him if all life death held then returned to life. He answered that he thus believed. I suggested that as he, and most of Adam's race, had eaten swine, fowls, beasts, fish, etc., his body would make a singular appearance, and the noises each mortal body would bear about would be very discordant: the pigs would squeal, the calves bleat, the roosters crow, the hens cackle, and the ducks quack, etc. And if the devil was alive after Christ's surrender to his spirit father of his mission, and God being all in all then in existence, he would have to be in the devil if alive. He answered me that he believed he would; I then said, "Good-night. If you worship a god in the devil, I do not worship or recognize such a god as my God, for (1 John iv. 16) God is love: and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him; not in the devil, who is the infinite essence of hatred."

Rom. viii. 9: But ye (spirit-born holy, John iii. 5) are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ he is none of his. And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the spirit is life because of righteousness. None but the righteous are resurrected: Christ the first fruits, afterward they that are Christ's (have his Spirit, Rom. viii. 9).

Phil. i. 10: That I may know Christ and the power of his resurrection.

1 Cor. xv. 37: Thou sowest not that body that shall be. 44: It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. 46: That was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. 47: The first man (Adam) is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven. 48: As is the earthy, such are they that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. 49: And as we have borne the image of the earthy (blood-life bodies), we shall also bear the image of the heavenly (a spirit body). 50: Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God. Death ends mortals, with a her soul barren.

Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul maketh HER boast in the Lord (spirit life).

All animate nature life is the product of eggs in the females of all the different species on earth: if they are developed and then quickened into life, they produce their species, and no other: if not quickened into life, they produce no life whatever: and more than nine-tenths of all the egg germs of life in each animate life species, including Adam and Eve's race of mortals, perish, and produce no life whatever, but pass back to nature elements as excrements: thus no mortal bodies of blood life have any base of immortality whatever. The soul is a she to produce, like the females of blood life producers.

Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul maketh HER boast in the Lord; the humble hear thereof and are glad: who reap thereby spirit soul birth, when the Lord quickens the soul's spirit-egg mind into immortal spirit life being.

Eph. ii. 1: And you hath Christ the Lord quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins.

All spirit-egg soul minds not quickened into life immortal spirit being, by way of faith in God's gospel words of eternal truths, and opening of their souls' will-door of reception, belief in God's spirit

word truths, and letting the spirit life immortal light love of God shine into and illuminate their dark undeveloped embryo soul mind egg, such are in the same undeveloped lifeless state that a nature female fowl's egg is in without life-quickenng male seed; if the domestic hen sets on such eggs, they produce nothing but rottenness.

Is. v. 24: Therefore, as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff, so their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust: because they have cast away the law of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word of the holy one of Israel.

Obad. 16: So shall all the heathen drink continually; and they shall be as though they had not been.

Mal. iii. 16: Then they that feared the Lord spake often one to another; and the Lord hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared (to disobey) the Lord, and that thought upon his name. 17: And they shall be mine, saith the Lord of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels: and I will spare them as a man spareth his own son that serveth him. 18: Then shall ye . . . discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God, and him that serveth him not.

Mal. iv. 1: For, behold, the day cometh that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up (with the earth's fire flood. Who are alive on earth then not spirit-born holy), saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch.

Matt. iii. 12: He will burn up the chaff (wicked).

1 Cor. ii. 10: God hath revealed (the things prepared for them that love him) unto us by his Spirit (who are spirit-born children of God), for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea the deep things of God. 12: Now we have received not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. 13: Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. 14: But the natural man unspirit-born, nature seed of Adam and Eve; the blood life soul man.

1 Cor. xv. 46: Howbeit, that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. 47: The first man (Adam) is of the earth earthy; the second man (spiritual soul mind birth new spirit creature, 2 Cor. v. 17),

is the Lord from heaven. 48: And as is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy. The natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness unto him; neither can he (unspirit born of God's love life immortal spirit love seed, sown by Christ's word of God, in the soul spirit-egg mind, and thereby quickened into life.

Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5 (spirit born); vi. 63: It is the Spirit that quickeneth; the flesh (blood life sentenced to death, Gen. iii. 19), profiteth nothing; the words that I speak unto you they are spirit and they are life (spirit love, pulsating immortal life). 68: Thou hast the words of eternal life (God's infinite word promise of immortal life, to those who comply with its conditions of faith which worketh by love, covenant of spirit birth), neither can he (the unspirit born nature man) know them, because they are spiritually discerned. 15: But he that is spiritual (spirit born of the soul spirit mind egg germ) judgeth all things (nature and spirit life knowledge), yet he himself is judged of no man (the Lord is his judge, not man). 16: For who knoweth the mind of the Lord, that he (D.D. or Pope, etc.) may instruct him? But we spirit born holy (Rom. viii. 9) have the mind of Christ. God's children have the Spirit of God in Christ-spirit Love.

Knowledge diffused corrects the mind,
When spirit-born of God refined;
Philosophers of Greece and Rome,
Our spirit-God was there unknown.

By worldly wisdom none God find,
None by nature are thus inclined;
The pure in heart find God is love,
And they alone see God above.

The history of Adam and Eve's race of mortal sin lust begotten beings since their rebellion against God's spiritual government laws in the garden of Eden, when we take a retrospective view of mankind during past ages, presents a lamentable scene of intellectual darkness bordering on chaos; instead of love, kindness, hospitality, sympathy, mercy, and goodness, and especially kindness to near kindred, supreme selfishness and love of self-approbation was manifest, and developed in the first child of Adam and Eve, showing how low they had fallen from that exalted state in which God created them, and pronounced them good (Gen. i. 31). And clearly showing that like begets its like.

Although in every age men have possessed all the mental faculties they now enjoy in a state of sin lust birth of woman's nature seed eggs, or ever will enjoy, unless their soul's spirit egg—mind, intellect—is impregnated with God's immortality, we in nature birth do not surpass all other animate life-germs; our first earthly development is like all other animate earth life in the female; its first development is an egg, which if unimpregnated with male milt, soon passes off in rottenness, it ends void of any life whatever; when the egg is of that class that matures when impregnated into the image of its progenitors before it comes to nature light of the sun, if laid or deposited as by fowls and fish, then if unimpregnated before it is laid by the fowls, it is the same as the other previously described eggs, although they spend ten times the necessary time to mature male impregnated eggs, yet no life whatever is matured; break the shell and a resurrection of rottenness is all that it develops to the light, wholly void of life. Thus we readily discover that without quickening male milt, contact with the female nature seed eggs of all earth's animate life creatures, no progeny can be obtained.

Thus we have clearly foreshadowed that the her or she soul (Ps. xxxiv. 2) spirit egg mind is the same as the eggs of all animate nature life, wholly void of immortal spirit life from God, who only hath immortality to impart to a spirit the soul egg mind.

1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto: therefore the necessity of a mediator.

2 Tim. i. 10: Now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death (in the soul mind eggs of believers).

Eph. ii. 1: And you hath Christ quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel: Christ sows the good seed in the soul minds of those who open their will door, and by faith that worketh by love believe his gospel truths, and obey his commands as commander-in-chief of all spirit born children of God's army: his children on earth. Therefore the necessity of a mediator, to bear to mortals the immortal spirit life quickening spirit love seed, which mediator was and is the Lord Jesus Christ, the spirit word creation Lord God veiled infinite love, in the word of God promise in Eden.

Gen. iii. 15: The woman's seed (nature egg, quickened to life

by the word spirit life impregnation, which development from the Virgin Mary is the only variation of God's fixed laws in regard to animate earth life propagation).

How can the soul mind be a spirit egg? you inquire. I answer, Matt. xiii. 37-38: He that soweth the good seed (immortal spirit love life from the Spirit Father: his covenant word promise conditions being complied with) is the son of man, by way of woman's seed: and spirit love word power Son of God, thereby mediator, and in communication with God and mortals. The good seed are children of the kingdom of God.

John iii. 5: Except a man be born of water and the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God: immortal spirit life.

John iv. 24: God is a Spirit; and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth: Like begets its like, is God's law of the universe.

1 John v. 18: We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and the wicked one toucheth him not.

God's sky-blue starry flag on high,
Revolving systems round him fly.
Through boundless lighted space they soar;
None ever reach light's ocean shore.

Though o'er millions of miles I bound, -
Still endless space would me surround;
Light's boundless deep God only knows,
Outside is darkness, death for foes.

The fact that all animate life is the product of two, male and female, is positive proof that the soul spirit-egg mind is the only possible place in the mortal being capable of receiving spirit love life immortal seed, into conceptions intellectual belief of God's truth in which spirit life immortal could be sown, and begotten of God into new creature life. 2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. v. 6; vi. 7, 8, 15.

Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul shall make her boast in the Lord; the humble shall hear thereof, and be glad. 4: I sought the Lord, and he heard me, and delivered me from all my fears. 7: The angel of the Lord encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them. 8: O taste and see that the Lord is good: blessed is the man that trusteth in him. 22: The Lord redeemeth the soul of his servants: and none of them that trust in him shall be desolate.

What must be the expansion of the intellect of the new creature child of God when it leaves its body blood life shell, and as a heavenly spirit dove or angel soars to heavenly mansions prepared for them by the Lord! John xiv. 2; Luke xx. 36.

The natural inclination of men's minds, which the pages of history record, chiefly presents to our views the most revolting scenes of war: which proves the earth to be hell, a field of battle, with a war devil prince: rapine and devastation, as if the earth had been created merely to serve as a theatre for mischief devil recreation, and its inhabitants for the purpose of dealing destruction and misery to all around them. Such, however, are the natural sequences of the reign of ignorance over the human mind in its fallen, sinful state: for the active powers of the mind intellect necessarily follow the dictates of his understanding, and when the intellectual faculties are not directed to the pursuit and the contemplation of noble and benevolent objects, they will most frequently be employed in designing and executing schemes subversive of human happiness and improvement. Amid the din of wars, the burning of cities, the desolation of provinces, the convulsion of nations, the ruin of empires, and the slaughter of millions, the voice of reason, the cries of orphans, the widow's sorrows and tears, the sorrow-pangs of bereaved parents, and brothers, and sisters, and other kindred and friends of the slain: the horrid agonies and hell-fire tortures inflicted by the devil's death brimstone and charcoal and saltpetre fires of hell, that send into the frail blood life bodies of mortals the ruthless bullets of lead and iron, with demon lightning speed, to mangle rend and dismember the arms, legs, and head from the poor mangled body: and the bombshells and cannon balls of iron hurled by hell-fire power by man to slay, mangle and torture their fellow men to death's devil exaltation delight: the horrid pain agonies of the dying and mangled are heeded not by the victorious murder demons cheers at the horrid deaths of their fellow mortals.

Thus during the dark ages of popery's demoniac power rule for some twelve hundred and sixty years, from A.D. 538 to 1798, true religion was scarcely known; even from the earliest history of Adam's fallen race, every benevolent feeling and every moral principle was trampled under foot; the earth seemed little else than one great battle field of battling demons, until all were on the brink of total extermination. Gen. vii. 23: And Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark.

Isa. xl. 7 : Surely the people is grass. 15 : Behold the nations are as a drop of a bucket : and are counted as the small dust of the balance (dust of the earth : Gen. iii. 19 : Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return). 17 : All nations before God are as nothing ; and they are counted to him less than nothing and vanity. 22 : The inhabitants of earth are as grasshoppers. 23 : He bringeth the princes to nothing : he maketh the judges of earth as vanity. 24 : And the whirlwind shall take them away as stubble. Ps. xcii. 7 : When the wicked spring up as the grass, and . . . flourish, it is that they shall be destroyed. Ps. xciv. 17 : Unless the Lord had been my help, my soul had almost dwelt in silence. Ps. ciii. 12 : As far as the east is from the west, so far hath God removed our transgressions from us (who are his spirit love-begotten children). 14 : He knoweth our frame ; he remembereth that we are dust. 15 : As for man (Adam's seed), his days are as grass. Ps. cxxxvii. 10 : For yet a little while and the wicked shall not be. Ps. cxlv. 20 ; clxv. 5 : The Lord preserveth all them that love him : but all the wicked will God destroy (Ps. cxxxix. 19 ; cvi. 18 ; civ. 35).

Scarcely a vestige remained of religion, science, literature, or morality ; scarcely a vestige remaining of the efforts of the human mind. The debasing superstitions of the Romish Church, the hoarding of relics, the erection of monasteries and nunneries, the pilgrimages to the tombs of martyrs, the mummeries which were introduced into the services of religious mockeries, the wild and romantic expeditions of crusaders, the tyranny and ambition of popes, and the wars and insurrections to which they gave rise, usurped the place of every rational pursuit, and completely enslaved the minds of men. So great was the ignorance which then prevailed, that persons of the most distinguished rank could neither read nor write. Even many of the clergy did not understand the breviary, or book of common (so-called) prayers, which they were daily accustomed to recite, and some of them could scarcely read it. The learning which then prevailed, under the name of philosophy and of scholastic theology, consisted chiefly in vain disquisitions and reasonings about abstract truths and incomprehensible mysteries, and in attempts to decide questions and points of theology which lie beyond the reach of the human mind like boundless space, which its limited faculties are unable to resolve. Sophisms, falsehoods, and myths, regarding the resurrection of human bodies after they were worn out in some cases, and after

they had all rotted before their nature senses ; all of which actual knowledge that all human bodies are composed of earth elements, and that they all rot and return back to the same gases, and leave only for mortal vision lifeless dust remains.

The Egyptian theology, somewhat of the Darwin progression order, that taught their adherents that the souls of mortals went into animals and animate nature life creatures, and when that died they sought for the old dead body previously used by them, as the miser seeks his old ragged clothes, and if the old body, or young body, was not rotted back to nature earth, a much more sensible myth than the myth god, to-day, of most churches on earth, who they teach will resurrect old, or young, rotten bodies ; and especially when they are clearly taught that God made their first parent Adam of clean earth, and pronounced him good ; and not set their heathen, pagan, Roman Catholic traditions of men's fables myth god to manufacturing old worn-out carcasses and rotten bodies (worse than old clothes' insult to a tailor), that are clearly pronounced by Paul vile ; and a worse than Egyptian mummy myth gods also is their abominable mockery of God, with their myth devil god, that after resurrecting, as it were, rotten eggs, and impregnating them (the incorrigibly wicked's rotten, vile, sin lust begotten body), and putting in them, or impregnating rotten bodies, or eggs, with immortal life ; for God's life alone is in itself immortal (1 Tim. vi. 16), and then burning his own immortal life thus imparted to a rotten egg, or body, in an endless lake of fire and brimstone ; merely for the unmerciful revenge of vengeance, justice power upon a lifeless refuse of a rotten carcass, that was as a dust on a balance, and of no value whatever, and as a grasshopper. What mockery of reason's God, justice, sense, and how perfectly contradictory to Scripture truths ! And for what purpose ? reason asks ; and the foolish reply is, To keep the wicked from harming the righteous ; which one orthodox endless hell torture preacher said to me not long since ; and fled before I could ask him, Why not, then, let the rotten filthy dead incorrigible sinner's body remain dead ; and withdraw and consume, as filthy contaminated breath, the lives of all evil beings in a moment ? for without God's aid nothing can live, move, or have a being. Acts xvii. 25 : God giveth to all life, and breath, and all things. For in God we live, and move, and have our being ; the negative must be out of God ; without his aid, or permission, nothing, not even the devil, could live a moment.

Heb. ii. 14: The object of Jesus' blood life of woman's seed union with spirit power of Christ as judge, was for the just and lawful execution of the devil and all his associates of evil: then death itself will be destroyed. None but immortal beings pulsating spirit love life eternal will survive the last judgment day's fiery cleansing flood, that consumes all evil unclean spirits, rotten bodies, and earth, and earth's atmosphere. 2 Pet. iii. 10; Rev. xx. 11.

Eloquence in the dark ages, as now, consisted in vague mythy imaginations, and futile declamations; the masses of the people on earth to-day would rather read a mythy false imaginary love story of ridiculous conduct, and a picture of themselves in the past, or to hear a dubbed professor of fishy theology, that would tell them the human family began in its first ancestor a muscle, or oyster, or clam, and progressed up through all animate life creatures on earth, and then last of all earth life, human bodies. And the stock of progress being run out, their mythy fruitful imagination pictures a vulture god, that will resurrect their rotten mortal bodies, and re-enter them, part to enjoy happiness therein when resuscitated, and mended of course, when legs or arms are deficient, and the largest part are resurrected to roast eternally; if they were to be eaten by cannibal myth gods, there would be more sense in their mythy novel theology.

About the time of the revival of letters, after the dark ages of monkish superstition and ignorance, the moral and intellectual state of the inhabitants of Europe began to experience a change auspicious of better times, and of a more enlightened era: But, alas! it may still be said with propriety regarding the masses of earth's inhabitants, gross darkness covers the people, a majority of whom to-day are debased in idolatry, superstition, and every malignant passion; and enslaved, by the cunning artifices of priests, with their freezing myth gods, of all heretics to their orthodox faith in cold climates; and roasting them eternally in torture, in warm climates, in the tropics.

Though the Christian religion has never yet been fully understood and recognized in many of its essential aspects and bearings, nor have its requirements been cordially complied with by the great body of those who profess to believe in its divine origin, yet it is only among those nations who have acknowledged its authority, and in some measure submitted to its dictates, that anything approximating to just conceptions of the supreme intelligence, and of its moral government, is found to prevail. Man is the highest order of

animal creation, and as such has animal lusts and propensities, that actuate and govern his blood life; and like other animals, man and woman mate and propagate their species, their breath is the same as other animate life creatures, their blood pulsates life by way of a heart that propels it like a perpetual motion, with unperceivable power, while life lasts, thus also breath inflates their lungs to purify the blood, without perceptible aid from any other source than was given the first pair of each species, by their spirit life creator; from which all others since came into existence, by imparting mysteriously, by expansion of those powers, all possessed by their parents, without any perceptible diminution of power to live, and move, and have a being; handed down through animal lust gratifications, and pains and sorrows, when developed very intense: yet these rapidly increase generation after generation, as doth all life on earth known, from sin's lust seed: nature life development SOON DIES, their bodies all alike soon decay, and become rotten; as a rotten potato, or rotten apple, pear, pumpkin, squash, or any nature life inanimate seed, when it dies and decays.

No body of mortal man or woman, or of any other life body on earth, animate or inanimate, after it saw corruption, was ever restored to sound nature body and life state; nor will they ever be thus resurrected to life again. If I should proclaim to an intelligent audience that rotten apples and rotten potatoes would soon be resurrected, with sound body life, or a dead dog or cow, ox, sheep, horse, or any bird, fowl, or fish, or any living thing that had died on earth, would be resurrected to sound bodies and life again, all sane persons would consider such a remark as insane. But through myth false creeds, we have from the pulpits of churches on the earth to-day the ocular demonstration of such insane teaching and preachings of the resurrections of the dead rotten dust bodies of all Adam's race; and that they are all immortal, and about one in ten of the preacher's children he begets for heaven, the other nine to be tortured eternally in a hell of fire and brimstone, merely to keep them from harming the one righteous one. It is a myth creed of rottenness, mockery of God, Hades covered from sight, obscure, dark, invisible. The invisible receptacle, grave, or mansion of the dead in general.

I quote from the lexicon only the proper definition of the words. Our English word "hell" answers to the Greek word Hades, and denotes a concealed or unseen place as the grave. *Aion*, time; a space of time; lifetime; frequently the age of a man; man's

estate, a longer period of time; eternity, *aionios*, eternal, lasting, permanent, as everlasting death of the wicked; the negative of everlasting life of the righteous. The murderer, hung by the neck until dead, receives an everlasting punishment; he never returns to life again; he is as the candle burned, leaving but snuff-ashes of the wick of the body; his tare unclean spirit ends with earth's fire death flood. Parkhurst, in his Greek and English Lexicon to the New Testament, gives the following as his primary general definition of *aion*: It denotes duration or continuance of time, but with great variety. *Gehenna*: two Hebrew words, *ge* a valley, and *Hinnom* the name of a person who was once the possessor of it. This valley of Hinnom lay near Jerusalem, and was for some time used for those abominable sacrifices in which the idolatrous Jews burned their children alive to Moloch, Baal, or the sun, Tophet; from the fire furnace (Hebrew Topeth), in which they burned their children to Moloch.

Lev. xviii. 21: Thou shalt not let any of thy seed pass through the fire to Moloch; neither shalt thou profane the name of thy God.

Lev. xx. 2: Whosoever giveth any of his seed unto Moloch, he shall surely be put to death.

Jer. xxxii. 35: Baal in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to cause their sons and daughters to pass through the FIRE unto Moloch (1 Kings xi. 7; 2 Kings xxiii. 10).

Aion: Professor Stuart says the proper signification of *aion* and *aionios* is eternity and eternal; and says that when used in a limited sense, it is a forced and unnatural use. Parkhurst makes the word from *aei*, always, and on being always being. Let us obtain truth by trial.

Mark xv. 8: As he had ever (*aei*) done unto them.

Acts vii. 51: Ye do always (*aei*) resist the Holy Ghost.

2 Cor. iv. 11: For we which live are always (*aei*) delivered unto death for Jesus' sake.

2 Cor. vi. 10: As sorrowful, yet always (*aei*) rejoicing.

1 Pet. iii. 15: Be ready always (*aei*) to give an answer.

Eph. ii. 1: And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins.

Ezek. xviii. 4: The soul that sinneth it shall die.

Gen. ii. 17: For in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die. Statute imperative law of God. Who contradicts God's law? Satan's messenger viper serpent.

Gen. iii. 4, 5 : Ye shall not surely die. Who else? All who preach or teach that the wicked have life after blood life death, who are not soul spirit-born, in any form or place, after the close of time, and earth's fire flood. To the biblical scholar who takes up the Scriptures in child-like simplicity, and throws to the winds all men manufactured creeds of men (but in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men, Matt. xv. 9), and discards all sectarian theology—a hard thing to do, for early teachings of parents and preachers, and their men-creeds, that discard God's statute laws, and make up their creeds out of misconstrued parables, which when believed become as it were second nature habits of belief, good and bad—and apprehends the true sense of their teachings in their earliest lessons, it is a circumstance of soul-inspiring interest, that all in the way of his progress is confirmation and growth. The light of truth grows brighter and brighter as he advances from step to step.

With regard to the nature of the death introduced into the world by sin, we saw, on the first presentation of the subject, it must be moral or spiritual death, synonymous with condemnation. And here the apostle attests by a practical illustration the perfect correctness of our interpretation of his former teachings bearing on this subject. They who were in the enjoyment of the life of faith in Christ are described as raised out of the death of sin, when their soul mind through faith belief conception of Scripture truths, by way of baptism of the Holy Ghost, becomes a spirit-begotten and spirit-born child of God.

1 John v. 18 ; iii. 10 : The first resurrection ; the second resurrection, when raised from their dead body at blood life death. Luke xx. 35, 36 : Their condition in their sins verified the primitive admonition of the supreme lawgiver.

Gen. ii. 17 : In the day that thou sinnest thou shalt surely die. (Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27.)

Professor Stuart, in a note to Greppo's Essay on Hieroglyphics, accepts the statement of Spinetto, that the Amenti of the Egyptians originated the classic fables of Hades, and Tartarus, Charon, Pluto, the judges of hell, the dog Cerberus, the chimeras, harpies, gorgons, furies, and other such unnatural and horrible things with which the Greeks and Romans peopled their fanatic insane myth hell fires eternal tortures ; whom reason, and common sense thoughts, and truthful observation, readily discovers that all earthly life dies, and that all animate and inanimate bodies

soon moulder back to dead nature rottenness (Isa. v. 24; Dan. xii. 2).

Dr. Widdawer, a celebrated Jewish scholar, fully versed in Hebrew, admitted to me that Dan. xii. 2, translated shame and contempt everlasting, would agree with Isa. v. 24, in the original Hebrew, as the state of the incorrigibly dead wicked, and their only resurrection was as rottenness stench; remembrance of their wicked acts during their brief life on earth, of which their dead rotten bodies of nature blood life's dissolution resolved all their store back to nature's elements. He is a Mason; and said there was not one word in all the Jewish writings during Solomon's life, nor during the time of the temple's building, or while it remained standing, in reference to anything whatever pertaining to Masonry; Odd Fellowship is of a recent origin, and a mere imitation of Masonry of older date. Both have good instruction, and admonitions, and rules of admission; but members of both break their good rules, and admit, like churches, more bad than good men; and, like office-holders' titles of Hon., who from President to the lowest government official to-day, seem possessed of unclean spirits and Dis Hon., or dishonorable, evil beings who betray all their trusts reposed in them by honest people. But in 1872 and 1873, and years previous from 1861, the political creeds, like church creeds, with all their talk of punishment of the wicked, only seem to encourage wrong-doing: like the woman who told the thief who stole a shirt that he would be punished with endless hell-fire and brimstone torture in the day of judgment, "Then if you trust so long as that, I will take another shirt," says the thief, while taking another from the clothes-line. It is a truthful illustration of the effects of such doctrines, if not strictly an occurrence.

Not the righteous Jesus doth call,
But sinners to repentance all.
Thus those whom Jesus Christ would save
Men's creeds would burn beyond the grave.

Wages of sin is death in all;
Love hates no foes: they by death fall;
Love tries to save them from soul-death,
Ere ceases their probation breath.

From the prophet Malachi to Christ, four hundred years, there was no prophet; and the Egyptian mummy body resurrectionists,

Greek and Roman philosophers, mythology, with their thirty-two thousand myth gods, was during those four hundred years of Jewish men creed darkness, highpriest rule, introduced into the high schools of the Jews, as now in all colleges; and the scribes and Pharisee resurrection of the dead bodies of mortals, and the eternal hell-fire tortures of the incorrigibly wicked. Thus from the heathen Egyptian mummy pagan priests men creeds became the guide of fallen Jew priests, who murdered their only Saviour.

Polybius the historian says: "Since the multitude is ever fickle, full of lawless desires, irrational passions and violence, there is no other way to keep them in order but by fear of punishment and terror of the invisible world, beyond body death; on which account our ancestors seem to me to have acted judiciously, when they contrived to bring into the popular belief these notions of the gods of the infernal regions." B. vi. 56.

Dionysius Halicarnassus treats the whole matter as useful, but not true. *Antiq. Rom.*, B. ii.

Livy, the celebrated historian, speaks of it in the same spirit; and he praises the wisdom of Numa, because he invented the fear of the gods as a most efficacious means of governing an ignorant and barbarous populace. *Hist.*, i. 19.

Strabo the geographer says: "The multitude are restrained from vice by the punishment the gods are said to inflict upon offenders, and by those terrors and threatenings which certain dreadful words and monstrous forms imprint upon their minds. . . . For it is impossible to govern the crowd of women, and all the common rabble, by philosophical reasoning, and lead them to piety, holiness and virtue; but this must be done by superstition, or the fear of the gods, by means of fables and wonders; for the thunder of the ægis, the trident, the torches of the furies, the dragons, etc., are all fables, as is also all the ancient theology. These things the legislators used as scarecrows to terrify the ignorant childish multitude." *Geog.*, B. i.

Timæus Locrus, the Pythagorean, after stating that the doctrine of rewards and punishments after death is necessary to society, proceeds as follows: "For as we sometimes cure the body with wholesome remedies, when those most wholesome produce no effect, so we restrain those minds with false relations which will not be persuaded by the truth. There is therefore a necessity of instilling the dread of those foreign torments" (Egyptian. The Greek philosophers and lawgivers traveled into Egypt in order to

learn its wisdom, and to be initiated into its world-renowned mysteries of the Egyptian mummy priests).

Plato, in his commentary on Timæus, fully indorses what he says respecting the fabulous invention of these foreign torments. And Strabo says that Plato and the Brahmins of India invented fables concerning the future judgments of hell (Hades). And Chrysippus blames Plato for attempting to deter men from wrong by frightful stories of the future punishments. Plato himself is exceedingly inconsistent sometimes, adopting even in his serious discourses the false fables of the poets; and at other times rejecting them as **UTTERLY FALSE**, and giving too frightful views of the invisible world. Sometimes he argues on social grounds, that they are necessary to restrain bad men from wickedness and crime; then again he protests against them on political grounds as intimidating the citizens, and making cowards of the soldiers, who believe these things, are afraid of death, and do not therefore fight well, which shows in what light he regarded them; not as truths certainly, but as fictions convenient in some cases, but difficult to manage in others.

Plutarch treats the subject in the same way; sometimes arguing for them with great solemnity and earnestness, and on other occasions calling them fabulous stories, the tales of mothers and nurses.

Seneca says: "Those things which make the infernal regions terrible—the darkness, the prison, the river of flaming fire, the judgment seat, etc.—are all a fable with which the poets amuse themselves, and by them agitate us with vain terrors." Sextus Empiricus calls them "poetic fables of hell;" and Cicero speaks of them as silly absurdities and fables (*ineptus ac fabulis*).

Aristotle says: "It has been handed down in mythical form from the earliest times to posterity, that these are gods, and that the Divine Deity compasses all nature. All besides this has been added by the mythical mythology style, for the purpose of persuading the multitude, and for the interest of the laws, and the advantage of the state."

Neander's Church History, i. p. 7: Thus the pagan doctrines of the transmigration of souls of bodies they embalmed, their mummy dead, and Grecian and Roman mythology myth God doctrines, and fabled poetry myths that was common among the Jews at the time the Lord preached to them in parables, and he used their myth mythology to illustrate spirit life truths. The Jews during four

hundred years previous had only false prophets, back to Malachi. Judaism itself had become corrupted (Matt. xv. 3-9).

Brimstone fire comes not of love's power,
War's weapons of death to devour,
Powder, death, brimstone, fire of hell,
And warriors, devils, when man fell.

Love your enemies, Jesus said,
Pray for captives by Satan led,
Not condemn them to endless fire,
Showing that you have base desire.

The law of God, by his messenger Moses, contains in its entire catalogue of its penalties and threatenings no allusion to the pagan doctrine of endless punishment, or any punishment beyond blood life death. Temporal rewards and punishments and the death penalty are ever attached to sin, which laws and prophets Christ, God's messenger, came to fulfill. Philo, an Egyptian Jew cotemporary with the Saviour, believed the air to be full of spirits, who from time to time descended to unite themselves with mortal bodies, being desirous to live in them again. And Josephus reports the Essenes, one of the five chief sects of the Jews, as holding the same views.

Five brethren (Luke xvi. 28, 29): SCRIBES, PHARISEES, SADUCEES, ESSENES, PUBLICANS.

According to Herodotus, the Egyptians believed the soul would pass from one body to another until it had performed the circuit of all animals, terrestrial and marine, and birds of the air; when it again takes up its abode in the human body. This transmigration it was supposed would fill up a period of three thousand years. There was a diversity of opinions in regard to the particulars of this curious arrangement, but the leading idea appears to be the punishment of the wicked and the resurrection of the body. A portion of the pagan heathen mummy preacher philosophers held that unless the human body was preserved from rottenness, the soul would never again have body resurrection, but would be confined to animate animal bodies as before. According to some authors the wicked only were subject to this punishment; the good and pious being received immediately, at blood life death, into rest, returning to the good being whence they emanated. And it would appear, according to Wilkinson, that common wicked,

not the criminals, or worst, were condemned to this purgatory; the unpardonable sinner being condemned to eternal fire.

The records of the ancient Greeks, confirmed by their monuments, open to us the origin of the doctrines of a judgment after death, and of future endless rewards and punishments for the good or evil deeds of this life. From the Egyptians it passed, with suitable modifications, to the Greeks and Romans: Diodorus himself clearly shows that the fables of the Acherusian Lake, of Hecate, Cerberus, Charon, and the Styx, have their original in these Egyptian ceremonies and doctrines. If for two thousand years the eternal punishment was hid from the patriarchs, and two thousand years from the prophets, and revealed to Egyptians, Greeks, Romans, and other heathen, it would be a strange phenomenon. Then those who enjoyed divine instruction were left in error, while those who only had the light of nature for a guide found the truth regarding the incorrigibly wicked beyond the grave. And the pagans and their proselyted Jews had the eternal punishment doctrines; and if the New Testament taught the same, it would be nothing new.

Matt. i. 21: He shall save his people from their sins: not in their sins, nor any but his people: spirit-born holy of his seed (Matt. xiii. 37, 38). In no place is it stated Christ came to save from endless punishment any person or persons; nor does it anywhere promise life in any place to the incorrigible sinner beyond blood life death, and the end of this world.

Hell in the New Testament, Hades and Tartarus, which are Greek words, and Gehenna, which is the Greek from the Hebrew words Ge and Hinnom. Hades, this word is used eleven times, and is rendered "the grave" once, and "hell" ten times. In the Old Testament the corresponding word is "Sheol," which signifies the state of the dead in general, without any distinction of good and bad: their happiness or misery; Hades does not mean hell in English; Hades is put for the grave, or state of the dead: O death, where is thy sting? O grave (Hades), where is thy victory? (1 Cor. xv. 55.) Thou wilt not leave my soul in hell (Hades) (Acts ii. 31). He (David) spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, nor his flesh to see corruption. Was the soul of Christ ever in hell, as a place of endless torment? The resurrection of Christ contradicts this: and the flesh and bones, his spirit from heaven paradise, took up to talk with the apostles from the vault, grave, or dead.

Rev. vi. 8: Hell followed death. The good, and the bad, all die blood-life body death.

Rev. xx. 13: Death and hell delivered up the dead, showing them already there, thus contradicting the creeds of men that holds them in endless punishment in hell. 14: Death and hell annihilated, cast into the lake of fire: but nowhere says they live there one second, but this is the second or soul death (Ezek. xviii. 4).

Matt. xi. 23: Capernaum shalt be brought down to hell (Hades), ruined, destroyed, annihilated. Rich man and Lazarus: the rich man in (Hades) hell. Dr. Whitby says we find this very parable in the Gemara Babylonicum known to the Jews; but repeated by Christ to show their spiritual riches would be taken from them and given to the Gentiles, who would accept of spirit life birth holiness, riches of faith which worketh by love. Grecian mythologists, with their thirty-two thousand myth gods, teach that the souls of the wicked are tormented in flames, or Phlegethon, the river of fire, where they suffer torments, etc. The Lord's parables, that used the Grecian mythology (at that time common among the Jews then under Rome), they had mixed them in their traditions and commandments of men with the Scriptures, until the commandments of God were made void by men-creeds, false and fabulous; and it does not at all follow that our Lord approved of what the common people thought or spake concerning those matters, agreeably to the notions of the Greeks. In parabolic discourses, provided the doctrines inculcated are strictly true, the terms in which they are inculcated may be such as are most familiar to the ears of the vulgar, and the images made use of such as they are best acquainted with.

Christ takes the story or parable current among the Jews, and, without approving the heathen opinions on which it was founded, uses it to show that the Gentiles, who believed Christ's truths (Lazarus), would be received into the gospel kingdom with Abraham and Isaac, in the faith covenant which worketh by love (Gal. v. 6); while the Jews (the rich man) would be thrust out into darkness and desolation. They broke the covenant, rejected Christ: thus formed an impassable gulf, and this judgment he represents by the figure of casting into hell, as he had described the destruction of Capernaum (Matt. xi. 23) by saying it would be thrust down to hell. A perfect commentary on the parable is found in such passages as these: "The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth

the fruits thereof: Matt. xxi. 43, 45. Chief priests and Pharisees perceived that he spake of them.

Matt. viii. 11, 12: Many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven: but the children of the kingdom shall be east out into outer darkness (the Jews, the rich man). There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Angels saved Lot from Sodom hell,
 Poor-preacher, or it had not fell.
 Ten converts Sodom would have saved,
 Though all the rest were hell depraved.

Blood on the door posts the Jew saves,
 The Lord's token, while they were slaves,
 While the plagues Egyptians destroy,
 Though faithless, blood brought Jews great joy.

Luke xiii. 28, 29: The same.

Acts xiii. 46: It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you; but seeing ye put it from you, and judge (show) YOURSELVES UNWORTHY OF EVERLASTING LIFE, lo, we turn to the Gentiles.

Tartarus. This word occurs only once, and then in practical form, in 2 Peter ii. 4: "If God spared not the angels that SINNED, but cast them down to hell," etc. Tartarus is one of the same character with the parable just considered, Tartarus being the place of torment in Hades, where the rich man was supposed to be. Tartarus here is derived from the heathen, and chains of darkness from the Jewish mythology; a dramatic figure.

Gehenna. This word occurs twelve times in the New Testament, and is always translated "hell." Gehenna: Hebrew, "Valley of Hinnom." Here the Jew idolaters placed a brazen image of Moloch, where Jews often sacrificed their children to Moloch.

Jer. vii. 31: This valley is called Tophet, from *toph*, a drum; because they beat a drum during those horrible murder rites, lest the cries and shrieks of the infants who were burned should be heard by the assembly.

2 Kings xxiii. 10: Josiah abolished Moloch worship, and renewed the pure worship of God. After this they held the place in such abomination that they cast into it all kinds of filth, dead horses, and other dead animals, and the unburied bodies of crimi-

nals who had been executed. Continual fires were necessary to consume these, lest putrefaction of the dead bodies should infect and poison the atmosphere; and there were always worms feeding on the unburnt pieces around the fire: thus infamous death of the wicked was described by the word Gehenna, or hell. Professors Stuart, Whitby, Clark, and others, confirm the above.

Jer. xix.: Tophet (or Gehenna). Overthrow of Jerusalem: destroyed, silent as the grave, annihilated.

Isaiah lxvi. 23, 24: Their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched; and they shall be an abhorring unto all flesh: from one new moon to another, and from one Sabbath to another, shall all flesh look upon the carcasses of the men. That is, not living men, but dead bodies, in hell. Gehenna was an object of abhorrence and disgust.

Matt. v. 29: Whole body cast into hell. Gehenna was a word in common use among the Jews to describe an infamous death. The wicked should perish in death, and have no resurrection. They cast the wicked into Gehenna, hell, and burned up their dead bodies.

Through faith in Christ's blood, saints are saved;
All others die by sins depraved,
Give up blood life's evils and live,
Soul mind's spirit birth Christ doth give.

Blest is the man who shuns the place
Where sinners love to meet disgrace,
Who mock God's resurrection power,
With hell fire tortures to devour.

Mark ix. 43-49; Isa. lxvi. 23, 24: The same. Judgments all upon this earth, which is hell's deposit of all the dead. No life hath the wicked dead.

Jer. vii. 8, 9: Ye trust in lying words, that cannot profit.

Matt. x. 28; Luke xii. 5: Entire extinction of being (Dr. Clarke); altogether consumed. Christ represents God as able to destroy (annihilate) the wicked soul and body in Gehenna fire.

Matt. xxiv. 21: Nor ever shall be; showing that at that particular time only the greatest suffering occurs.

James iii. 6: Gehenna fires the tongue with filthy stories, and falsehoods, blasphemy, etc., told by the tongue hell fire.

Matt. xxiii. 15: Twofold more the child of hell than yourselves. 27: (Gehenna, or hell) full of dead men's bones, and of all un-

cleanliness. Hell (Gehenna) are terms used to anything foul or repulsive, as dead rotten bodies.

Matt. v. 22: Whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell-fire anger. Would endless punishment, tortures in fire, be a just judgment on such an expression? Acts, thirty years preaching, proclaims no endless Gehenna or hell punishment.

Jer. vii. 20: And Jerusalem shall burn, and shall not be quenched: unquenchable fire.

Matt. iii. 12; Heb. xii. 29: Our God is a consuming fire (unquenchable).

Isa. xxxiv. 5, 9: *Idumea*. It shall not be quenched; the smoke thereof shall go up forever, of brimstone and burning pitch.

Isa. i. 31: Unquenchable fire is simply not quenched until it has done its work. Deut. iv. 24.

Strabo, the geographer, speaking of the Parthenon, a temple in Athens, says: In this was the unquenchable lamp (*Asbestos*).

Mark ix. 43; Luke iii. 17: The chaff (the incorrigibly wicked) he will burn with fire unquenchable.

Heb. xii. 29: Our God is a consuming fire: unquenchable, and consumes the wicked in a moment (Numb. xvi. 21): not in endless tortures unconsuming fire. Homer uses the phrase *asbestos gelos*, unquenchable laughter. Plutarch calls the sacred fire of the temple unquenchable fire: *pur asbeston*, the exact expression of the Lord Jesus Christ, though Plutarch says it had sometimes gone out.

Josephus says the altar of the Jews was supplied by them with fuel, and continued always unquenchable (*asbeston aei*) or endless, *aionios*; yet, when he wrote, the fire was out. Eusebius, the father of ecclesiastical history, describing the martyrdom of several Christians at Alexandria, says: They were scourged and burned in unquenchable fire (*pur asbeston*). Schleusner's Lexicon, *asbestos*; Iliad, lib. i., 599; Cruse's Eusebius, lib. vi., chap. 41, 259. The fire burned until it consumed the victims.

Numb. xvi. 21: Moses and Aaron, separate yourselves from among this congregation, that I may consume them in a moment.

Deut. iv. 24: For the Lord our God is a consuming fire.

Unquenchable does not mean endless fire, nor do the wicked live in the fire; they die in a moment. Shall learned men presume to understand Greek better than the Greeks themselves, or Hebrew better than the Jews? A man who learns all the Babel languages known on the earth, from that source alone, knows no more than when he learned his native language thoroughly.

What harm can a wooden god do?
The same as a false creed in you:
If believed in soul mind as truth,
Your worship's false, in age or youth.

Condemned already because
Of unbelief in God's grace laws,
Sentenced to death beyond grace power,
Death soul and body doth devour.

John iii. 18.

Mark xiii. 19: Affliction such as was not . . . neither shall be. The Old Testament shows all punishment to be temporal, earthly, and not endless; which is God's law, that Jesus came to fulfill; and gave no other law but love.

John xiii. 34: Love one another: a new commandment. The Greek word, endless, does not express *pur asbeston*. There is no proof that the Saviour used unquenchable fire to mean endless fire, but as a parable figure of certain death of bodies and souls of all incorrigibly wicked.

Heb. xii. 29: For our God is a consuming fire; not non-consuming.

Words "Eternal," "Everlasting," "Forever," etc.—*aion* and *aionios* occur together one hundred and seventy-nine times in the New Testament. They are used only nine times in connection with punishment. The expression everlasting fire occurs twice; everlasting punishment once.

Matt. xxv. 46: These shall go away into everlasting punishment. Who are these? 32: All nations bad.

Matt. xi. 21: Woe unto thee, Chorazin! Woe unto thee, Bethsaida! 22, 23: It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shall be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works which have been done in thee had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. 24: It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, in the day of judgment, than for thee. Eternal damnation once; condemnation.

John iii. 18: He that believeth not, is condemned (damned) already.

Rom. viii. 1-13: For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die.

Rom. vi. 23: For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

Gal. vi. 7, 8: He that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh

reap corruption. A rotten body : Schleusner defines the noun *aion* thus : Any space of time, whether longer or shorter, past, present, or future, to be determined by the persons or things of whom it speaks (God who only hath immortality, 1 Tim. vi. 16); man, of few days, and full of trouble Job xiv. 1), and the scope of the subject.

Donnegan : *Aion*, time ; a space of time ; life time, and life ; the ordinary period of man's life ; the age of man ; man's estate ; a long period of time ; eternity. *Aionios*, of long duration ; eternal, lasting, permanent. Schrevelius : *Aion*, an age, a long period of time ; indefinite duration ; time, whether longer or shorter, past, present, or future ; life, the life of man. *Aionios*, of long duration, lasting, sometimes everlasting, sometimes through life. *Eis tons aionas ton aionon*. Thus it is on time : the radical Greek words translated "everlasting," "forever," etc., are not imperative endless, but, as a whole, indefinite time.

The mud grub of the mountain rill
The dragon fly's beginnings fill,
Water element it pulsates,
Thence on the shore air death awaits ;

Then resurrection air life wings,
Through space it flies, which life joys brings.
Thus higher spheres the ant attains
When winged, but still the ant remains.

Dr. Macknight (Presbyterian) says : "*Aionios*, *aion*, everlasting, forever ; being ambiguous, are always to be understood according to the nature and circumstances of the things to which they are applied."

Plato has the phrase eternal (*aionios*) drunkenness ; but no sane man believes he meant endless drunkenness.

Eusebius says chaos which preceded creation was a long eternity, (*dia polun aiona*), age, dispensation, or until consumed by death, fire, etc.

Solon : *Parab*, this eternity was three generations long, or about one hundred years : Alters not the eternal boundaries. If eternal meant endless, it could not be altered.

Aristotle : From one interminable eternity to another eternity, — *ex aionos atermonos eis heteron aiona*. If the first eternity was endless, there could be no second eternity. (Preceding probation blood life, and spirit life probation : time.)

Josephus wrote of the everlasting worship in the temple, which ended over eighteen hundred years since. The everlasting imprisonment of John the Tyrant by the Romans ended with his death.

Sibylline oracles, Clemens Alexandrinus, Origen, and others, who taught final restoration, often used the phrase everlasting fire, everlasting punishment, in regard to the wicked; which truthfully means while they have life, which the fire consumes, when they cease to have a being.

Gen. xvii. 8; xlviii. 4: Canaan, for an everlasting possession; centuries since the Jews were driven from it.

Gen. xlix. 26: Everlasting hills.

Exod. xl. 15: Everlasting priesthood, through their generations.

2 Thess. i. 7: The Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels. 8: In flaming fire (Deut. iv. 24; Heb. xii. 29: Our God is a consuming fire). Taking vengeance on them that know not God, and obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: who shall be punished with everlasting destruction (annihilation).

Matt. xxv. 46: And these shall go away into everlasting punishment. It does not let them live there one minute: they go into it. There is no life beyond time's close in the Scriptures stated for the wicked.

Numb. xvi. 21: That I may consume them in a moment. Everlasting life is only promised to the righteous (Dan. xii. 2; Matt. xix. 29; Luke xviii. 30; John iii. 16; iv. 14; v. 24; vi. 27; xl. 47; xii. 50).

Acts xiii. 46: Seeing ye (Jews) unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles.

Rom. vi. 22; Gal. vi. 7, 8; 1 Tim. i. 16: Them which believe on Christ to everlasting life. Incurrigibly wicked have no promise of life whatever in any place or form; after the close of time they all die, their worm lives, to devour their dead bodies.

Mortals, like grubs, cling to blood life,
Its lusts and appetites, sin's strife;
Soul minds spirit born soar above,
And pulsate spirit life of love.

To dare to say what others think,
But from proclaiming natures shrink,
Makes men martyrs, reformers, too,
But Shaw's Day Thoughts dares truth pursue.

Ex. xxi. 6 : He shall serve his master forever : while he had life, forever ended at his death : it is while the thing lasts (Lev. xvi. 34).

Jonah ii. 6 : The earth with her bars was about me forever : three days. The word everlasting borrows its endlessness from God, not from everlasting.

1 Tim. vi. 16 : God only hath immortality.

The adjective is modified by the noun. A strong horse, a strong mind, a strong chain, strong drink, etc. ; strong in each has a different meaning. A wise God ; a wise man. In the first, wise means infinite wisdom ; in the second, finite earthly wisdom. The subject or noun rules the words used, and is the same in everlasting ; it never has the force of endless in itself ; and in order to make it mean endless when applied to punishment, it must be shown that punishment in its nature is necessarily endless, and infinite as God, is.

Matt. xxv. 46 : The righteous into eternal life. John iii. 5 : Spirit born. 1 John iii. 1, 2 : Sons of God. 10 : Children of God : thus partaking of the divine immortal life nature.

Rom. viii. 9 : Having God's spirit and Christ's.

Heb. xii. 9 : Shall we not much rather be in subjection to the Father of spirits, and live ? clearly showing unspirit born of God cannot live immortal life, but must inevitably die, be annihilated as to life : cease to exist : everlasting punishment : everlasting death : having no resurrector, or life.

John xi. 25, 26 ; v. 40 : Ye will not come unto me that ye might have life. Where else can they obtain it ?

Luke xx. 35-38 : The endless life is of God.

1 John v. 18 : Everlasting hills differ infinitely from everlasting Spirit, God ; because hills are perishable matter, and consume with the earth at the close of time ; as do all Adam's sin-lust race, and Satan, and all his race of unclean tare spirits.

John xiv. 6 : Jesus saith, I am the way, and the truth, and the life ; no man cometh unto the Father but by me. And God only is immortal (1 Tim. vi. 16).

THE SECOND DEATH.

Rev. ii. 11 : He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death.

Rev. xx. 6 : Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first

resurrection (Christ spirit birth resurrection, Eph. ii. 1; John iii. 5; 2 Cor. v. 17). On such the second death hath no power.

Ezek. xviii. 4-20: The soul that sinneth it shall die: first blood life death; second soul death, or its unclean spirit product tare.

Rev. xx. 14: This is the second death: death and hell cast into the lake of fire: no life lives there.

Rev. xxi. 8: Have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

Not that they live in fire and brimstone, as falsely taught. It is a valuable observation of Dr. Hammond, respecting this phrase, that it seems to be taken from the Jews, who used it proverbially for utter destruction. First resurrection when spirit born from the dead (Eph. ii. 1). Second resurrection at blood life death (Luke xx. 35, 36).

The spirit-born new creature in Christ leaves then forever the dead body.

Rev. xx. 14, 15: This is the second death. Whosoever was not found written in the book of life, spirit birth-life, living on earth at its close fire flood, was cast into the lake of fire.

Matt. xvi. 27, xxiv., 31; Rev. xi. 2: One commentator quotes Luke xx. 35, 36: In the resurrection all are equal unto the angels (the word all is false). It is they which shall be accounted worthy; the resurrection from (not of) the dead. The apostles by their diligent watch, and ready refutation of lies and interpolations, kept pagan creeds measurably in check; but after their death, many persons educated in the schools (as in colleges now) of the heathen mythology philosophers became converts to the Christian faith, and the false doctrines of the Grecian heathen sects, with their numerous priests, and thirty-two thousand myth gods, and one to the unknown God (Acts xvii. 23). As the eclectic philosophy spread, heathen and Christian doctrines of men were more intimately blended, until at last (Rev. xiii. 11: He spake as a dragon) under the tyranny of the man of sin, the Pope of Rome, both were almost entirely lost in the thick clouds of ignorance, wars, barbarism, and superstitions, which covered the earth, and deluged it with hell wars bloodshed; ruin of inquisition tortures, and fire death of Christians, calling them heretics. If the Bible had not been preserved, religious pagan chaotic night would have covered the earth by this time. And with it, now, we have no sect wholly in conformity with the Scriptures, on the earth. The Universalists, who early saw the horrid mockery of God (who reveals him-

self always as good love, mercy and justice), as a monster who would as a demon of hate resurrect dead bodies, to devour in endless fire tortures, after making them immortal to endure fire and brimstone lake's tortures, pain horrors of demoniac imaginations; when in truth only earth's dissolution by fire, and those alive on it at time's close not found worthy of resurrection to heaven, were described; but they ring in the word "all" falsely and fraudulently, when it is plainly stated in Luke xx. 35, 36: "Those accounted worthy." They call all Adam's race, because the Lord Jesus Christ would not, they say, have sacrificed his life for so few, as those who are spirit-born holy, etc., when they are plainly told (Gen. vi. 7) that the Lord God swept out of existence life in any form or place; all Adam's sin-lust race on earth, but one family, Noah's. There are in all many millions of Adam's race, no doubt, whose soul minds are spirit-born holy through faith belief of scripture truths, saved through Christ's sacrificial atonement for their souls (Lev. xvii. 11).

Matt. vii. 13: Broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat. 14: Because strait is the gate and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. They also flatly contradict God, by agreeing with the serpent, Gen. iii. 4, 5, Ye shall not surely die, but be as gods (immortal in life).

Gen. ii. 17: God says, Thou shalt surely die. Orthodox church creeds of men contain the same flat contradiction of God's statute law imperative, by making the incorrigibly wicked immortal in hell fire's endless tortures; while Universalists, equally contradictory of God, make them immortal in heaven.

Gen. iii. 19: Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. No reserve of anything whatever.

Gen. 22. 24: Prevented from living forever in any place or form.

Obad. 16: They shall be as if they had not been.

Ezek. xviii. 4: The soul that sinneth it shall die (Isa. v. 24; Mal. iv. 1).

Such a confused mixing of spirit Babel creed towers, and sects of professed Christians, Jews, Pagans, etc., concentrated in the Roman inquisition, and handed down through partial reformers; endless hell-fire torture hatred madness, utterly insane with hate imaginations false as Satan their father could invent; in utter contradiction of God's truth law of utter death of the incorrigibly

wicked, as clearly revealed by the Lord, whose power and goodness they mock and insult; heathenish mummy superstitions of Egypt, and mythology of Greek and Roman philosophers, which began while the Lord's apostles preached the truth; how much more since their decease. They all mix truth and falsehood in every man-creed sect on earth; none are infallible but God and his Scripture truths. Then throw to the winds men-creeds; take the Bible as thy only guide to truth and heaven. Amalgamation of truth and love with falsehood and hatred is a bad creed.

Among the Greeks and people of the east, mysteries were held sacred; this led Christians to claim apparent superior wisdom in the preacher, to the lay membership of the churches, and to have similar mysteries to certain holy rites concealed from the vulgar. And, says Mosheim, they not only applied the pagan terms, but introduced also their rites in the second century of Christian observances, and institutions had the aspect of pagan mysteries. In the fifth century, he says, as no one objected to Christians retaining the opinions of their pagan ancestors respecting the soul, heroes, demons, temples, and the like, and no one proposed to utterly abolish the ancient pagan institutions, but only to alter the same to purify them; they substitute each official in the church, as pope, cardinal, and bishop, in place of Moloch, Baal, goddess Diana of the Ephesians, etc.

Each man-creed sect have their man-founder image head to worship with his man-creed; Martin Luther, John Calvin, John Wesley, Henry VIII., king of the English Church, Emperor of Russia of the Greek Church: Popes, Cardinals, Bishops, D.D.'s, Professors, etc., as infallible men creed makers. It was unavoidable when selfish men (all like ourselves fallible men: Scripture alone the true guide) popes desired, as Satan, to lord it over God's heritage; seek applause of men, and rule in arbitrary authority over their fellow men. The doctrine of purgatory, the purification of souls after blood life death by some sort of fire torture, which became after its promulgation a great source of wealth to the clergy, or hireling shepherd wolves, in pretended sheep's clothing. Finally, the barrier of ancient simplicity and truth being once violated, the state of theology waxed worse and worse; philosophical mythology's myth jargon, like the Pope of Rome, the Moloch idol, by whom Christians (called by them heretics) for over twelve hundred years were tortured in inquisition hells to death, by fire fagots, and every variety then known

of torture, it would seem: and the pope was worshiped, and is still, as Papa Father, in flat contradiction of Christ's commands: Matt. xxiii. 9: Call no man your father, upon the earth; for one is your Father which is in heaven.

Popery has recently added to the Moloch pope, the mysterious, Peter stone keys; made Mary the mother of creation's God; and the pope recently infallible: thus his worshipers cry, Great is the Pope of Rome! A poor fallible mortal, sinking lower and lower in power every year. It is a mere change of idols; the worship is still pagan, and dead mortal bodies substituted for wooden images of mortals. Gnostics intermixed the doctrines of Oriental philosophy concerning the two opposing principles, good and evil, with the precepts of Christianity, and the authority of Zoroaster as an inspired personage like Christ. Ammonians tried to unite all the schools of pagan philosophy, and all the various doctrines of men creeds (the last the greatest absurdity), and both to the doctrines of the Scriptures: the church thus became flooded with corruption.—*Tytler's Universal History*, B. v., chap. 4.

Under the strong partiality for Plato and his pagan mythology doctrines, many theologians disseminated Platonic notions as Christian truths; thus poisoning mortal minds with false men creeds, that mar Scripture truth. Justin Martyr, Athenagoras, and Clemens Alexandrinus, in whose writings Platonic sentiments and language clearly show a desire to unite Platonic and Christian doctrines in the second century. And it was natural for them to adopt the pagan doctrine of endless punishment after death, which had been taught them from childhood, as the philosophy of the (myth) gods of politics and corrupt theology. It would be a strange phenomenon if the old fables, Hades and Tartarus, were not introduced to frighten the ignorant multitude.

Father, forgive them, all my foes;
Thus said my Saviour ere life's close,
As his blood life for souls he gives,
Who, spirit born, through his life lives.

The sword harms not while in the sheath,
Thus thoughts false, temptations beneath,
If the soul's will door barred within,
Shuts out the tempter, and his sin.

Clement of Rome (A.D. 90) in his epistle says not a word about

future punishment, save endless death, annihilation, which the Scriptures plainly teach ; so that a wayfaring man, though a fool, need not err. Shall we, says Clement, think it strange for the Lord of all to raise up those who religiously serve him in the assurance of a good faith?—Chap. xii. : Wake's translation. This clearly shows that the apostles and early Christians taught no resurrection of the wicked : and righteous only, raised at blood life death, deemed worthy of it by the Lord (Luke xx. 35, 36).

Rom. vi. 23 : For the wages of sin is death.

Rom. viii. 13 : For if ye live after the flesh ye shall die.

Gal. vi. 8 : He that soweth to the flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption.

Ignatius (A.D. 110) says they die in their disputes ; but much better it would be for them to receive the Eucharist (that through the body of Christ) ; they might one day rise through it.—*Epis. to the Smyrniats*, chap. i. 8 ; ii. 17, Wake's translation : showing he thought the wicked would not rise.

Polycarp (A.D. 112) says nothing about endless punishment. Annihilation of the wicked can be plainly inferred from his writings.

Barnabas (A.D. 130–140). The way of darkness is crooked, and full of cursing ; for it is the way of eternal death. They meet with things that destroy their own souls (Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27 : The soul that sinneth it shall die). Gnostics, regarded as heretics, also mixed pagan philosophy with Christian doctrines until the compound was unintelligible jargon. They differ from orthodox creeds of men, by adding too much heathen myth gods mummies, resurrections of mythology.—*Milman's History of Christianity*, B. ii., chap. 7.

Sun's rays bring to earth heat and light,
Thus God's Word soon beams forth in might,
Christ's love expands on every side,
Humbly believe, sinners deride.

Cast all your cares on Jesus now,
He careth for you when you bow.
Tribulations patience matures,
Patience experience secures.

A.D. 160–190.—The last date brings us to the distinguished Irenæus, Bishop of Lyons, France. He says : “ The principle of

existence is not inherent in our constitutions, but is given us of God. He who cherishes the gift of existence, and is thankful to the giver, shall exist forever; but he who despises it, and is ungrateful, deprives himself of the privileges of existence forever. He who is unthankful to God for temporal life, which is little, cannot justly expect from him existence which is endless." Agreeing with Justin Martyr (the Scripture truths and statute laws of God, of life to the righteous, and death wages to sin. Rom. vi. 23: For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord), that the wicked are annihilated who are not spirit-born holy.

A.D. 200-220.—Tertullian, a pagan by birth, and an African lawyer by profession. He was the first who taught immortal life torments to the wicked. He was of a fierce and fiery hate temper, void of love, a child of the devil. His discourses on the subject of hell-fire torment showed him to be a demon, in the following exultant strain: "You are fond of your spectacles," said he to the pagans. "When all ages shall be swallowed up in one conflagration, what a variety of spectacles shall then appear. How shall I admire, how laugh, how rejoice, how exult, when I behold so many kings and false gods together, with Jove himself, groaning in the lowest abyss of darkness! So may magistrates, who persecuted the name of the Lord, liquifying in fiercer flames than they ever kindled against Christians, so many sage philosophers, blushing in raging fire, with their scholars, who they permitted to despise God and disbelieve the resurrection! Then shall we see the dancers far more sprightly amid the flames; the charioteer all red-hot in his burning car; and the wrestlers hurled upon a plain of fire," etc., etc. Guizot attempts to soften the translation of Gibbon; but Milman frankly owns that Christians had better retreat upon genuine truth records of the Scriptures, than to identify itself with unchristian fanaticism.—*Decline and Fall*, chapter xv., note 72, and the text.

Tertullian said the soul is corporeal, etc. The black serpent in Eden (Gen. iii. 4, 5) hissed out the same demon hate, guise, beguiling lies, ye shall not surely die. Tertullian serpent, immortal in fire.

God's invisible Spirit made
Mortals' voice words, but creature said
God's voice is neither heard or seen,
Secret prayers have no voice screen.

With all the mind and soul God seek
 In secret faith, love, humble, meek,
 To seek God in what man's voice said,
 Is to seek living among dead.

A.D. 540-553.—In a church council (of which the devil's infallible pope council was an emblem), they adopted dead body corruption, resurrection of all Adam's race, and endless fire tortures of the wicked: thus five hundred years of pagan philosophy, mixture of mythology gods of hell-fire hatred to rule out, love thy neighbor as thyself: which hell fires they soon begun by the Roman popes, and cardinals, and bishops, and priests, inquisition tortures of hell; for over twelve hundred years, or until the Reformation of Luther and others. The early writers of the church frequently spoke of everlasting or eternal punishment, as eternal utter death, annihilation of body and souls, of incorrigibly wicked, which the Scriptures plainly teach: Gen. ii. 17; iii. 19-24; Isa. v. 24; Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27: The soul that sinneth it shall die. Eccles. xii. 7; Obad. 16; Mal. iv. 1, and all through the Bible the same language. Rom. vi. 23: For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15: Be not deceived; God is not mocked; for whatsoever a man soweth that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the spirit shall of the spirit reap life everlasting.

Justin Martyr and Irenæus say the wicked will be condemned to everlasting punishment, annihilation. So says God's Scriptures; save the devil's serpent preacher, Gen. iii. 4, 5, ye shall not surely die: which is the only promise of life beyond the close of time, in any form, or place, to the finally lost, incorrigibly wicked. Satan's serpent liars still beguile mortals.

A.D. 400-430.—Augustine argued first, that *aionios* was endless, but discovered his error on examination, and admitted it was not always, but sometimes it was: when applied to man it is not; but to God, it was. As well say that man and God were equals.

Matt. vi. 15; vii. 12, 15, 16: Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. Ye shall know them by their fruits.

Like stars the brightest saint will shine
 With borrowed light from Christ divine;
 Christ as heaven's spirit sunlight,
 God his Father's glory in sight.

God's children walk with God each day,
 Of him they think, to him they pray;
 The wicked think most evil here,
 And hate and judge Christians severe.

The Pope of Rome and his cardinals, bishops, and preachers, for some twelve hundred and sixty years, preached hell fire and brimstone tortures endless of the wicked, and applied the fire tortures as devils in ocular demonstration, save it was the righteous instead of the wicked they burned. The savage creed begets a savage temper, and a corresponding conduct; hell fire tortures endless is as stones for food of God's spirit-born love spirit children. And it teaches the unspirit-born to hate them, and their god of endless tortures hate, if they teach such demon creeds of men, that flatly contradict heaven's God of goodness, love, mercy, and source of every blessing, and justice, righteousness, holiness. The ocular demonstration of believers of endless hell fire tortures in power to carry out their creed was manifest in their crusades against the Albigenses.

A. D. 1300: Their ruthless devil priests said it is for the glory of God (their purgatory gate-keeper mythology myth god, a devil): and to slaughter men, women and children, would secure the salvation of the devils who murdered them, as so many tigers on defenseless sheep, with the demon joy of a black Tertullian lawyer devil.—*Sismondi's History of Crusades against Albigenses*, Cap. ii., 73-84.

But the priests who taught eternal punishment fire tortures endless were not content to begin it with simple murder of men, women, and children, but preceded it by the most horrible demon tortures and cruelties imaginable to devils, and rejoiced at their agonies like the black fiend Tertullian; in their service of their demon god of endless fire tortures they worshiped, and imitated as far as they could; full proof of the connection of hatred, faith, and practice, or the worshiper is like his god devil; or, God righteous, good, merciful, love. The massacre of St. Bartholomew is another proof (with all the unnumbered thousands murdered yearly for one thousand two hundred and sixty years by the hell tortures of the Romish inquisition) of the power of eternal torture creed faith hate, to convert man into a fiend. The ancient Roman theatre, with its momentary pangs, and shrieks, quite fades into nothing, in contrast to the Coliseum of papal inquisition cruelty, by which

myriads of innocent people were tortured and murdered by demon beasts, under the pagan mythology myth god devils angels, of tiger night light eyes, to seek innocent prey ; insane madness, endless hell fire and brimstone tortures ; delusion of fanatic fiends, who, by traditions, have handed down to this age the Moloch hell creed, and horrid mockery and blasphemy of heaven's sovereign ruler of the universe, the God of love, of all who dwell in love ; o'er whom he presides as Father of spirits ; and supplies, with wisdom, knowledge, and understanding, intellects clothed with reason, and in their peaceful love minds, they, with childlike filial adoration, call him Father. While mocking hell fire torturers of the demon inquisition picture him as their demon hate mythology myth god devil, of savage torture revenge endless, and mock as devils his resurrection of soul mind spirit-born children of God, new creatures in Christ ; by portraying him as a resurrector of dead rotten bodies, in part composed of dead swine, which God forbid his children to eat, and that he would roast the most of Adam's race, who are as a dust on a balance, and less than nothing in value, and vanity shadows in endless fire and brimstone tortures, and keeping them alive in the flames of tortures infinite agony, merely to punish them for not becoming his children.

While all were sinners Jesus died,
Then saints should not sinners deride ;
For such were they, when spirit life
Awoke love, and ended hate strife.

Endless hell fires for sinners dead,
Agrees not with what Jesus said ;
Love your enemies, for them pray,
Not raise from death, to burn away.

Rom. v. 8 : God commendeth his love toward us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

John iii. 5 : Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. 6 : That which is born of the flesh is flesh.

Isa. xl. 6 : All flesh is grass. 7 : Surely the people is grass. 15 : Behold the nations are as the drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance. 17 : All nations before God are as nothing, and are counted to him less than nothing and vanity. 22 : The inhabitants of earth are as grasshoppers.

Ps. ciii. 14: God knoweth our frame; he remembereth that we are dust.

Ps. cxix. 119: Thou puttest away all the wicked of the earth like drops. 126: It is time for thee, Lord, to work, for they (rotten body resurrectionists, and endless fire torture creed worshipers of blasphemous mockery of thy love and power) have made void of thy law.

The Roman Catholic inquisition tortures of the dark ages prolonged the blood life of their victims under the most excruciating agonies, so that the poor heretic (to their false demon creeds of devils) might endure the last degree of their revenge hate possible, to please their devil god of demon revenge, who would continue the tortures they thus hell begun, in endless hell fires and brimstone; when truthfully those they thus doomed were God's holy children, whom, like Christ, Roman soldiers murdered. The annals of pagan sacrifice murders of infants to Moloch fire death in Hinnom, hell, furnish but a faint emblem of the atrocities of the Romish inquisition, and their horrid tortures are less than a shadow of what (oh, Lord, can it be blindness so great, it is so in truth, even orthodox men creeds now teach the same!) their myth demon god like themselves will do; they taught, and still teach, endless fire tortures, agonies endless of all the incorrigibly wicked.

God is not lightning, but sunlight.
The thunderbolt Christ bore from sight,
And in blood life's death silent grave,
Bore death from all souls he doth save.

All souls unquicken'd, death retains,
Temptation from devil remains;
God's sunlight on all earth life shines,
Spirit-born love life God refines.

—Eph. ii. 1.

But this terrible influence of the inquisition tortures and endless hell-fire doctrines was not confined to the priests of this religion: the cruel and ferocious spirit of its unclean madness was diffused among all its believers, and its pestilential poisons of soul mind thoughts pervaded the whole life of the people, and thus tradition-men-creeds false were handed down through the reformers, who only reformed inquisition tortures, but held the blood life body resurrections, and continued the same inquisition false demon God

of revenge hate, that would torture after blood life death the masses of the people of the earth, by resurrecting the incorrigibly wicked, and making their rotten bodies immortal salamanders, to endure life in flames of fire tortures eternally. I worship no such God. The God I worship has revealed himself to me, and I feel and know him to be as he declares himself.

1 John iv. 16: God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.

Matt. xix. 17: There is none good but one, that is God.

1 John i. 5: God is light, and in him is no darkness.

Heb. xii. 29: God is a consuming fire. And he consumes his foes in a moment.

Num. xvi. 21, 45: That I may consume them in a moment. Not torture in endless fire non-consuming.

Acts x. 34: God is no respecter of persons.

John iii. 33: God is true. 36: He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life; and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him. Left in death, and shall not see life.

John iv. 24: God is a Spirit; and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. God is my salvation, refuge, strength, shield and defense.

Ps. cxvi. 5: God is merciful.

Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul shall make her boast in the Lord; the humble shall hear thereof and be glad. 8: O taste and see that the Lord is good.

Ps. xcix. 9: The Lord our God is holy.

Ps. ciii. 8: The Lord is merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and plenteous in mercy. 9: Neither will he keep his anger forever.

Ps. xxx. 5: God's anger endureth but a moment; in his favour is life.

Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27: The soul that sinneth it shall die.

Even the tenderest ties of innocence and affection, and the holiest Christian relations of life, were crushed beneath the iron heel of religious zeal to please their popes, and church and state officials, of the inquisition tortures, and promulgators of endless hell-fire tortures, to please their father the devil, who was the god they worshiped. In Italy and Spain the inquisition had the strongest hold upon the people, whom the Roman priests fed with demoniac superstition fanaticism; and crimes the most revolting were the

fruits. — *History of the Reformation in Spain*, chap. 9. *Llorente's History of the Inquisition*, abridged, Philadelphia, 1843. *D'Aubigne's History*. *Buchanan's Christian Researches*, pp. 172–193.

Spirit-born love life sees God's light
Within their soul when they do right.
God is love, all such feel and know,
They endless torments never sow.

Love never hates the fallen foe,
Nor consigns them to endless woe.
Hell-fire torments of endless pain
Love ne'er metes out; 'tis hate insane.

The history of John Calvin, and Servetus, the same savage faith having the power, doing the same infernal work, showing the creed of endless hell-fire tortures of the wicked, does not produce God-like love, but demon hatred like the tare seed father the devil, who delights in earthly power, and torture misery of mortals. And the history of the Puritans, the Anglo-Saxons (Congregationalists) of our own land; the bloody scourge in the Eastern States falling upon the defenseless Quakers, who meekly suffered (showing the ancient Saxon pirates' disposition still lived in their descendants); the cry of agony of poor defenseless old mothers, called witches, were unheeded (ocular demonstrations of their endless hell-fire torture creed of the popish inquisition); death and its accompaniments of endless torture was meted out to them as far as they could accomplish it, leaving the resurrection of the poor old woman, and endless tortures in hell-fire tortures after death, to their Egyptian mummy myth god of pagan mythology. Like the Aztecs of America, and the Norsemen of Europe, they partook of the unclean spirit demon inquisition ancestry, eternal endless hatred myth god devil deity, and suppose it a duty, and a most acceptable service when they have the power, they begin so far as this world admits the work of endless punishment torments, which their creed infers their unforgiving revenge hate God will make infinite and endless in hell-fire tortures of the wicked after blood life death.

Queen Mary of England (daughter of Catherine, the divorced wife, and of Henry VIII., King of England, and pope-founder, and head of the English Church, or Episcopal Church) was right in burning Bishop Cranmer, John Rogers, and some hundred and seventy more tortured to death, during her reign. As Bishop

Burnet says, she defended her bloody persecutions by appealing to the supposed future example of the Deity: "As the souls of all heretics are hereafter to be eternally burning in hell-fire tortures, there can be nothing more proper than for me to imitate the divine vengeance by burning them on earth." This is legitimate and logical reasoning deductions, and exhibits the natural fruits of the doctrine of Ye shall not surely die, but live in endless fire tortures, Gen. iii. 4, 5. With power to inflict the tortures Mary gave ocular demonstrations of the torture fire hell creed of endless continued punishment. If then we would make mankind what they should be, we must begin with the object of their worship; we see the effects of sin-lust worship. Gen. vi. 5: Every imagination of the thoughts of their hearts was only evil continually: thus the continual fire tortures are meted out to unbelievers by evil thoughts; not love, goodness, and mercy, but revenges relentless hate endless fire tortures punishment, too horrid to endure a day, even in contemplation of the agonies of pain, infinitely less, endless fire tortures. The spirit born holy child of God is full of love and peace; no hatred, no malice, or revenge hatred abides in such a moment while they dwell in love, for God dwells in them, in his love nature infinite.

To-day in paradise with me,
 From life's body pains ever free.
 Better far leave, and with Christ be
 Absent from body, Lord, in thee.

At blood life death spirit born soar,
 And are with Christ forever more,
 First resurrection, spirit birth,
 Second when blood life dies on earth.

God is love (1 John iv. 16). Therefore I know by experimental spirit birth, loves surroundings of God in me is ocular demonstration that accusing him of torturing the wicked, and keeping them alive in a lake of fire and brimstone tortures endless, is a base devil slander falsehood creed of blasphemy of heaven's sovereign supreme, who I know experimentally is love, goodness, mercy, and source of every blessing to all that live; and he is not a God of the dead, nor resurrector of rotten bodies. All such creeds are blasphemous mockery, slanders of the God I love and worship daily. We must throw all men creeds into the

fire, and consume them, not the mortals whose minds are blinded by them from their youth; and thereby their second nature habit of evil carnal nature thoughts, like St. Paul's when he pursued the apostles of our Lord, to imprison, scourge, malign, and murder them. When before Ananias the blind men creed scales of superstitious false men creeds teachings fell.

May it please the Lord to open the eyes of every preacher on earth, at this closing decade of the Gentile dispensation, and quite likely the eternal close of time's parenthesis probation life, between two eternities, past and future, endless like a ring; and earth's dissolution by fire flood, and the grand opening of eternal life joys beatific, in which none of Adam's sin lust race can partake, but the spirit born of God. John iii. 5; 1 John v. 18; iii. 2, 10.

God's rays of love beam forth alway,
Like God's sunlight, no king can stay,
Proud, like tall mountains capped with snow,
Humble, like fertile plains below.

Ever as babes the humble feel,
Before the Lord humbly they kneel;
Their love o'erflows on all around,
No endless hell-fires there abound.

Love is the life blood of the spirit-born holy child of God. No others of Adam's race are immortal, nor can they be united by spirit, soul, mind, faith, belief of Scripture truths. They conceive love of God, and spirit birth's new creature life in Christ, and thereby partake of immortal life in the Deity Divinity alone.

1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality; therefore no wicked unregenerate can be immortal in any form or place.

The Incas or Peruvians worshiped the sun, as the source of light, of joy, and felicity in the Creator, and it attracted their principal homage; they never stained their altars with human blood; nor could they conceive that the beneficent Father, the sun, would be delighted with such horrid victims. Ireland's first settlers were sun-worshippers, and prosperous and happy; but Roman Catholic popish inquisition tortures religion, and its pagan devil mythology, philosophy, myth god, that burned and tortured all the heretics to their falsehood men creeds, has reduced the opulent Irish sun-worshippers' descendants to vain superstitions of

popery and poverty and toil, who still adhere to the demon hate creed of endless torture punishment of their neighbors.

Matt. vi. 15: If ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

Josephus says of the Jews (who followed priestcraft pagan men-creeds false, instead of the Scripture God of love and truth): "I cannot say it without regret, but I must declare it as my opinion, that if the Romans had delayed to come against these wretches, the city (Jerusalem) would have been swallowed up by an earthquake, or overwhelmed by a deluge, or else been consumed by fire from heaven, as Sodom (and Gomorrah) was; for it produced a generation of men more wicked than those who had suffered such calamities." How absurd it would be to teach that after they were destroyed as too wicked to live on earth, that God would take such to heaven, making heaven into a storage of Satan's unclean tare children; and more absurd still, that God would resurrect to immortal life of fire tortures those he had destroyed.

Proud D.D., cardinal, and pope,
Like Nero rules with horoscope.
Endless hells for the poor they find,
For money all the rich unbind.

Faith is the soul mind's eye of love,
New creature life from God above,
Faith brings immortal life and light,
That quick disperses Satan's night.

The falsity and absurdity of endless torture punishment creeds, and the utter uselessness of the terror system of pagan mythology, is plainly seen in the religion and morals of the Burmans. The Buddhists preach that mankind pass into other bodies of animals, birds, beasts, fishes or insects, from a higher to a lower grade, if wicked, until they reach hell, or a place of unmixed torment; in cases of atrocious crime, as murder, they go direct to hell. The Burmans ought to be a very good and holy people, if the doctrine of endless punishment was efficacious in restraints from sin. But what are the facts? Dr. Judson frankly confesses that this system of religion has no power over the heart, or restraint on the passions. Dr. Wayland as frankly owns that it is found practically to have created no barrier whatever against sin. The most ignorant and worthless children are those whose parents and guardians

use terror threats to subdue ; as tortures supernatural and dangers which they find, as they mature in years, are not fulfilled, and they are full of wild incoherent reasoning thoughts.

While the law of Gaudama, the deity, forbids to take the life of any animate being, the Burmans are bloodthirsty, cruel and vindictive, beyond most of the nations of India. Murders are of very common occurrence, and the punishment of death is inflicted with scourging cruelty. While licentiousness is absolutely forbidden, they are said to be universally profligate. They are nearly all dishonest and deceitful.

The sect of Sadducees, among the Jews, believed not in endless punishments and torments beyond blood life death, as did the wild heathen pagan priests of Egypt, and especially the mummy body resurrectionists, and from them merged by the philosophers of Greek and Roman mythologists, as one of their thousands of imaginary myth gods of endless war, upon the helpless, wicked dead bodies, which must have been only one of the little, insignificant worms, that dies not when the blood life of the mortal body dies ; and preys as vultures on the mortal's body in the grave, and consumes it, leaving but worm dung remains, which moulder with the lime bones back to dust remains : which they taught would be resurrected by the worm with God, and tortured if of the wicked on earth, in endless fire and brimstone tortures : for what, and for whose benefit or gratification, none tell.

Love leaves unsaved sinners in death ;
Proud hate would again give them breath,
And them eternal tortures give,
What hellish gifts in fire to live.

And themselves philanthropic call,
Thus misers rich give bastards all,
All hell fires they would give away,
Will them consume in hell array.

Thus desire wish is mother to the thoughts, and the fruitful imaginations of the heathen pagan idol worshipers of wooden images of mortal bodies merged their stock in priestcraft trade into mortal bodies dead, that they would resurrect, and the worm they magnified into a god of war revenge, and endless tortures of the poor, defenseless, helpless bodies, void of blood life powers ; their fallen, conquered foe, whom the worms had consumed. It is madness gone mad in insane revenge myth imaginations.

I was taught from childhood, by Christian parents and orthodox ministers, in Scripture truths, for which I feel grateful. But the pagan mummy rotten body, worm god mythology, merged in the men creeds of the various sects of religionists by traditions of men and their endless hell-fire tortures after blood life death, I find not taught in the Bible Scriptures of truth infallible; but their myth imaginations wrested Scripture parables into the false heathen mummy theology.

The Scriptures plainly teach that all Adam's race are sentenced to death irrevocable: Gen. ii. 17; iii. 19, 22, 24. Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. No reserves of any mortal bodies, or any other life quality. The soul is but as a nature female, and the mind intellect is as the female egg; the spirit life immortal love of God, the male spirit seed of immortal life sown there, produces an immortal spirit life, new creatures: wholly disconnected at spirit birth, as a mother body blood life, emblem of the soul in spirit life beings, is disconnected from the child.

Matt. xiii. 37, 38: God in Christ's woman's seed love spirit, called as to woman's seed the son of man, sows the seed of immortal life spirit in believers of his gospel Scripture truths, which is spirit born: John iii. 5. Resurrected never to die. John xi. 25, 26. And has the spirit of God, and Christ: Rom. viii. 9; 1 Cor. xv. 23. A new creature in Christ: 2 Cor. v. 17. Abiding in Christ's spirit love: John xv. 5. A son of God. 1 John iii. 1, 2: child of God. 1 John iv. 16: God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.

1 John v. 18: We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and the wicked one toucheth him not. 19: And we (spirit-born holy) know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness.

Buchner, author of the History of Philosophy, says of the life of the Sadducees, it might be conjectured from the character of their doctrine (no future life fires of tortures, or body resurrections), that their life was bad; but we must pronounce otherwise of their morals, if we adhere to the testimony of the ancients.

Josephus says the Sadducees are severe in judging, rigorous in punishing crimes. (Josephus was a Pharisee.) He says the Sadducees paid a stricter regard to justice than did the Pharisees. The Pharisees believe the doctrine of endless punishment, and the resurrection of rotten corruption bodies, the mummy doctrine they

learned of the Egyptian pagan priests; and the Sadducees' denying it clearly shows that the disbelief of endless punishment tortures beyond the grave does not make a man immoral, or wicked, nor the belief of such doctrines; the Sadducees, whom their enemies acknowledge to be strictly just and moral, abundantly demonstrate. Of course, the belief of the Pharisees in body resurrection and endless punishment tortures of the wicked, like their pagan brethren of Egyptian mummy embalming, and Grecian and Roman mythology philosophy, is highly approved of (except their 32,000 gods) by the orthodox creeds of men traditions, therefore they ought to be great saints, without spot or blemish, and the Sadducees for not believing pagan myth god creeds of body flesh resurrections, and its endless tortures in hell-fire, great sinners; but we have already seen that they were not. The Lord Jesus Christ, the judge of all the earth, solves this problem.

Matt. v. 20: Except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

Matt. xxiii. 33; Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation (condemnation) of hell (the grave)?

John viii. 44: Ye are of your father the devil. 45: Because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not. This does not look like being very saintly. It is worthy of note in this connection, in all Christ's rebukes and denunciations of wickedness of the men of that age and generation, the Saviour never includes the Sadducees. It is always scribes, Pharisees, hypocrites; never scribes, Sadducees, hypocrites. This is strong presumptive proof of the morality of the Sadducees; and how beautiful and instructive the Saviour's explanation of the only resurrection from, not of the dead. Spiritual children of God resurrected from the earthy nature body shell, at blood life death. Luke xx. 35-38. And presumptive proof of the mockery wickedness of the Pharisees' body resurrection and endless pagan tortures of the wicked.

It is nowhere asserted in the Scriptures that the incorrigibly wicked after blood life death, and close of time, have a life of any kind or form, or live in any place whatever.

Rom. vi. 23: For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. Christ is the life, not Adamic blood life (John xi. 25).

It is nowhere asserted in the Scriptures that we will rise again with blood life bodies. As well teach that the stalk, the blade,

and the cob, are the same things as the grain put in the ground. He cannot quote St. Paul that we shall rise again with the same bodies.

Death of blood life sets Christians free,
Spirit born love, Lord, soars to thee.
Soul minds chrysalis egg shell breaks,
Child of God in heaven awakes.

Soul mind's new creature love is born,
Of spirit love, Christ doth adorn,
First resurrection, spirit love,
Second soars from body above.

-1 Cor. xv. 37: Thou sowest not that body that shall be. 44: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body.

Heb. xii. 9: We have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence; shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live?

The future body cannot be like the present one.

1 Cor. xv. 50: Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God: neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

Rom. viii. 8: So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. That is truth, and the body resurrectionists' must be false creeds, and where would they go with the body that displeased God, and all of which he had sentenced to death dust? Gen. iii. 19, 22, 24: And prevented from partaking of everlasting life.

Rom. viii. 9: But ye (spirit born holy children of God, spirit beings like him) are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. 10: If Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin (sentenced in Eden to death). But the spirit is life because of righteousness.

1 Cor. xv. 41, 42: One star differeth from another star in glory, so also is the resurrection of the dead. So that the spirit child of God, new creature in Christ (2 Cor. v. 17), is as different from the blood life nature body as the star is different from it.

1 Cor. xv. 44: The nature body and the spirit body are two distinct beings, distinct individual existences. St. Paul effectually precludes the Egyptian mummies from their pagan heathen priests' delusive dreams of the resurrection of their preserved brainless bodies. I think earth's fire flood will dispose of them all, without any pain or sorrow, to their former blood life occupants. I think

it was a waste of time and money to preserve them; they are composed of nature's products, and will perish with nature's dissolution.

2 Pet. iii. 10: The day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in which the heavens will pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burnt up. No reserve of bodies.

Soul egg minds Christ's love seed receive,
Repentants Christ's words then believe,
Then Holy Ghost quickens to life
Children of God, free from sin's strife.

As the blossom bud on the tree,
First resurrection life in thee,
And second when the fruit matures,
Then heaven's angels it secures.

Mal. iv. 1: For behold the day cometh that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble; and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch.

Isa. v. 24: Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff, so their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust; because they have cast away the law of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel. "I confess when I look upon a world of sufferers upon death-beds, and grave-yards, upon the world of woe, filled with hosts to suffer forever, when I see my parents, my family, my people, my fellow-citizens; when I look upon a whole race involved in this sin and danger, and when I see the great mass of them wholly unconcerned [though thousands of preachers of hell fires endless tortures false prophets surround them], and I feel that God only can save them [God cannot against their will and unspirit-born], and yet he does not do it, I am struck dumb; it is all dark, dark, dark, to my soul, and I cannot disguise it, why man must suffer to all eternity. I have never seen a particle of light thrown on these subjects that has given a moment's ease to my tortured mind."—*Barnes's Practical Sermons*, pp. 123–125. How plain God's Scripture truths explains the whole, as all can plainly see by

reading Shaw's Day Thoughts, Nature Parables. And faith which worketh by love (Gal. v. 6).

Life immortal, is only promised to the righteous; never to the wicked, in any form or place, is it to be found in the Holy Scripture truths. Nor does God's book of nature life show forth anything of the kind, but both teach ever the reverse; death endless in utter annihilation is plainly taught of all mere natural life by every falling leaf, blossom, and its fruit; all soon return to nature's lifeless inanimate elements.

1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality; like begets its like, is God's law of the universe. Mortals cannot beget immortals.

Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15: Be not deceived. God is not mocked; for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.

Gen. vii. 23: Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark.

Lilies toil not, nor do they spin,
They grow from God's word life within.
Solomon was not thus arrayed,
As the white lily God's word made.

If God so clothe the grass to-day,
Which to-morrow consumes away,
Ye of faith which worketh by love,
Seek first God's kingdom from above.

Rom. v. 8: While we were yet sinners Christ died for us.

Eph. ii. 1: And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins. 2: Wherein in times past ye, according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air (the devil death), the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience. 3: And were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. 5: Even when we were dead in sins, and hath quickened us together with Christ. 6: And hath raised us up together.

John xi. 25, 26: Whosoever liveth (is spirit-born, iii. 5; quickened (Eph. ii. 1) from the dead), and believeth in me, shall never die.

Rom. viii. 9: But ye are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have

not the spirit of Christ he is none of his. 6: For to be carnally minded is death.

Rom. v. 21: That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord.

Rom. vi. 16: His servants ye are to whom ye obey, whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness. 23: For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. Of whom or how can the wicked be immortal?

Mark ix. 48: Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

Heb. xii. 29: For our God is a consuming fire. (He is not quenched, nor is he a non-consuming fire, so that the wicked might live.)

Isa. lxvi. 24: And they shall go forth, and look upon the carcasses (rotten dead bodies) of the men that have transgressed against me; for their worm shall not die (they die at blood life death). Neither shall their fire be quenched.

Deut. iv. 24: For the Lord thy God is a consuming fire.

Num. xvi. 21: That I may consume them in a moment. 45: That I may consume them as in a moment. It does not take God eternally to consume the incorrigibly wicked.

Job xix. 2: How long will ye vex my soul? 26: Though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet (before that occurs) in my flesh shall I see God.

Job xlii. 1: Then Job answered the Lord and said, 5: I have heard of thee by the hearing of the ear; but now mine eye seeth thee.

Job xxi. 7: Wherefore do the wicked live? 11: Their children dance. 18: They are as stubble before the wind, and as chaff that the storm carrieth away. Neither stubble or chaff hath any life whatever.

Isa. v. 24; Mal. iv. 1; Matt. iii. 12: Moloch worshiper's worm dieth not. *Gehenna*.

Isa. lxvi. 24: For their worm shall not die. It is a notorious fact that numerous parasites do crawl over our surface, burrow beneath our skin, nestle in our entrails, and riot and propagate their kind in every corner of our frame. Nearly a score of animals belonging to the interior of the human body have been already discovered and described, and scarcely a tissue or an organ but is occasionally profaned by their inroads. Each also has its favorite

domicile. One species of strongle chooses the heart for its dwelling-place, another inhabits the arteries, a third the kidneys. Myriads of minute worms lie coiled up in the voluntary muscles, or in the areolar tissues that connect the fleshy fibres.

The soul that sinneth it shall die,
Its worms still live, pagan creeds cry ;
The Lord God formed man of the dust,
In blood life pagan creeds still trust.

The day thou eatest thou shalt die.
Ye shall not die, serpents still cry.
Dust thou art, and to dust return ;
Thus worms in endless fires must burn.

It seems a strange, as it is a somewhat humiliating fact, that the human body should furnish food and habitation for many of the inferior creatures, not only after death, but while it is yet alive. The parasitic animals which thus prey upon man have been much studied from time to time, and especially of late, in their relations to natural history. The guinea worm and the chigoe bore through the skin, and reside in the subjacent reticular membrane. A little fluke, in general appearance much like a miniature flounder, lives, steeped in gall, in the biliary vessels. If you squeeze from the skin of your nose what is vulgarly called a maggot,—the contents, namely, of one of the hair follicles,—it is ten to one that you find in that small sebaceous cylinder several animalcules, extremely minute, yet exhibiting under the microscope a curious and complicated structure. Even the eye has its living inmates. But it is in the alimentary tube that we are most apt to be plagued with these vermin worms of various species. Independently of minute scientific divisions into genera and species, there are some broad lines of distinction between these creatures. Thus some kinds of worms occupy, as I have said, the interior of our bodies ; these are called, accordingly, entozoa ; some dwell externally, and are named ectozoa, more properly perhaps epizoa. There are five sorts of intestinal worms.

Exod. xvi. 20 : Some of the Jews left of the manna until the morning, and it bred worms, and stank. 19 : Moses said, Let no man leave of it till the morning. 23 : To-morrow is the rest of the holy sabbath unto the Lord ; lay up for you to keep until the morning. And it did not stink, neither was there any worm therein.

Job vii. 5 : My flesh is clothed with worms and clods of dust ; my skin is broken and become loathsome. 9 : As the cloud is consumed and vanisheth away, so he that goeth down to the grave shall come up no more. 21 : I shall not be (that is, the blood life body of nature, and the soul unspirit-born).

Job xvii. 14 : I have said to corruption, thou art my father ; to the worm, thou art my mother and my sister. 16 ; xlii. 1, 5.

Job xxi. 26 : They shall lie down alike in the dust, and the worms shall cover them.

Job xxiv. 19 : Drought and heat consume the snow-waters ; so doth the grave those which have sinned. 20 : The worm shall feed sweetly on him.

Job xxv. 6 : How much less man that is a worm, and the son of man which is a worm.

Ps. xxii. 6 : But I am a worm, and no man ; a reproach of men, and despised of the people. Jesus dieth not.

Isa. xli. 14 : Fear not, thou worm Jacob.

Isa. li. 8 : The worm shall eat them like wool.

Isa. lxvi. 24 : Their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched ; and they shall be an abhorring unto all flesh.

Isa. xl. 6 : All flesh is grass.

John xv. 1 : I (Christ) am the vine (spirit vine), and my Father is the (spirit love life immortal) husbandman. 4 : Abide in me, and I in you : as the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me. 5 : I am the vine, ye are the branches : he that abideth in me and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit ; for without me ye can do nothing. 6 : If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered ; and men gather dead branches and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

Though God doth principally and chiefly lead his spirit children by his spirit guidance, yet he sometimes conveys his spirit truth guidance love to them through his children, whom he inspires to speak or write. To apply physical tests in the spiritual order is as great folly as to test Newton's astronomy by steam power. Christ is the spirit love life immortal mediator (or medium) between the immortal love life spirit God, and Father of all immortal spirit life beings : and all spirit born of their soul mind spirit eggs unquickened to life, and dead as to spirit life immortal being, as the animate nature life eggs, in the females of each species, and as the male life quickening seed, is the quickening

word of God love seed impartation to the she soul (Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul shall make her boast in the Lord: the humble shall hear thereof and be glad). Spirit egg minds of believers, who open their will doors through faith belief of gospel truths of God, which worketh by love (Gal. v. 6), and then receive, by way of Christ, the Lord, the Holy Ghost, the spirit light love word of the immortal life love of God, the Father of spirits, that live immortal life beings. Heb. xiii. 9: And quickened into life. Eph. ii. 1: And you hath Christ quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins: without spirit love life's immortal quickening seed, sown by the Saviour. Matt. xiii. 37, 38: And spirit birth. John iii. 5: New creature in Christ. 2 Cor. v. 17: The soul and mind perish with the heart blood's probation life germ: or like the she fowl's eggs undeveloped, when her blood life dies.

Darwin's work on the Origin of Species says: "I had two distinct objects in view: first, to show that species had not been separately created; secondly, that natural selection had been the chief agent of change." I say, separate creations are fully proved by ocular demonstrations of the fact, by the distinct species now extant on the earth, and each species producing only their own species from animate nature germ eggs in the females of each species, which nature life develops as the base body parts, in accordance with the design of the Creator in the first pair of each species; which unquickened into life creatures by male seeds produces no species whatever, and when quickened into life by male seed produces only such like species. Like begets its like, is God's fixed law of the universe. Nine-tenths, or more, of all the females' eggs of each species produce no life whatever; emblem of the soul's mind spirit-eggs, which produce no spirit life, clean or unclean, unless quickened to life by a spirit being.

Eph. ii. 1: And you hath Christ quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins.

Gen. ii. 17: In the day that thou eatest of sin lust's forbidden fruit, thou shalt surely die. Thus Adam and Eve died a spiritual death when they partook of the forbidden fruit. Then follows their only promise of spirit life, through the mediation of the Saviour, who should bruise the serpent's head, in the minds of believers of God's revealed conditions of spirit birth from the soul's spirit egg minds: Gen. iii. 15.

Then follows the sentence of death on all Adam and Eve's descendants, or blood life seed (19).

Then their merciful prevention from immortal life being, in unregenerate, or satanic unclean spirit tare seed soul mind development (22-24). Darwin deems it a great discovery and proof of his theory, that the embryos of man, dog, seal, reptile, etc., can at first hardly be distinguished from each other. It only proves the admitted fact, that man by Adamic nature seed lusts in development is of the earth, and earthy. 1 Cor. xv. 48: As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the (spirit beings) heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly: spirit born of the she soul's spirit begotten of God, from the soul's mind egg of spirit life; dormant, until developed by faith which worketh by love (Gal. v. 6), and spirit begotten of God's spirit life immortal love seed, sown by Christ: Matt. xiii. 37, 38.

Spirit begotten (1 John v. 18) of God. Spirit born: John iii. 5: Or he cannot enter into the spirit life eternal being, in the spirit kingdom of God.

Darwin, instead of proving by ocular demonstration that man has had animal progenitors, takes it for granted, because the myth idea came into his mind, the same way the pagan myth priests of Egypt, some fifteen centuries before the Christian era, taught the doctrine of the resurrection of the mortal man's dead body, if it could be embalmed so as not to see corruption; thus the introduction of the Egyptian mummy creed doctrines of men began; more sensible than the fallible Pope of Rome, whose myth mind creed of resurrection of the ashes of the heretics his inquisition hell-fire torturers burned at the stake, for disbelieving their myth paganism men creeds false: and their pagan myth god they pictured as a devil full of endless anger that would aid their cause, by again resurrecting the heretic's dead body remains, and manufacturing them into fire salamanders, to torture and burn *ad infinitum*: they gave ocular demonstration that the human flesh and blood life body would not live in the fire: and if in like bodies resurrected from their dead rotten, or burned to ashes, body, and put into a lake of fire and brimstone, like results of course would follow, as their first burning; and they would soon be dead, and only a few ashes dust remains would be the result of the second burning; and for whose benefit, or for what purpose of justice, like Darwin, they proclaim in men tradition creed doctrines the bare irrational myth assertion, without one ocular proof, or sensible deduction: and the burning a flesh body eternally is an utter absurdity, and contradicts all ocular tests of bodies put in fires, or accidentally burned.

Does the rotting of the dead human body, and its passing back to its original nature gases and elements, change it from the vegetation and animate life bodies eaten by man, into a fire salamander quality; or is it only myth creed madness dreamed? The death penalty of body of all Adam's race of sin lust seed (Ps. li. 5) reap: and the death of souls of all that repent not of their sins; God's prophet Ezekiel (xviii. 4, 20, 24) declares (27) when the wicked man turneth away from his wickedness that he hath committed, and doeth that which is lawful and right, he shall save his soul alive. 28: He shall not die: the second, or soul death: First death is of the . . . blood life: and no soul minds have life of nature birth.

Some men creeds teach that their God's breath is in the souls of Adam's sin lust race by nature birth, and thereby the soul is immortal, and shall burn in hell fire and brimstone tortures eternally, if unsaved by grace: thus their pagan mummy god, myth of Darwinian order, is to eternally burn himself. Mythical imaginations, insane god of mythologous thousands, far better their altar to their truthful unknown God (Acts xvii. 23-28). If the selfish mortal, who is not content with the endless death, that has no life resurrector of the incorrigibly wicked: or the punishment of all criminals, the devil's children of his tare seed, unclean spirits that live with their unclean spirit devil their father, seeking rest and finding none (Matt. xii. 43), until infinite mercy of God destroys them with the world, on the last judgment day (Matt. xiii. 38, 42). If the false man creed worshiper finds himself condemned, it is all right. Glory to God, whose mercy endureth forever.

Ps. c. 5: For the Lord is good: his mercy is everlasting.

Ps. xxx. 5: For God's anger endureth but a moment: in his favor is life. But if his wicked neighbors are condemned to death, and he exalted to heaven, he would have them placed in a lake of fire and brimstone, and tortured eternally. What a love for thy neighbor!

Matt. xxii. 39: Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. All who cannot be contented with heaven (unless God raises soul mind egg beings to a life of endless torture; who never have had a spirit life being: like raising chickens from unquickened or rotten eggs) have no love spirit life goodness in themselves, that partakes of God's immortal life of love, pure and holy; that leaves in death's endless sleep, at time's close, all who partake not of Christ's love spirit and life resurrection: for Christ is the resurrection and life of believers only when spirit born children of God: not of dead

corruption bodies, nor of the incorrigibly wicked, they have no resurrector.

Isa. v. 24: Their root shall be as rottenness: and their blossom (of immortal life) shall go up as dust.

Roman Catholics took from Greek and Roman mythology, and pagan Egyptian mummy priests, their inquisition torture creed of purgatory fires endless. And Martin Luther learned the creed in childhood, and as a Roman Catholic monk and priest, cure of souls: John Calvin, also a Roman Catholic priest; Henry VIII., defender of Roman Catholic faith, pope of English Church; source of creeds of hell fire, of body resurrection, good and bad of most churches, is Roman Catholic creeds, now extant.

The day thou eatest thou shalt die,
God's law, which men creeds now decry.
The Lord God formed man of the dust,
Adam's sin race, begot of lust.

And unto dust shalt thou return,
Dust thou art men creeds also spurn,
Serpent said, ye shall not sure die,
Sinners live in hell fires, popes cry.

WHO ARE IN HELL, AND WHAT HELL IS DESCRIBED TO BE.

Deut. xxxii. 22: For a fire is kindled in mine anger, and shall burn unto the lowest hell, and shall consume the earth with her increase, and set on fire the foundations of the mountains. 24: They shall be devoured with burning heat, and with bitter destruction. 25: The sword without, and terror within, shall destroy both the young man and the virgin, the suckling also, with the man of gray hairs.

2 Sam. xxii. 6; Ps. xviii. 5: The sorrows of hell compassed me about: the snares of death prevented me.

Ps. ix. 17: The wicked shall be turned into hell (the grave). And all the nations that forget God.

Ps. xvi. 10: For thou (God) wilt not leave my soul in hell; neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One (Jesus) to see corruption. David's body saw corruption as all others do.

Ps. lv. 15: Let death seize upon them, and let them go down quick into hell, the grave.

Ps. cxvi. 3: The sorrows of death compassed me, and the pains

of hell got hold upon me. 4: Then called I upon the Lord. 8: Thou hast delivered my soul from death.

Ps. cxxxix. 8: If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there. If I make my bed in hell, behold (Jesus holy), thou art there.

Prov. v. 5: Her feet go down to death (lost to virtue), her steps take hold on hell.

Prov. vii. 27: Her house is the way to hell, going down to the chambers of death.

Prov. ix. 18: The dead are there; her guests are in the depths of hell.

Prov. xv. 11: Hell and destruction are before the Lord. How much more the hearts of the children of men. 24: The way of life is above to the wise, that he may depart from hell (earth) beneath.

Prov. xxiii. 14: Thou shalt beat him with a rod, and shalt deliver his soul from hell. (Prov. xxvii. 20.)

Isa. v. 14: Hell hath enlarged herself. 24: Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff, so their root shall be as rottenness.

Isa. xiv. 9: Hell from beneath is moved to meet thee; it stirreth up the dead for thee. 15.

Isa. xxviii. 15, 18: Your agreement with hell shall not stand; when the scourge, etc.

Isa. lvii. 9: And didst debase thyself even unto hell. (Job xi. 8; xxvi. 6.)

Ezek. xxxi. 16: I cast him down to hell with them that descend into the pit. 17: They also went down into hell with him, unto them that be slain with the sword.

Ezek. xxxii. 21: The strong shall speak to him out of the midst of hell with them that help him: slain by the sword. 22, 23 (hell; graves) (war, is fire and brimstone hells), 27: Which are gone down to hell with their weapons of war. (Amos ix. 2.)

Jonah ii. 2: Out of the belly of hell (fish), cried Jonah.

Hab. ii. 5: His desire is hell, and is as death.

Matt. iii. 12: Jesus Christ will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire. (Isa. v. 24.)

Luke iii. 17: Will gather the wheat (righteous) into his garner; but the chaff he will burn with fire unquenchable.

Heb. xii. 29: For our God is a consuming fire (unquenchable). (Deut. iv. 24; Mal. iv. 1.)

Egyptian mummy bodies burn,
 When time shall close their souls return;
 Earth's fire flood then will rebels end,
 Satan and hosts kingdom will rend.

Hell fire and brimstone earth consumes,
 All sinners then on earth fire dooms,
 Hell fire enough for all hell's hosts,
 It soon consumes, death ends hell's boasts.

WHO, IF ANY ONE, LIVES IN THE HELL FIRE ONE MOMENT.,

Num. xvi. 21 : That I may consume them in a moment.

Matt. v. 22 : Whosoever shall say thou fool shall be in danger of hell fire. (A nicknamer.) 29 : If thy right eye offend thee pluck it out, and cast it from thee ; for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. 30 : If thy right hand, ditto, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell, not alive.

Matt. x. 28 : Fear him which is able to destroy (annihilate) both soul and body in hell, the grave.

Matt. xi. 23 : And thou, Capernaum (a city) exalted, shalt be brought down to hell.

Matt. xxiii. 15 : Ye make proselytes two-fold more the child of hell than yourselves. 33 : Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell ?

Mark ix. 42 : Better drowned in the sea than to offend God's children. 43, 48 : Similar to Matthew.

Luke x. 15 : And thou, Capernaum, shalt be thrust down to hell. (xvi. 19-31.)

Acts ii. 31 : Spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption.

James iii. 6 : The tongue setteth on fire the course of nature, and is set on fire of hell.

2 Pet. ii. 4 : If God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment. 5 : And spared not the old world, but saved Noah, etc. 6 : Turning Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly.

Rev. i. 18 : I am he that liveth, and have the keys of hell and of death. (Not Peter, or the pope, but Jesus.)

Rev. vi. 8 : And his name was Death, and hell followed with

him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

Rev. xx. 13: And the sea gave up the dead in it, and death and hell (earth) delivered up the dead which were in them; and the dead (12) were judged. (Not raised to life, but) 14: And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. (Not to bring the dead to life.) This is the second death. 1st. Blood life body death: Gen. iii. 19. 2d. Soul death: Ezek. xviii. 4. 15: And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire. Earth's fire-flood: 2 Pet. iii. 10.

Rev. xxi. 8: Murderers and all liars have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

Ezek. xviii. 4: The soul that sinneth it shall die. No life for the wicked there.

There is no promise of life of any kind, nor in any place, to the wicked, but death, annihilation, chaos night endless: and of earth matter, or nature life light. John, the beloved apostle, records not the eye and hand parable of Matthew and Mark additional, If thy foot offend thee (not God, but the owner of the foot is offended, and if he does not cut off his foot, is endangered of losing his life in unquenchable fire, etc.). And St. Luke, Paul, nor Peter, nor James, nor any other apostle, tells of such eye, hand, and foot hell fire and brimstone. It is all parabolic to save the body from death: diseased foot to be severed.

ADAM SENTENCED TO DEATH, AND ALL HIS RACE.

Gen. ii. 17: In the day thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.

Gen. iii. 19 (first judgment day): For dust thou (Adam) art, and unto dust shalt thou return. 22: Lest he . . . take also of the tree of life, and eat and live forever. 24: So he drove out the man: God placed . . . a flaming sword . . . to keep the way of the tree of life.

Ezek. iii. 18: Nor speakest to warn the wicked from his wicked way, to save his life. He shall die in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at thy hand. 21: And the righteous man doth not sin, he shall surely live. Thou hast delivered thy soul.

Ps. xlix. 12: Man . . . abideth not: he is like the beasts that

perish. 14: Death shall feed on them. 20: (They shall never see light) Man that . . . understandeth not is like the beasts that perish.

Ps. lxxiii. 4: No bands in their death (the wicked). 17: Then understood I their end.

Prov. xiv. 32: The wicked is driven away in his wickedness: but the righteous hath hope in his death.

John viii. 51: If a man keep Christ's saying (commands) he shall never see death.

Rom. vi. 16: Whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are, whether of sin unto death, or obedience unto righteousness. 21: For the end of those things is death. 23: For the wages of sin is death.

Rom. viii. 6: For to be carnally minded is death. Spiritually minded is life.

1 Cor. xv. 56: The sting of death is sin (Heb. ii. 14).

2 Cor. ii. 16: To the wicked saints are the savour of death unto death; and to saints . . . of life unto life.

1 John iii. 14: God's children know that they have passed from death unto life, because they love the brethren. He that loveth not . . . abideth in death.

Rev. xx. 14: Death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death, soul death, no life is there.

Rev. xxi. 8: Lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death. Not life, or living there, as falsely taught.

Num. xvi. 21: That I may consume them in a moment. No wicked could live there beyond a moment.

Ps. lvi. 12: Thy vows are upon me, O God. 13: For thou hast delivered my soul from death.

Job xiv. 1: Man that is born of a woman is of few days and full of trouble. 2: He fleeth as a shadow, and continueth not.

Job xxxvi. 6: God preserveth not the life of the wicked.

Gen. vi. 17: Everything that is in the earth shall die. No life left in the grave.

2 Chron. xxv. 4: Every man shall die for his own sin.

Ps. civ. 29: God takes away their breath; they die, and return to their dust.

Eccles. iii. 19: Man hath no pre-eminence above a beast. 20: All turn to dust again.

Ecd. ix. 5: The living know that they shall die; but the dead know not anything.

Jer. xvi. 4: They shall be as dung upon the face of the earth.

Ezek. xviii. 4: The soul that sinneth, it shall die. 27: When the wicked man turneth away from his wickedness, and doeth that which is lawful and right, he shall save his soul alive.

In the Bible I find no life of any kind for unrepentants, in any place, beyond time's close.

PROMISE OF LIFE AND ON WHAT CONDITIONS, AND TO WHOM.

Lev. xvii. 11: The life of the flesh is in the blood; and I give it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your souls: for it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul.

Deut. xxx. 15: See, I have set before thee this day life and good, and death and evil. 19: I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing.

Deut. xxxii. 47: It is not a vain thing for you; because it is your life.

Job xxxvi. 6: God preserveth not the life of the wicked.

Ps. xxi. 4: David asked life of the Lord, and he gave it for ever and ever. 8: God . . . shall find out those that hate thee. 9: And the fire shall devour them.

Ps. xxx. 5: God's anger endureth but a moment; in his favor is life.

Ps. xxxvi. 9: With God is the fountain of life: in thy light shall we see light.

Ps. lxvi. 9: God holdeth our soul in life (when his light withdraws death ensues).

Ps. lxxviii. 50: God spared not their soul from death, but gave their life over to the pestilence.

Ps. cxxxiii. 3: Blessing even life for evermore.

Prov. xxi. 21: Righteousness and mercy findeth life. Not fire and brimstone preachers.

Jer. xxi. 8: I set before you the way of life, and the way of death.

Matt. xix. 17: If thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments, Jesus said.

John i. 4: In Christ was life; and the life was the light of men.

John iii. 36: He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life; and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

John v. 29: They that have done good to the resurrection of life; evil condemned to death. 40: Ye (wicked) will not come to me (Christ), that ye might have life.

John vi. 63: It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life (33, 35, 51, 53).

John viii. 12: I (Jesus) am the light of the world . . . the light of life.

John xi. 25: Jesus said, I am the resurrection and the life. 26: (Spirit born believers) never die.

John xx. 31: Believing ye might have life through Christ's name.

Acts ii. 28: Thou hast made known to me the ways of life.

Acts xvii. 25: God giveth to all life, and breath, and all things. 28: For in him we live, and move, and have our being.

Rom. viii. 6: For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. 10: And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the spirit is life, because of righteousness.

I can find no life in the Scriptures, beyond time's close, for the wicked in any place.

Christ spirit begotten blood saves
Souls from their sins, who death enslaves;
God love, through Christ, seeking souls gives
Everlasting life, whose love lives.

Everlasting life saints receives,
When blood life dies, who Christ believes;
Wicked at blood life death lose all,
No life can they ever recall.

PROMISE OF EVERLASTING LIFE, AND TO WHOM.

Dan. xii. 2: Many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth (Gen. ii. 7: And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground) shall awake (Eph. ii. 1: And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins) some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt. Jews are, and have been awake many centuries to shame and contempt (Isa. v. 24). Therefore . . . their root shall be as rottenness (Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15).

Matt. xix. 29: Every one that hath forsaken houses, or breth-

ren, or sisters, or father, or mother, etc., for my name's sake, shall inherit everlasting life.

Luke xviii. 30: In the world to come life everlasting. The same class.

John iii. 16: For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

John iv. 14: Whosoever drinketh of the water (Holy Spirit love life) that I shall give him . . . shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.

John v. 24: He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life! First resurrection.

John vi. 27: Labor not for the meat which perisheth; but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you. 40: Every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life; and I will raise him up at the last day (of blood life). 47: He that believeth on me hath everlasting life (48, 49, 50).

John xii. 50: I know that God's commandment is life everlasting: 49.

Acts xiii. 46: Seeing ye (Jews, the rich man's brethren) judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles (the poor man).

Rom. vi. 22: Being made free from sin, and become servants of God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

Gal. vi. 8: He that soweth to the spirit shall of the spirit reap life everlasting. He that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption.

1 Tim. i. 16. Jesus Christ might show forth . . . to them which should hereafter believe on him to everlasting life.

ENDLESS.

Heb. vii. 16: After the power of an endless life, not after the law of a carnal commandment.

Still no life beyond time's close for the incorrigibly wicked in any place.

PROMISE OF ETERNAL LIFE, AND TO WHOM.

Matt. xix. 16: Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?

Matt. xxv. 46: These shall go away into (it does not say they shall live there a moment) everlasting punishment (a punishment of endless death, never to return to life; like the murderer hung by the neck until dead, never returns to life, thus is death everlasting); but the righteous into eternal life.

Mark x. 30: (Righteous) shall receive in the world to come eternal life.

Luke x. 25: Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? (Keep God's commands.)

Luke xviii. 18: Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? (Keep God's commands.)

John iii. 15: That whosoever believeth in Christ should not perish, but have eternal life.

John iv. 36: He that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto eternal life.

John v. 39: Search the Scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life; and they are which testify of me. 40: And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life. (Where can they get it? man creed of life of endless fire torture.)

John vi. 54: Whoso eateth my flesh (50: spirit life, eternal bread from heaven), and drinketh my blood (spirit love of God, immortal spirit life drink of spirits, that overflows in love to God, and all others worthy of it, by endless expansion) hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. 68: To whom shall we go? Thou (Christ Jesus Lord) hast the words of eternal life.

John x. 28: I (Jesus) give unto them eternal life.

John xii. 25: He that loveth his (blood) life shall lose it (it soon dies), and he that hateth his life in this world (less than he does spiritual eternal life) shall keep it (spirit love spirit birth life) unto life eternal.

John xvii. 2, 3: As God has given his spirit word Son power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him (1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality, which he only can give. Heb. xii. 9: He is the Father of all spirits holy and immortal). And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent (God's messenger to fulfill his law).

Acts xiii. 48: And as many as were ordained to eternal life believed.

Rom. ii. 7: To them who seek for glory and immortality, eternal life.

Rom. v. 21: So might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by the Lord.

Rom. vi. 23: For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

1 Tim. vi. 12; Titus i. 2; iii. 7; 1 John i. 2; ii. 25; iii. 15; v. 11, 13, 20; Jude 21: All to the righteous.

But no life beyond time's close of any kind, or in any place, for the incorrigibly wicked.

God only hath immortality,
And his spirit-born children free;
Christ brought immortality to light,
And sows spirit seed love delight.

God's word, Depart! seals sinners' doom,
All out of Christ fire floods consume,
Christ is earth's only ark, safe, sure,
To all who to life's end endure.

AT TIME'S CLOSE, THE ANNIHILATION OF ALL INCORRIGIBLY
WICKED *vs.* IMMORTAL LIFE OF THE RIGHTEOUS.

2 Cor. iii. 17: Now the Lord is that spirit; and where the spirit of the Lord is there is liberty.

1 John iv. 16: God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. 20: If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar. Now I am by spirit birth regeneration a child of God.

1 John iii. 10; v. 18: We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and the wicked one toucheth him not. Scripture must be interpreted by Scripture.

1 Cor. ii. 12: Now we have received not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. 13: Which things also we speak, not in the words which men's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. 14: But the natural man receiveth not the things of the spirit of God; for they are foolishness unto him; neither can he know them because they are spiritually discerned. 15: But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man. 16: We have the mind of Christ. Rom. viii. 9.

Ps. li. 5: Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me.

John iv. 24: God is a Spirit; and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

John iii. 5: Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God (immortal spirit life).

1 Cor. xv. 50: Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

John iii. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

John vi. 63: The flesh profiteth nothing.

Gen. ii. 7: And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground. 16: And the Lord God commanded the man. 17: Of the tree of knowledge of good and evil (God and mammon, righteousness and sin), thou shalt not eat of it; for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.

Gen. iii. (4: And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die) 19: In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it thou wast taken; for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. 22: Lest Adam put forth his hand and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever. 23, 24: So God drove out the man, and placed a flaming sword to keep the way of the tree of life.

Gen. vi. 3: And the Lord said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh; yet his days shall be one hundred and twenty years. 7: And the Lord said, I will destroy (annihilate) man whom I have created.

Birds raise their heads and look above,
When they drink water sent by love,
Their little mind thus soars away,
To God, whose sun lights up their day.

Lightly come, and as lightly go,
Nature's loves effervescent flow,
Earth lives do quickly change their mind,
Which is as fickle as the wind.

SPIRIT BORN IMMORTAL LIFE OF GOD'S CHILDREN.

1 Tim. i. 17: Unto the king eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honor and glory forever and ever. Amen.

1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto.

2 Tim. i. 10 : But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death (put an end to his dominion over spirit born holy believers), and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel.

Rom. ii. 7 : To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honor and immortality, eternal life.

1 Cor. xv. 53 : This corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality (spirit-birth : John iii. 5 : incorruption), new creature in Christ : 2 Cor. v. 17 : immortality.

Rom. viii. 9 : Ye are not in the flesh (corruptible), but in the spirit, if so be the spirit of God (immortality) dwell in you. Now if any man have not the spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

1 Cor. xv. 54 : When this corruptible (flesh and blood : 50) shall have put on incorruption (Christ : John xv. 5), and this mortal (Adamie blood life nature) shall have put on immortality (the spirit of God : Rom. viii. 9 ; 1 John v. 18 : begot and born of God), then death is swallowed up in victory. 55 : O death, where is thy sting ? O grave, where is thy victory ? Such spirit-born sons of God sing ; but not the wicked dead who remain in the death grave.

CHILDREN OF GOD.

Matt. v. 9 : Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called the children of God.

Luke xx. 35 : They which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead. 36 : Neither can they die any more ; for they are equal unto the angels, and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

John xi. 25 : Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection and the life ; he that believeth in me, though he were dead (Eph. ii. 1 : And you hath Christ quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins), yet shall he live. 26 : And whosoever liveth (is quickened, Eph. ii. 1 ; spirit-born, John iii. 5 ; new creature in Christ, 2 Cor. v. 17 ; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15) and believeth in me shall never die, is then resurrected from spirit soul mind death when he believes, and is spirit-born of God's spirit love life immortal, from seed sown (Matt. xiii. 37, 38 ; John xi. 52). Gather together in one the children of God (in Christ, John xv. 5).

Rom. viii. 16 : The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God. 21 : Because the creature itself

also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

Rom. ix. 8: They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God; but the children of the promise are counted for the seed. 21: One vessel unto honor, and another unto dishonor. 22: Vessels of wrath (as Pharaoh) fitted to destruction. 26: Where it was said unto them (the Gentiles), Ye are not my people, there shall they (who are spirit-born of God in Christ) be called the children of the living God.

Gal. iii. 26: For ye are all the children of God, by faith in Christ Jesus.

1 John iii. 10: In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil. Whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

1 John v. 2: By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and keep his commandments.

SONS OF GOD.

Gen. vi. 2: Sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair. Job i. 6: Sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord.

Job xxxviii. 7: And all the sons of God shouted for joy.

Hos. i. 10: Ye are the sons of the living God.

John i. 12: But as many as received Christ, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name.

Rom. viii. 14: For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. 19: The creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.

Phil. ii. 15: Blameless and harmless, the sons of God, . . . as lights in the world.

1 John iii. 1: Behold what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God. 2: Beloved, now are we the sons of God.

BORN AGAIN.

John iii. 3: Jesus said . . . Except a man be born again he cannot see the kingdom of God. 5: Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

7: Ye must be born again. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh (Isa. xl. 6, 7: All flesh is grass). And that which is born of the Spirit (iv. 24: God is a Spirit) is spirit.

1 Pet. i. 23: Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth forever. 24: For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass.

Job xi. 12: Vain man would be wise, though man be born like the wild ass's colt.

Isa. ix. 6: Unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given, the Prince of Peace.

1 Pet. i. 23: Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible (spirit soul seed), by the word of God.

BORN OF GOD.

John i. 12: But as many as received Christ, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name. 13: Which were born not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

1 John iii. 9. Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. 6: Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him neither known him. 8: He that committeth sin is of the devil.

1 John iv. 7: Love is of God; and every one that loveth (God and their neighbor, not self) is born of God, and knoweth God. 8: He that loveth not, knoweth not God; for God is love. 16: God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God dwelleth in him (Rom. viii. 9).

1 John v. 1: Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God. 4: Whosoever is born of God overcometh the world. 18: We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

1 John i. 7: The blood of Jesus Christ his son cleanseth us (spirit born holy) from all sin.

CHILDREN OF LIGHT.

Luke xvi. 8: The children of light.

John xii. 36: While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light.

Eph. v. 8: For ye were sometime darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord. Walk as children of light.

1 Thess. v. 5: Ye (spirit born holy) are all children of light, and the children of the day. We are not of the night, nor of darkness.

CHILDREN OF THE DEVIL.

Matt. xiii. 38: The tares are the children of the wicked one. 39: The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. 40: As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of this world.

John viii. 44: Ye are of your father the devil.

Acts xiii. 10: Thou child of the devil.

1 John iii. 8: He that committeth sin is of the devil. 10: The child of the devil doeth not righteousness.

Eph. ii. 2: Children of disobedience. 3: Children of wrath.

Eph. v. 6: Let no man deceive you with vain words; for because of these things cometh the displeasure of God upon the children of disobedience.

Rom. v. 12: By Adam's sin, death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned (in Adam, Ps. li. 5). 17: By one man's offense, death reigned by one. Much more they which receive grace (spirit soul mind spirit birth life immortal) shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.

MAN AND CHILDREN OF MEN.

Gen. ii. 7: And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground. 15: And the Lord God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden. 16: And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, 17: Of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die. 24: Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife, and they shall be one flesh.

Gen. iii. 4: And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die. 12: And the man said, The woman gave me of the tree, and I did eat. 17: Unto Adam God said, Cursed is the

ground for thy sake ; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it, all the days of thy life. (Unless Adam the man, and his wife Eve, have some other than the life they then had, they must be endlessly void of any life whatever, when they die nature death of blood life.) 19 : In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread till thou return unto the ground ; for out of it wast thou taken : for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. No reserve of any kind whatever. 22 : Lest man take of the tree of life and eat and live forever. 24 : So God drove out the man ; and he placed a flaming sword to keep the way of the tree of life.

John iii. 3 : Except a man be born again he cannot see the kingdom of God.

Matt. xvi. 24 : Jesus said, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross and follow me. 25 : For whosoever will save his (blood) life (beyond the grave) shall lose it ; and whosoever will lose (sacrifice it for spirit life love) his (blood) life for my sake (in defending gospel grace spirit birth truth) shall find it. Spirit life immortal, spirit soul mind belief birth new creature life.

1 Cor. xv. 45 : The first man Adam was made a living soul (Ezek. xviii. 4 : The soul that sinneth it shall die). The last Adam (Jesus) was made a quickening spirit (Eph. ii. 1). 46 : That was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural ; and afterward that which is spiritual. 47 : The first man is of the earth, earthy ; the second man is the Lord from heaven. 48 : As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy ; and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. 49 : As we have borne the image of the earthy, we (saints spirit born holy, new creatures in Christ) shall also bear the image of (Christ) the heavenly. 50 : Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God ; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

PARABLES.

Matt. xiii. 34 : All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables, and without a parable spake he not unto them.

The parable of the eye and hand of Matthew, and foot additional of Mark, which Luke nor John nor any other apostle refers to, and the parable of the rich man Luke only gives ; no others make the least mention of it, and they differ wholly from all the Scriptures, Old and New. May they not be interpolations, as the

pagan mythologists, and inquisition Roman Catholics prevented the general use of the Bible for twelve hundred and sixty years successfully, and no sane mind would say that the man should be tortured in hell fire and brimstone eternally, because his own eye, hand or foot gave offense to himself; not to God or his neighbor.

Matt. v. 29: If thy right eye offend thee (thyself), pluck it out and cast it from thee; which if any mortal should attempt to do he would be put in a strait jacket and sent to a lunatic asylum, as hopelessly insane. 30: If thy right hand offend thee (nobody else concerned but thyself), cut it off and cast it from thee. Who would be benefited? no one; and you would be disabled, a cripple for life.

Mark ix. 43: If thy hand offend thee, cut it off. 45: And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off. 47: If thine eye offend thee, pluck it out. The meaning is, if a man looketh on a woman to lust after her, or uses his foot or hand to perpetrate a criminal act against the woman, and thereby lose immortal life among the holy in heaven, it would have been better for him to have suffered from the loss of sight, etc., than lose his immortal life in heaven.

Luke xvi. 19: There was a certain rich man which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day.

Gen. xiii. 2: And Abram was very rich in cattle, in silver, and in gold. Gen. xii. 7: And the Lord appeared unto Abram, and said, Unto thy seed (the Jews) will I give this land (Canaan).

Gen. xvii. 1-26: I will give thee and thy seed after thee (the Jews) the land of Canaan. I will establish my covenant between me and thee, and thy seed after thee (the Jews), in their generations, for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed (the Jews) after thee. Thus a rich man in grace, inexhaustible riches.

Luke xvi. 20: And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate full of sores. (Scripture riches covenant destitution; synagogue gate. Jesus as Lazarus.) Ps. xxii. 1: My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? 6: But I am a worm (that dieth not), and no man; a reproach of men, and despised of the people. 16: For dogs have compassed me; the assembly of the wicked have enclosed me; they pierced my hands and my feet. 18: They part my garments among them, and cast lots upon my vesture. 29: All that go down to the dust shall bow before him, and none can keep alive his own soul.

Isa. i. 6: From the sole of the foot even unto the head there is no soundness in it; but wounds, and bruises, and putrefying sores; they have not been closed, neither bound up, neither mollified with ointment. This was the state of the Gentiles when Jesus came, as the woman's seed representative of the Gentiles in Ruth, and Boaz in Jew, who begat Obed, and Obed begat Jesse, and Jesse begat David.

Gen. iii. 15; Heb. ii. 14: Jesus spirit begotten.

Luke xvi. 21: And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table; moreover dogs came and licked his sores.

Matt. xv. 25: Then came she and worshiped him, saying, Lord, help me. 26: But he answered and said, It is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast it to dogs. 27: And she said, Truth, Lord; yet the dogs (Gentiles, Lazarus) eat of the crumbs which fall from their master's table.

Luke xvi. 22: And it came to pass that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom (Gentiles through the Abrahamic covenant of faith in Christ, compared to Abraham's bosom). (Gen. xviii. 18: All the nations of the earth shall be blessed in Abraham.) The rich man also died and was buried. (The poor man was not buried, covered from grace, but placed in Abraham's love covenant of faith promises; while the Jews, the rich man, who excluded the Gentiles from their table of temple worship, and kept the Gentiles at the outer gate, and the Gentile nations had but crumbs that fell from the Jews outside of the temple of God's laws). 23: And in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. 24: And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me (thus the Jews, rich man, were making a god of Abraham, as the Roman Catholics do of the Virgin Mary), and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. (As a literal transaction it would be a singular thing that the rich man dead and buried in the ground, while void of blood life, and the body mouldering back to dust, should be tormented in flame, when the tongue was dead; and how could it speak if it was dead and buried? Any such literal deduction is ocular proof of an insane fanatical mind. It is purely parabolic deductions of the rejection of Christ by the Jews; and their wretched state as a nation for centuries, murdered, taxed, plundered, scourged, driven out of nations, etc.

Acts xiii. 46: It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles. 47: For so hath the Lord commanded us, saying, I have set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for salvation unto the ends of the earth.

Luke xvi. 25: But Abraham said, Son (acknowledging the rich man to be his descendant, a Jew), remember thou in thy lifetime (showing the rich men dead as to faith life immortal covenant, by way, Abrahamic conditional with compliance promise; which the rich man Jews broke when they rejected Christ, who only could possibly fulfil the covenant promises and prophecies) receivedst thy good things (during their obedience to their covenant vows), and likewise Lazarus (the Gentiles, wholly left to idolatry, mythology, philosophy, and pagan priestcraft, and Egyptian mummy resurrections of rotten bodies; no embalmed mortal bodies, a seeming improvement) evil things: but now (under the freedom gospel dispensation conditional promises to all Adam's race, the poor man Lazarus) he is comforted, and thou (rich man Jew, while you cleave to the broken Abrahamic covenant, dead, and obsolete; and reject Christ Jesus as your Messiah) art tormented.

26: And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed (circumcision gulf separates Jews and Gentiles: their rejection of Christ is an impassable gulf, their broken covenant is a dead gulf: Gal. v. 6: For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh by love. vi. 7, 8, 15): so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence (John iii. 5: Spirit birth, or he cannot enter the kingdom of God: an impassable gulf to all who reject Christ).

27: Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house. 28: For I have five brethren (Scribes, Pharisees, Sadducees, Publicans, and Essenes); that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. 29: And Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets (who had Moses and the prophets at that time? no people on the earth but the Jews); let them hear them. 30: And he said, Nay, father Abraham; but if one went unto them from the dead (here Christ clearly refers to himself. Luke xxiv. 47: Beginning at Jerusalem), they will repent. 31: And he (Abraham) said unto him (the rich man Jew), If they hear

not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rose from the dead. Which was clearly proved true by Christ's resurrection, and testimony to the Jews, which they disregarded, and still the Jews reject Christ, as a sect or people; and are still groping blindly through the Scriptures, Moses, and the prophets, who plainly often spoke of Christ Jesus as their only hope of salvation. Isa. viii. 16: Bind up the testimony, seal the law among my disciples. 17: And I will wait upon the Lord, that hideth his face from the house of Jacob, and I will look for him. 20: To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them. 22: And they shall be driven into darkness. Isa. ix. 2: The people (Gentiles) that walked in darkness have seen a great light. . . . upon them hath the light shined. 6: For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given; and the government shall be upon his shoulder. And his name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, the Mighty God, the Everlasting Father, the Prince of Peace.

Preachers who claim to belong to the spirit love army of the Prince of Peace, and volunteer to take part in the devil's fire and brimstone hell wars of earth, where poor men and boys are forced by laws made by the devils lawyers, to go and shoot down with cannon balls, bomb-shell missiles, and ruthless demon bullets of iron and lead, and mangle the blood life bodies of their fellow mortals and shed each other's life blood, as demon butchers and murderers, for the upholding of their demoniac thieving lying party, who make (Isa. xxviii. 15) lies their refuge, and hatred to their opposing party a virtue; all such war advocating and war murdering participant preachers are the devil's children: for (Matt. xii. 33) the tree is known by his fruit. The Lord God's law.

Exod. xx. 13: Thou shalt not kill.

Matt. v. 7: Blessed are the merciful, for they shall obtain mercy. 9: Blessed are the peacemakers (not war butchers of their fellow-men, murderers, and assassins, and duelists, but peacemakers, who preach not war, but peace), for they (peacemakers) shall be called the children of God. 21: Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment.

Matt. vi. 15: If ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

Matt. vii. 3: Why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own

eye? 20: By their fruits ye shall know them. 21: Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. 22: Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied (preached) in thy name, cast out devils, and in thy name done many wonderful works? 23: And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you (never imparted to them love's quickening to spirit life immortal love milt seed, of spirit soul mind birth of God's love): depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

Lev. xix. 18: Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself: I am the Lord. (Do you desire, if you are placed on the left hand of the judge of all the earth, in the last judgment day, to be condemned to an endless existence of life tortures in a lake of fire and brimstone? I asked a teacher of endless tortures of the wicked yesterday. He said emphatically, No. I quoted Matt. xix. 19: Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself; he was as dumb. xxii. 39: Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. Mark xii. 31: Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these.)

Matt. v. 44: I (the Lord God) say unto you, Love your enemies (not murder them on the field of hell fire and brimstone battle), bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you (not kill, or mangle their blood life bodies with murderous bullets or other hell war weapons), pray for them which despitefully use you and persecute you; that you may be children of your Father which is in heaven.

James iii. 17: The wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be entreated; full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy. 18: And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace.

James iv. 1: From whence come wars and fightings among you? Come they not hence, even of your lusts that war in your members? 2: Ye lust, and have not: ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: ye fight and war, yet ye have not, because ye ask not (in the Lord's appointed way). 4: Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? Whosoever therefore will be the friend of the world is the enemy of God.

Mal. iii. 16: Then they that feared the Lord spake often one

to another (like the union Christian meetings, not one talk to all the others, but each of God's children speak as his witness to his Scripture truths, experimentally known by actual spirit birth of God's love life immortal, partaking through Christ of his spirit, without which no mortal is immortal), and the Lord hearkened, and heard it (not preaching one to all, but one to another), and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the Lord (to sin against his law commands), and that thought upon his name (loved the Lord).

Matt. xxii. 37: Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. 39: Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. 40: On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

Matt. xiii. 37-40: He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man. The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one; the enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world, and the reapers are the angels. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of the world.

John iii. 5: Except a man be born of water and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the spirit is spirit.

John iv. 24: God is a Spirit.

1 John v. 18: We (spirit born) know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and the wicked one toucheth him not.

1 John iv. 16: God is love, and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.

1 John iii. 8: He that committeth sin is of the devil. 9: Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin, for his seed remaineth in him. (Christ's spirit, love: Rom. viii. 9): And he cannot sin, because he is born of God. 10: In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

The description of sunlight, or curious colors, to a blind man, who though of the largest capacity (ten talents), he cannot so well understand it by the most acute and lively description, as a child can by seeing them; so neither can the natural man, of the largest capacity, by the best words, even Scripture words, so well under-

stand the spiritual mysteries of God's kingdom, as the least and weakest spirit born child of God, who tasted them, by having them revealed in the soul mind inwardly by the spirit birth immortal spirit life light impartation of love of God seed, sown by the Saviour. How dost thou know that thou art thus actuated? which will appear to the spirit born no less absurd than to ask one whose eyes are open, how he knows the sun shines on a clear day at noon. It is the privilege of Christ's sheep indeed that they hear his voice, and refuse that of a stranger to spirit birth light love; which privilege if taken away for our trial of faith, or for sin cause, we are left a prey to all manner of wolves.

The Scriptures God has preserved, to give us truth's spirit guide, and to witness against all who pretend to believe, and yet deny its truths, and plainly stated statute laws of God. All spirit born partake of the spirit fountain of immortal life, from whence floweth the river of life, and by that spirit love know the Scripture writers partook of the same fountain of immortal spirit life love. That which is not the rule of my faith in believing the Scriptures themselves is not the primary adequate rule of faith and manners; but the Scriptures are not, nor can they be, the rule of the faith by which I believe them; if I have been taught from childhood to believe them, by a men creed sectarian priest, who disregarded God's statute Scripture laws, and falsified the meaning of the Scripture parables; if by spirit birth new creature life we can only come to the true knowledge of God; if by the Spirit we are to be led into all truth, and so be taught of all things,—then the Spirit of the Lord is the only infallible guide to enable us to discern the truths of the Scriptures. The Spirit and the Scriptures agree as one. The letter of the Scriptures is outward witness of the truth. The spirit birth love light life is a living witness of the experimental spirit birth, new creature development of God's spirit love word, spirit birth power; Scriptures teach how to obtain spirit life immortal birth, and are a declaration of good things, but not the things themselves that are experimentally known to believers.

Ps. lxxviii. 1: Give ear, my people, to my law; incline your ears to the words of my mouth. 2: I will open my mouth in a parable. He clave the rocks in the wilderness, and gave them (the Jews) drink as out of the great depths. 17: And they sinned yet more against him by provoking the Most High in the wilderness. 19: Yea, they spake against God; they said, Can God furnish a

table in the wilderness? 38, 39: Yea, many a time turned he his anger away, and did not stir up all his wrath, for he remembered that they were but flesh; a wind that passeth away, and cometh not again. 50: He made a way for his anger; he spared not their soul from death.

Ezek. xviii. 4: The soul that sinneth, it shall die. 20: The soul that sinneth, it shall die. 26: When a righteous man turneth away from his righteousness and committeth iniquity, and dieth in them, for his iniquity that he hath done shall he die. 27: Again when the wicked man turneth away from his wickedness that he hath committed, and doeth that which is lawful and right, he shall save his soul alive. 31: Cast away all your transgressions, and make you a new heart, and a new spirit; for why will ye die. 32: For I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth, saith the Lord God; wherefore turn yourselves and live ye.

Ps. li. 10: Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me.

John viii. 51: Verily, verily, I (Jesus) say unto you, if a man keep my saying (obey God's Scripture commands), he shall never see death (spiritual soul mind birth new creature in Christ can never die. If they remain in Christ at blood life body death, they are taken by Christ's angels, their ministering spirits, to heaven life endless).

John v. 24: He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation, but is passed from death unto life. 25: Verily, verily, I say unto you, the hour is coming and now is, when the dead (in trespasses and sins: Eph. ii. 1, And you (spirit born, John iii. 5) hath Christ quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins) shall hear the voice of the Son of God; and they that hear shall live. 29: They that have done good unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil unto the resurrection of condemnation.

Rom. vi. 23: For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

RESURRECTION.

Matt. xxii. 29: Jesus . . . said unto the Sadducees, Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures (the same men creed blindness still prevails), nor the power of God. 30: In the resurrection they

. . . are as the angels of God in heaven. 32: I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob! God is not the God of the dead, but of the living. Being not a God of the dead, and being the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, they must then have been alive.

Mark xii. 25: When they shall rise from the dead they . . . are as the angels which are in heaven. (Saints will probably fill the places once occupied by Satan and other fallen angels previous to their fall; which may account for their envy and hatred of Adam's race. And if spirit born are as God's angels, they must be resurrected from spiritual trespass and sin death, and as God's children live holy lives, and daily do good; and no sin evil deed, in act, or thought. (Lord, please help us to evermore love thy Father, who first loved us, and thee, and the Holy Spirit with all our souls, minds, hearts, and strength, and our neighbor as ourselves, and all that love thee, especially those lovely guardian angels, who always behold our Father's face!) 26: I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob! 27: He is not a God of the dead, but a God of the living (such as are spirit born holy children of God).

Luke xx. 35, 36: They which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that (the spirit life immortal love) world, and the resurrection from (not of) the dead, neither marry nor are given in marriage. Neither can they die any more; for they are equal unto the angels (Ps. civ. 4: God maketh his angels spirits); and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection. 37: Now that the dead are raised (already dead, have been spirit born to soul mind life immortal, and resurrected at their blood life probation death to heavenly angelic spirit life immortal). 38: For he is not the God of the dead, but of the living (such as Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob); for all (living) live unto him (by way of his life light rays).

Acts xvii. 28: For in him we live, and move, and have our being (probation blood life ended, all die out of Christ's spirit love life rays of God).

John v. 24: Verily, verily, I (Jesus) say unto you, he that receiveth my word, and believeth on him (his Father, Almighty Jehovah God, the Supreme Sovereign of the Universe, Father of all spirit life love immortal, Heb. xii. 9) that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.

John v. 25 : Verily, verily, I (Jesus) say unto you, the hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God ; and they that hear shall live (no others live immortal life). 40 : Ye (incorrigibly wicked) will not come to me (Jesus), that ye might have life.

John vi. 63 : It is the spirit that quickeneth ; the flesh profiteth nothing : the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life. 57 : He that eateth me (Christ's words believe), even he shall live by me. 58 : This is that (spirit love life immortal of God) bread which came down from heaven : not as your (Jewish) fathers did eat manna (blood life body food) and are dead : he that eateth of this (soul mind spirit love life immortal spirit) bread (love) shall live forever. 68 : Thou (Christ Jesus) hast the words (of God's grace conditional pardon, and) of eternal life.

John viii. 51 : Verily, verily, I (Jesus) say unto you, if a man keep my saying, he shall never see death (the body dies).

John x. 13 : The hireling fleeth, because he is a hireling, and careth not for the sheep. 27 : My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me (Scripture truths, not men tradition false creeds of men's manufacture, for self glory, from ignorant and simple mortals) ; and I give unto them (who obey and follow Christ Jesus) eternal life.

John xi. 25 : Jesus said, I am the resurrection and the life (immortal spirit life) : he that believeth in me, though he were (spiritually) dead, yet shall he live. 26 : And whosoever liveth (is spirit born, John iii. 5 ; 1 John v. 18) and believeth in me shall never die (then such are surely resurrected from soul second death).

Rom. vi. 5, 13 : Yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead. 23 : The wages of sin is death ; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. Rom. viii. 8 : So then they that are in the flesh (carnal soul mind of blood life's Adamic fallen nature of rebel sin lust birth. Ps. li. 5 : Behold I was shapen in iniquity ; and in sin did my (David's) mother conceive me) cannot please God. 6 : For to be carnally minded is death. 9 : But ye (spirit born children of God) are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be the spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the spirit of Christ, he is none of his. 10 : And if Christ be in you, the body is dead (under the sentence of death still. Gen. iii. 19 : Dust thou art, and unto

dust shalt thou return), because of sin; but the spirit (spirit born new creature in Christ, 2 Cor. v. 17; John iii. 5) is life because of righteousness.

1 John iii. 10: In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil. Whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

1 Cor. xv. 23: Christ the first fruits; afterwards they that are Christ's at his coming, those having Christ's spirit: Rom. viii. 9, At blood life probation . . . death. That Christ Jesus our Lord and Master, teacher of divine heavenly life, by veiling a portion of the Lord God's spirit word love power, in the woman's nature blood life egg germ of all animate earth life, and the sufferance of his blood life of Jesus' mortal body to be rejected by the Jews, and crucified by order of a governor of Rome, by Roman soldiers, did not put up a reward of goodness to pay the bill of rebel sinners, all that doctrine is untenable with truth reason. It is absurd men creed's false doctrine. To punish a good man for the wicked sinful acts of a bad man, is not satisfaction to equitable justice truth: the judge who would inflict death or any other punishment on the innocent pure righteous sanctified holy man, is a murderer himself, and all the aiders and accessory abettors are party participant murderers, although compelled by law to obey the judge murderer of the innocent; and neither they nor any other mortal on earth could thereafter possibly receive by the death of the innocent blood life body of Jesus any remission, permission, or atonement for any wilful intentional sin, or unjust wicked act. The blood life spirit begotten of Jesus made an atonement possible for the soul mind spiritually dead, as a female nature egg, without male quickening seed; and Jesus' spirit seed of spirit love life immortal spirit of God, the Father of spirits, then, as previously, and as now, by faith, believing in and relying upon God's promise.

Gen. iii. 15; Heb. ii. 14; Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5; iv. 24; viii. 63; xi. 25, 26; Rom. viii. 9; 2 Cor. v. 17; 1 John iv. 16; v. 18; Matt. xxi. 22: All things (in accord with God's will, as revealed in the Scriptures) whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing (faith), ye shall receive.

Lev. xvii. 11: For the life of the flesh is the blood: for it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul. Not blood life body; there is no atonement for the blood life body; all such creeds of men are pagan mummy myths, utterly without truth.

A blow on a man's head often leaves him unconscious of blood life or soul life being; the brain, nerves, and muscles, are the conductors of heart blood life pulsation electricity, and the soul mind will connects with and uses the blood life's electric currents to move at will the body, to walk, lift, speak, sing, to live, move, and have a being, from God's life spirit rays of nature life.

Thomas Paine calls the belief in God deism. The Jews believe in but one God; they are not deists. All real Christians believe in one God, self-existent spirit, Father of all immortal spirit life.

1 Tim. vi. 16: Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see.

Heb. xii. 9: Shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits and live?

2 Tim. i. 10: Now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel. He put an end to spirit soul mind death, of spirit soul mind born of God, spirit children of God: as God's spirit messenger of immortal spirit life, and to fulfill his law by his messenger, Moses, and his truth prophets of the Scriptures. The Lord God whom Adam and Eve, and Moses, Aaron, Abraham, Gideon, Job, etc., saw in a body of human form, put on as a garment, or rather used as a communicating medium, for the express purpose of communicating by such spirit condescension love to mortals, the same as he by his word (Gen. iii. 15) of woman's seed egg in the Virgin Mary formed the body of Jesus, that by such alliance to Adam's race he could open thereby a spirit love door to God's immortal life spirit heaven: whom all spirit born children of God knows to be truth, by soul mind spirit love birth of Christ's spirit life immortal love of God seed; which the Lord God brought to earth. Mysterious to poor worm man are all the ways of heaven's spirit love God of wisdom, and power, and attributes infinite and endless in life and power to create a world from naught, but greater condescension love infinite, to redeem from death sentence in Eden any of Adam's race, by spirit soul mind birth: Thomas Paine, and other deists, and millions of Adam's rebel race, without spirit birth knowledge, disbelieve what they could not possibly comprehend without experimental spirit birth.

1 Cor. ii. 14: The natural man receiveth not the things of the spirit of God (who all are the products of mortals sin lust, Ps. li. 5).

Isa. xl. 15 : Behold the nations are as a drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance. 17 : All nations before God are as nothing, and they are counted to him less than nothing, and vanity. Pagan priestcraft tradesmen dealt in wooden myth gods, before the Egyptian mummy blood life's body resurrection age ; the rotten body returned to nature elements, made of nature products, to resurrect, was too much of a humbug for pagan priests to attempt to palm off as truth on poor benighted mortals, and they invented a process of embalming to prevent the mortal's dead body from rotting back to nature's elements, from whence it was formed by nature products : they left out the brains, and most of the blood, etc. Between three and four thousand years the poor mummy bodies have waited the return of the good Egyptians' souls, but as no soul has returned to claim their mummy body, they, according to their priest's body resurrection creeds, priests, kings, judges, and all, have been the children of the devil, and still wading down the grades of animate life deaths, or roasting in the torture fire and brimstone lake.

Preachers who preach that Jesus died that they might sin if in the church, and that Christ pays their passage to heaven gratis, if they pay the preacher a good salary for such evil knowledge, and read prayers ; they indulge in all the world's recreations and become careless of morals, as a spendthrift would be of money, when told that his father agreed to pay all his bills. It is a doctrine dangerous to morals in this world, and excludes its votaries from the society of the holy in heaven. The wages of sin is death.

1 John iii. 8 : He that committeth sin is of the devil. 10 : In this the children of God are manifest, and children of the devil : whosoever doth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

Deism boasts of God, of whom without the Scriptures they discard ; they have no revealed knowledge whatever, save speechless nature footprints. There is a society of Masons in Dublin, Ireland (whose first settlers, save the northern part, county of Antrim, Belfast, etc., settled by Celts of Scotland and Wales, were Phœnicians and Druid sun-worshippers), who take the name of Druids, sun-worshippers. In the year 1000, in the city of York, in England, Masonry first began, by an organization of practical mechanic masons, who worked with a trowel, etc. At first there were but three degrees : apprentice ; fellow-craft, entitled to wages

as a workman out of his apprentice education ; and master mason. In 1717, in London (and 1733 in New York city and Philadelphia, United States of America ; in 1736 in Scotland), Druidism secrets and ancient sun-worship, speculative Masonry was organized ; and from plain laborers at first, master, teacher, dress parade, titled drones, now rule, as Grand Treasurers, Knights of Malta, Captain-Generals, Generalissimos, Most Excellent Scribes, Most Excellent High Priests, Most Excellent Kings, Commanders, etc., etc.

Odd fellowship is of a recent date ; began at Baltimore, Maryland, U. S. A. ; an imitation of Masonry, with insurance, etc. The morals taught by both societies, if lived up to, make good citizens ; but, like the churches, wolves get in and devour the humble worthy laborer's substance. The same fuss and feathers, vain weak minded foolish soap bubble titles of clown buffoonery, claims to rule the spirit church work of Christ, who forbade all titles, and selected poor, illiterate, honest working fishermen for master workmen. Now, doctors of divinity, I do not, nor did I ever worship a divinity that was sick, or needed doctors. And if he did, I think heaven could furnish infinitely better.

Right reverend fathers in God. Matt. xxiii. 8 : Be not ye called rabbi ; for one is your master, even Christ ; and all ye are brethren. 9 : And call no man your father upon the earth ; for one is your Father which is in heaven. Popes assume titles Christ forbids, being anti-Christ ; and cardinals, bishops, etc., are all speculative titled officials, differing as much from Christ Jesus working Christian disciples, as speculative Masonry differs from the working day laborers, or builders, who first united in the three-degree lodge in the city of York, England, or as different as dress parade soldiers from warriors at work on hell fire battle fields ; or as drones in the manufacture of honey. God uses means in all his communications with mortals inhabiting dust bodies of nature's perishable materials, that requires daily nature food to repair worn out parts of the human blood life body, and for its expansion growth to mature manhood, or woman stature ; all of which is but decaying short lived nature products. If God should use his spirit power, and force mortals against their will to do his will, they would be as mere machines, and void of freedom enjoyment ; or as an instrument of music, which enjoys naught of the sweet music made by the good musician who uses the instrument. Infidels and sceptics malign and deny the Scrip-

ture truths, which they in their unspirit-born unregenerate nature worm state cannot comprehend more than the mud grub-worm, the flying dragon-fly, existence in the air, which atmosphere killed his water-grub life.

1 Cor. ii. 14: But the natural man receiveth not the things of the spirit of God; for they are foolishness unto him; neither can he (unspirit-born) know them, because they are spiritually discerned. In inertia earthly matter, below sunlight power rays influence, no seed germinates, no life inhabits it; the general law of inanimate nature life; earth's depths are void of life. That man's reason would never discover the oak in the acorn, or the rose in the rose-bush by analyzation, with all the researches or appliances of science. Nor animate life in the female egg or male seed; separate, they contain no life whatever; united they produce their species, if governed in accord with healthful nature's life laws, whether of mortals of Adamic commencement, or first seeds in any other animate life on earth; beasts, birds, reptiles, fishes, insects, worms, or microscope life, in waters, on earth, or in the air.

All animate life germinates in the female eggs, and is quickened into life by male seeds. The pollen seeds on the cornstalk, if white corn seed falls on the silk on the cob of the yellow corn, it will produce white corn, and *vice versa*. Evolutions from the egg. Have we then no true evolution in animate nature? Can we refer nothing to ancestry? Not so. By careful study we have seen enough to satisfy us that all animate life on earth, pertaining to nature life animate, produce eggs in their every variety of species, in the females; and the quickening life-germ is in the males; which eggs, thus quickened and aided by nature's appointed ways of development, produce through a vast series of successive transformations and modifications into beings identical with the parents. We can with microscope and a transparent white fish-egg, quickened by the male, in transparent, clear fresh water, follow their evolution step by step, and trace the process of self-formation through all its stages in about seventy days, its transform from inanimate egg matter, to the production of an organism as complicated as the human form, which is similarly developed in about four times the length of time.

There is then evolution in nature; there is an unfolding of structural elements, with higher and higher complications, out of the inanimate matter of an egg, when quickened into life. One of the important results of investigations shows us that the idea

of encasement of germs in germs, generation after generation, so that the animal born to-day must have been contained in the first of that species formed, is not true. Each egg and each male seed of the parents imparts of itself only to its offspring, of every species on earth. Only by research of reason and accurate observation, and diligent research in God's book of nature, can correct the false creeds of men that mortals begets immortals; or that the immortal spirit God begets sin-lust blood life dying mortals; God's children are all like him, as spirits.

Heb. xii. 9: We have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence; shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits and live? Only diligent search of the Scriptures and putting the spirit truths spirit like in a chain together; and searching God's book of nature, with spirit born new creature in Christ reason, and spirit love eyes, can we correct errors, aided by Christ's spirit love light wisdom guidance to truths eternal; and so long as the history of the egg-germ of all earth's animate life gives us no reason to suppose that the final end toward which metamorphosis tends, viz. the production of a new being like the parent, is interfered with, and that all beings arising from eggs are incidental with the parents, or return through subsequent and invariable changes to the parent's form.

We are not justified in assuming that the diversity among animals is brought about by a gradual divergence from their original type. The diversity, however little we may understand it, cannot, from a scientific point of view, be ascribed to a cause of which we know nothing, and of the existence of which we have as yet no evidence. Darwin and other imaginary philosophers are like the mythologists and men-creed priest manufacturers of myths, all counter to truth and enlightened spirit soul mind senses. We have actual knowledge that the mortal sin-lust bodies of Adam's sin-lust race are the products of man and wife from nature eggs, as is all animate life on earth; all such bodies are fed by and made of nature's perishable products, and after death soon see corruption rottenness; as the fruits, meats, potatoes, etc., of which it is composed, if not eaten soon rot, and become void of all life properties; save as manure to vegetation life, utterly worthless; the man who teaches its resurrection tells what his reason condemns as false.

Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul shall make her boast in the Lord (not man creeds false); the humble shall hear thereof, and be glad. The

soul egg is the mind, and when it is quickened by God's immortal spirit love seed in Christ, and sown by him: Matt. xiii. 37, 38. Spirit-born: John iii. 5. It becomes a new creature in Christ: 2 Cor. v. 17. Eph. ii. 1: A child of God and son of God: 1 John iii. 1, 2, 10; v. 18; i. 7: But if we walk in the light as God is in the light, we (spirit born holy) have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

1 John iii. 2: Beloved, now are we the sons of God. 7: Little children, let no man deceive you. 8: He that committeth sin is of the devil. 9: Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed (spirit love: holiness, immortality, spirit of God, and of Christ: Rom. vii. 8, 9: or he is none of his.) 10: In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother. 14: We know that we have passed from death unto life (first resurrection), because we love the brethren.

1 John iv. 16: God is love: and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.

1 John v. 18: We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and the wicked one toucheth him not. 19: And we know we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness.

1 John ii. 1: My little children, I write unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous.

Ezek. xviii. 26: When a righteous man turneth away from his righteousness, and committeth iniquity, and dieth in them, for his iniquity that he hath done shall he die. 27: When the wicked man turneth away from his wickedness that he hath committed and doeth that which is lawful and right, he shall save his soul alive. 20: The soul that sinneth it shall die.

Rom. vi. 23: For the wages of sin is death. (The danger of committing sin is, the blood life probation may then end before repentance, then the advocate Jesus Christ cannot help us: it is dangerous business for any one to commit a known wilful sin. Errors are not sins, but the intentional wrongdoer sins.)

Mal. iii. 14: Ye have said it is vain to serve God; and what profit is it. 15: And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up. 16. Then they that feared (to

do wrong) the Lord spake often one to another; and the Lord hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the Lord, and that thought upon his name. 17: And they shall be mine, saith the Lord of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels, and I will spare them as a man spareth his own son that serveth him. 18: Then shall ye discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God, and him that serveth him not. iv. 1: For behold the day cometh that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly shall be stubble; and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch. On the subject of religion, mankind have in all ages been prone to run into extremes. While some have been disposed to attach too much importance to mere exertions of the human intellect, and to imagine that man, by the light of unassisted reason, is able to explore the path of true wisdom and happiness, the greater part of religionists, on the other hand, have been disposed to treat even truthful scientific knowledge, in its relation to religion, with a degree of indifference bordering upon contempt. Both of these dispositions are equally foolish and preposterous. For he who exalts human reason, like the naturalists and free-thinkers, as the only sure guide to wisdom and felicity, forgets that man, in a state of nature unspirit born of immortal life spirit wisdom, in his present state is a depraved intelligence, that cannot comprehend himself: his powers of mind, the intellectual soul spirit egg germ in its quiescent undeveloped life, like the nature life egg unimpregnated and quickened with blood life; yet a faint idea of the glorious wisdom and intellectual joys of a spirit fledged heavenly spirit developed life, freed from its blood life body shell; by looking at the fowl's egg before, and a like one after being sat on by the fowl some three weeks; when the living chick bird breaks through its shell, and soars to freedom, if that egg was impregnated by milt life; if not, then break the shell, no life is there, a resurrection of rottenness is all that rises.

Thus the soul spirit egg mind of mortals, if unimpregnated by immortal spirit life from God, the Father of all holy immortal spirits. But the soul spirit egg mind differs materially from the nature egg, because while warmed by nature life's heart blood it remembers, thinks, and reasons, draws deductions, makes choice, or rejects; and the naturalist religionist, nor the free-thinker,

can comprehend it, more than boundless space in which earth revolves, and they move; neither can they comprehend the workings of life's surrounding nature life, animate or inanimate; how it is that matter lives and grows by expansion of body and by expansion of life impartations *ad infinitum*, as it were, before their mortal nature eyes; yet they will reason that it is not reasonable to ask them to believe what they cannot comprehend; and they comprehend none of the works and ways of God essential to their future existence, and consequently are sure to err; none of them attain to any benefits to our race.

During a period of near six thousand years, the greater part of the human race have been left solely to the guidance of their nature life powers, in order to grope their way to the temple of knowledge and the portals of immortality; but what has been the result of their anxious researches? Instead of acquiring correct notions of the great Author of their existence, and of the nature of that homage which is due to his perfections, they have become vain in their imaginations of their foolish heart's blood life.

Matt. xi. 39: He that findeth his life shall lose it. If a man's whole life object is to make dollars, he will be running against those who are making dollars. If the woman is like the man, the same results. If their whole object is to get applause, they will run against competitors, who are seeking applause. The fashions and maxims of this transitory world rapidly change; sickness, sorrows, disappointments, and death, all quickly follow applause. To-day the masses of silly blood life devotees cry Hosanna! to-morrow, Crucify; to-day, Great is Diana of the Ephesians! to-morrow, Great is the Pope of Rome! all are but as soap-bubble applause. But spirit born holy children of God partake of immortality; they are filled with spirit love life immortal new spirit being desires in their soul minds new creature, that rises in power flight angelic high over all earthly blood life aspirants. Such are not interrupted in their flight heavenward: they, like the eagles, soar on high and find no towering men creed church spire or tower, or lofty proud barren earthly mountains; they soar in faith which worketh by love, above all earth creed's bickerings of hatred against competitors; they leave the dead armies of combating warriors of earth in their graves, and their corruption uncleanness to the cleansing fire flood that consumes at time's close this earth; they worship no demon myth god hyena, that vulture like and worm like feeds upon dead bodies, nor creed myth god of pagan

priests embalmed Egyptian mummy resurrection to life of embalmed brainless mummies: or excrements of worms, vultures, formed by myths insane men creeds demon god of revenge hatred eternal, that again would put back the dead mortals into their earth house of vegetables, fruits, and meats, of earth, that had mouldered back to earth elements, and gases, through corruption death: to torture and burn the dead *ad infinitum*, for their sins of brief blood life's probation. Is it not enough that they are dead, soul and body, and excluded from the immortal life joys of the spirit born children of God; in the endless spirit heavens of love who think no evil?

1 Cor. xiii. 5, 6: And rejoiceth in the truth; they are above all obstructions (some preachers change their political men creeds, for higher salary call; if they lived in a higher atmosphere, nearer Christ, nearer the throne of God, in spirit love's faith, no earth calls would disturb them.) Cruelty to animals is horrid; cruelty to mortals' dead bodies infinitely worse.

1 Cor. i. 27, 28: But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound things which are mighty (the dead blood life, Christ's crucified body, weak and helpless in fleshy body strength: confounding the prince and power of the air, the power unclean spirit of darkness the devil prince, that shall come to naught: ii. 6). And the base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not (spirit births, new creatures in Christ), to bring to naught things that are (the blood life body, at death, is brought to naught, dust, Isa. v. 24.) 29: That no flesh should glory in his presence.

Jud. vii. 2: And the Lord said unto Gideon, the people that are with thee are too many for me to give the Midianites into their hands, lest Israel vaunt themselves against me, saying, Mine own hand hath saved me. 16: And Gideon divided the three hundred men into three companies, and he put a trumpet (not men's sword, or gun power) in every man's hand, with empty pitchers, and lamps within the pitchers. 18: When I blow the trumpet, I and all that are with me, then blow ye the trumpets, and say, The sword of the Lord and of Gideon.

1 Cor. i. 22: The Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after (worldly) wisdom. 23: But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling block, and unto the Greeks foolishness. To preach about a crucified dead man was foolishness to the unspirit

born Greek, and the whole spirit life plan of salvation is to all unbelievers, in their dead, or void of spirit love life immortal, soul mind, or spirit egg mind in a state of Adamic nature blood life of the flesh, with a spiritually dead in trespass and sin soul mind.

Gen. ii. 17: In the day thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die. Eve and Adam eat of the stolen forbidden lust sin fruit, and died a spiritual death; or broke by rebellion their allegiance love covenant to God.

Eph. ii. 1: And you (spirit born children of God) hath Christ quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins. The soul is a female to produce. Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul maketh her boast in the Lord: the humble hear thereof and are glad. The mind is the spirit egg in an undeveloped state, void of spirit life immortal, like the she fowl's egg: which unquickened by the male seed has no life germ, and set on will produce no life whatever: rottenness stench is all that is resurrected therefrom. Thus with the spirit mind egg in the soul: Christ sows the life quicken love life immortal seed in the soul, and quickens to life the egg mind, when the soul's will door is opened by faith which worketh by love, then belief love life immortal peace quickens to life the mind, and produces by souls spirit birth (John iii. 5. The seed sown by Christ: Matt. xiii. 37, 38. A new creature: 2 Cor. v. 17). A new creation of immortal life love spirit beings, as distinct from Adamic blood life beings, as was the first Adamic creation, sentenced to death dust.

Gen. iii. 19; Eccl. xii. 7; 1 Cor. i. 24: But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks (and all Gentiles), the power of God, and wisdom of God. Churches with kingly earth powers to lord it over God's heritage Christ did not choose: and popes of Rome in power deluged the earth with blood, under the insane pretence of being like Mahomet, the vicegerent of God, infallible with poor fallible Peter's keys of heaven and hell, as if they were friends with Christ and the devil prince, the latter their murderers, inquisition tortures gave ocular proofs of for some twelve hundred and sixty years: from 538 to 1798, when their power was broken by Bonaparte. The Church of Rome, and all other man-power churches void of love of Christ, hurl as heretics all who question their infallible man creeds: to-day the same inquisition hate power of dominant officials would hurl from their church any priest or lay members as heretics who would use God's Scripture spirit truth plowshare to turn over and uncover their false

Roman Catholic and pagan men-creed traditions; as did the Church of Rome, Martin Luther, Melancthon, John Huss, John Calvin, Henry VIII., King of England, etc., etc. The same spirit was in the New England church of the Puritans, Congregational, who hung the Quakers and drowned the poor old ladies as witches, and heresy cries the churches of every name on earth to-day of man-power, against all reformers of erroneous creeds of men, that flatly contradict God's Scripture spiritual truths. No church on earth, nor all the church-members, popes, cardinals, bishops, preachers, and lay membership on earth ever did, nor can they without Christ, the Holy Ghost, save one soul from death.

Zech. iv. 6: Not by might, nor by power, but by my spirit, saith the Lord of hosts.

1 Cor. i. 30: But of God, a spirit sovereign supreme of the universe, infinite in life, love, power, and beatific glory infallible: in whom we live, move, and have our being, and without whose permission no mortal can live, move, or have a being: to whom be all glory as father of all spirit beings, immortal in life, love, light, and truth (Heb. xii. 9).

Matt. v. 10: Blessed are they that are persecuted for righteousness' sake, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Persecution may be considered as rejection, as heresy, spiritual communications to the humblest lay member of a church, which as a plowshare turns over and exposes by Scripture truths the false men-manufactured creeds fallible of churches; the cry of heresy had its origin in the devil, and ocularly demonstrated by the Roman Catholic inquisition murderers of God's children as heretics; the same devil spirit, unclean, alone leads vain, fallible, self-power preachers and laymen to cry to-day heresy, if their false doctrine creeds are exposed by God's chosen weak worm with which he would thrash the church mountain sins of self-sufficiency, in the infallible man Diana of the Ephesians, or pope, whose creed traditions fallible they adhere to, instead of God's infallible Scripture spirit truths, which they desire to make nature blood life a participant of, beyond its death dust in their own body resurrected to heaven; and all heretics, they as self-appointed inquisitors judge, would keep alive in hell fire tortures endless; for whose benefit, or for what end of justice; they have nothing but cruelty the most horrid devils could invent, for the poor dead animal body they would raise from the dead to torture. Verily, Bergh, the official in New York to stop cruelty to animals, should pray

for them : and may God have mercy on all hell fire worshipers, and resurrectors of rotten bodies to burn, or store heaven with !

John iv. 24: God is a Spirit, and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. What sad work Turks, Jews, Roman Catholics, and other professors of Christianity have made on earth, which is indeed a reproach of great magnitude to that holy name, persecution for trying to get men to believe the Scripture truths, which they falsely by their persecutions claim to believe. However, the persecuted have this comfort in the midst of all their sufferings, they are blessed of Christ, their Lord, who himself suffered for them, and he promises them the kingdom of heaven. By which doctrine it may be safely concluded that God's spirit children of love never persecuted any, nor killed any one.

Matt. x. 38: And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. The way of the cross is spiritual, that is an inward submission of the soul to God, and by faith love seeking through Christ, the Holy Ghost, spirit birth, of God the Father of spirits ; which new spirit life being crosseth and restrains their fleshy lusts and sinful desires.

SOULS.

Gen. ii. 7: Man became a living soul.

Gen. xxxv. 18: Her soul was in departing (she died).

Lev. iv. 2: If a soul sin through ignorance.

Lev. v. 1: If a soul sin, and hear the voice of swearing.

Lev. vi. 2: If a soul sin, lie.

Lev. xvii. 11: For the life of the flesh is the blood ; and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your souls ; for it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul.

Lev. xxii. 11: If the priest buy any soul with his money.

Lev. xxiii. 30: Whatsoever soul it be that doeth any work in that same day, the same soul will I destroy.

Num. xxx. 4: She hath bound her soul. 2: If a man vow unto the Lord, or swear an oath to bind his soul with a bond, he shall do according to all that proceedeth out of his mouth.

Num. xxxi. 28: One soul of five hundred, both of the persons, and of the beeves, and of the asses, and of the sheep.

Deut. xi. 13: Love the Lord your God, and to serve him with all your soul. 18: Lay up these words in your soul.

Deut. xiii. 3: Thou shalt not hearken unto the words of that

(false) prophet (or preacher of other than Scripture truths of God), for the Lord God proveth your soul love.

1 Sam. xviii. 1: Soul of Jonathan was knit to the soul of David.

2 Sam. xiii. 39: And the soul of David longed to go forth unto Absalom.

1 Kings viii. 48: If thy people return unto thee with all their soul.

1 Kings xvii. 21: Let this child's soul come into him again.

2 Kings xxiii. 3: And all their soul keep the covenant written in the Bible truths.

1 Chron. xxii. 19: Set your soul to seek the Lord your God.

2 Chron. vi. 38; xv. 12: And they covenanted to seek the Lord God with all their soul.

Job iii. 20: Wherefore is light given to him that is in misery, and life unto the bitter in soul?

Job. xii. 10: In God's hand is the soul of every living thing, and the breath of all mankind.

Job xxiv. 12: The soul of the wounded crieth out.

Ps. xix. 7: The law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul; the testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple.

Ps. xxxiii. 19: To deliver their soul from death.

Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul shall make her boast in the Lord; the humble shall hear thereof and be glad. 22: The Lord redeemeth the soul of his servants.

Ps. xlix. 8: For the redemption of the soul is precious, and it ceaseth forever (no more sacrifices for sin).

Ps. lxxi. 23: My soul, which thou hast redeemed. lxxii. 14: He shall redeem their soul from deceit and violence. lxxviii. 50: He spared not their soul from death.

Ps. lxxxvi. 4: Rejoice the soul of thy servant; for unto thee, O Lord, do I lift up my soul.

Ps. xciv. 21: They gather themselves together against the soul of the righteous, and condemn the innocent blood. 22: But the Lord is my defence; and my God is the rock of my refuge.

James i. 21: Receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls.

Ezek. xiv. 14: Noah, Daniel, and Job, should deliver but their own souls by their righteousness, saith the Lord God.

Ezek. xviii. 4: The soul that sinneth, it shall die.

Acts ii. 41: There were added about three thousand souls.

Isa. liv. 5: For thy maker is thy husband; the Lord of Hosts is his name, and thy Redeemer the Holy One of Israel; the God of the whole earth shall he be called; thus, the Lord Jesus (Matt. xiii. 37, 38) sows the spirit love of God immortal life seed of the Father of spirits that live immortal: Heb. xii. 9. In the her (female, spirit body): Ps. xxxiv. 2. Which by the brooding spirit, light, love, of the Holy Ghost, Christ Jesus, word love of God, is spirit born of the soul's mind spirit egg.

John iii. 5: And is a spirit. And a new (creation) creature in Christ: 2 Cor. v. 17. A son, and child of God: 1 John iii. 1, 2, 10; v. 18. Begotten and born of God; having God's spirit love: 1 John iv. 16. Rom. viii. 9: The spirit (love) of Christ.

Isa. lv. 3: Incline your ear, and come unto me; hear, and your soul shall live, and I will make an everlasting covenant with you. 6, 7: Seek the Lord while he may be found, call ye upon him while he is near; let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts, and let him return unto the Lord and he will have mercy upon him, and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon. 8: For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the Lord; for as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your (men creed tradition) ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts. As the rain cometh down, and watereth the earth, and maketh it to bring forth seed to the sower, and bread to the eater, so shall my (Scripture truths) word be that goeth forth of my mouth: it shall not return to me void.

Isa. lvi. 7: My house shall be called a house of prayer for all people (not for the rich only, but for the humble poor), Matt. xi. 5. x. 28: Fear him that can destroy the soul.

Ezek. xviii. 4, 20: All souls are God's; the soul that sinneth, it shall die.

Hos. ix. 1, 4: Rejoice not, O Israel, for joy, as other people; for thou hast gone a whoring from thy God; for their bread for their soul shall not come into the house of the Lord. Thorns shall be in their tabernacles. The priest is a snare in all his ways, and hatred in the house of his God. 17: My God will cast them away, because they did not hearken unto him, and they shall be wanderers among the nations. x. 1: Israel is an empty vine (no fruit).

Acts iii. 23: Every soul which will not hear that prophet (Christ Jesus) shall be destroyed.

Heb. x. 39 : But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition, but of them that believe to the saving of the soul.

James v. 20 : He which converteth a sinner (in or outside of the church record) from the error of his way shall save a soul from death.

1 Pet. ii. 11 : Abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul.

Rev. xvi. 3 : Every living soul died in the sea.

Job xxvii. 8 : What is the hope of the hypocrite when God taketh away his soul? 14 : If his children be multiplied, it is for the sword. 15 : Those that remain of him shall be buried in death. 19 : The rich man shall lie down, but he shall not be gathered ; he is not.

Job xxxiii. 22 : His soul draweth near unto the grave, and his life from the destroyers (warriors). 27 : If any man say, I have sinned, he will deliver his soul from going into the pit, and his life shall see the light. Lo, all these things worketh God oftentimes with man, to bring back his soul from the pit, to be enlightened with the light of the living.

Job xxxiv. 15 : All flesh shall perish together, and man shall turn again unto dust.

Ps. lxxxix. 48 : What man (unspirit-born) liveth, and shall not see death? shall he deliver his soul from the hand of the grave?

Prov. xxiii. 14 : Thou shalt beat him with the rod, and deliver his soul from hell (the grave).

Matt. xvi. 25, 26 : Whosoever will save his (blood) life shall lose it ; and whosoever will lose his (blood) life for my sake shall find it (spirit love birth of soul mind life immortal). 26 : For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

Acts ii. 30, 31 : Christ's soul was not left in hell (the grave), neither did his spirit (begotten) see corruption (as Adam's seed).

Gen. xii. 13 : And my (Abram) soul shall live because of thee. xix. 20 : Oh, let me (Lot) escape to Zoar, and my soul shall live.

Gen. xxvii. 4 : That my soul (Isaac's) bless thee before I die.

Gen. xlix. 6 : O my (Jacob's) soul, come not thou into their (war) secrets.

1 Sam. i. 15 : I have poured out my soul before the Lord.

2 Sam. iv. 9 : The Lord hath redeemed my soul.

Job ix. 21 ; x. 1 : My soul is weary of my (blood) life : I will speak in the bitterness of my soul.

Job xix. 2: How long will ye vex my soul?

Job xxvii. 2: The Almighty hath vexed my soul (left Job to be tempted, etc.).

Job xxx. 15, 25: Was not my soul grieved for the poor?

Ps. iii. 2: Many say of my soul, there is no help for him in God.

Ps. vi. 4: O Lord, deliver my soul; save me for thy mercies' sake. 5: For in death there is no remembrance of thee.

Ps. xvi. 10: Thou wilt not leave my soul in hell (the grave).

Ps. xxiii. 3: He restoreth my soul.

Ps. xxv. 1: Unto thee, O Lord, do I lift up my soul. 20: O keep my soul, and deliver me.

Ps. xxvi. 9: Gather not my soul with sinners, nor my life with bloody men.

Ps. xxx. 3: O Lord, thou hast brought up my soul from the grave; thou hast kept me alive, that I should not go down to the pit.

Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul shall make her boast in the Lord.

Ps. xxxv. 3: Say unto my soul, I am thy salvation.

Ps. cxix. 175: Let my soul live, and it shall praise thee.

Ps. lxvi. 9: God holdeth our soul in life.

Acts xvii. 28: In God we live, move, and have our being; out of him (his life light) we would be dead.

Ps. xxii. 29: They that go down to the dust shall bow before the Lord (every knee shall bow), and none can keep alive his own soul. 30: A seed (Matt. xiii. 37, 38: Christ sows) shall serve him (spirit born holy).

Ps. cxx. 1-7: Deliver my soul, O Lord, from lying lips, and from a deceitful tongue. I am for peace; but when I speak, they (men creed worshipers of dead bodies and hell fire) are for war.

Luke xii. 20: Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee.

Ps. xcvi. 10: The Lord preserveth the souls of his saints.

No scripture that souls are immortal.

CHRIST THE SPIRIT PRINCE OF PEACE AND IMMORTAL LIFE
LOVE.

Isa. liv. 13: And all God's (spirit soul mind begotten) children shall be taught of the Lord (not college-bred, and taught of heathen philosophers; nor by titled popes or D.D.'s); and great peace

John xiv. 27; xvi. 33, have God's children. Isa. liv. 5: For thy maker is thy husband. His spirit word begets the spirit son, and child of God.

1 John iii. 1, 2, 10; iv. 16; v. 18: We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not: but he that is begotten of God (thy husband: of the her female soul).

Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul shall make her boast in the Lord: the humble shall hear thereof, and be glad. 8: O taste and see that the Lord is good: blessed is the man that trusteth in him. 10: They that seek the Lord shall not want any good thing. 11: Come ye children (of the Lord) hearken unto me, keepeth himself, and the wicked one toucheth him not. 1 John v. 19: And we (spirit-born of God, holy and immortal) know that we are of God, and the whole world (all Adam's sin lust race, Ps. li. 5). Unbegotten and unborn of God lieth in wickedness (sentenced to death).

Rom. vi. 23: The wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. 1 John v. 20: This is the true God, and eternal life.

Heb. xii. 9: We have had fathers of our flesh (blood life) which corrected us, and we gave them reverence; shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? (Clearly showing all others of Adam's race die, as sentenced.)

Gen. iii. 19: And return to dust earth elements.

1 Cor. xv. 48: As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy. And as is the heavenly (spirits: John iv. 24: God is a spirit, like begets its like), such are they that are heavenly.

Matt. xiii. 37, 38: Good seed (spirit) children of the (spirit) kingdom, (of God) sown by Christ, spirit-born.

John iii. 5: (or) He cannot enter into the (spirit) kingdom of God. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the spirit (word of God) is spirit.

Rom. viii. 9: But ye (spirit-born of God) are not in the flesh, but in the spirit (soul mind). If so be that the spirit of God dwell in you (1 John iv. 16: God is love; and he that dwell in love (spirit love life immortal) dwelleth in God, and God in him. Herein is our love made perfect,—because as Christ is, so are we in this world). Now if any man have not the spirit of Christ, he is none of his. 10: And if Christ (spirit love) be in you the body is dead (sentenced to death, Gen. iii. 19) because of sin; but the spirit is life (immortal), because of righteousness.

1 Cor. xv. 23 : Christ the first fruits : afterward they that are Christ's.

John xv. 1 : I (Christ) am the true (spirit life immortal) vine, and my father is the (spirit life immortal husband) husbandman. 4 : As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me. 5 : I am the vine, ye are the branches ; he that abideth in me (spirit love), and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit ; for without me ye can do nothing.

JESUS' SERMON BY THE SEASIDE.

Matt. xiii. 4 : Some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them. 5 : Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth : they had no root, they withered. 7 : Some fell among thorns ; and the thorns sprang up, and choked them. 8 : But others fell on good ground (meekness, love, faith), and brought forth fruit.

The wicked is like the wild forest, and evil weeds, that produce no fruit.

Matt. xiii. 9 : Who hath ears to hear, let him hear. 10 : And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables ? He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven ; but to them it is not given. 12 : For whosoever hath (spirit birth life immortal, gift of the spirit Father of spirits immortal : Heb. xii. 9 ; Tim. vi. 16 : Who only hath immortality to give), to them shall more spirit wisdom light knowledge be given. But whosoever hath not (spirit life immortal gift from God) from them what knowledge they have shall perish with their nature body blood life in death. The wages of sin is death ; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord (Rom. vi. 23).

Those who use not their memory soon become forgetful. Those who write a declamation, and read a form of ceremonial words oft repeated, year after year, never become preachers, nor praying mind intellect worshipers of God.

Matt. vi. 7 : When ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do (so does the church founded by Henry VIII., king of Eng'nd, which has used repetitions the same for scores of years. Use memory, and it develops into usefulness to the righteous : use your intellects in preaching ; praying short, speaking in testimony of the truth of your spirit birth, if you have the spirit

baptism of Christ the Holy Ghost; if you have not you are none of his (Rom. viii. 9).

Will used in any way forms the man, woman, or child; an ungovernable will is like the beasts that perish.

Ps. xlix. 12: Man being in honor abideth not: he is like the beasts that perish. 19: They shall never see light (after death). 20: Man that . . . understandeth not (spirit birth wisdom from God) is like the beasts that perish. 15: But God will redeem my soul from the power of the grave; for he will receive me (at blood life's death).

Anger is like the fire, a hard master; and like a ravenous beast if left untamed by love. An angry rebuke makes the child worse, and aids the ingrowth of anger and hatred.

Prov. xv. 1: A soft answer turneth away wrath; but grievous words stir up anger.—The Quaker parents say mildly, Robert, James, John, Mary, etc., sit down and be quiet.

Ps. cxix. 175: Let my soul live, and it shall praise thee. 165: Great peace have they which love thy law; and nothing shall offend them.

1 TIMOTHY vi. 16.

Immortal life is God's alone,
Father's spirit-love Christ hath sown,
In soul minds who through faith believe,
Such loves immortal life receive.

Lift up your eyes on high; behold
Who created these things of old;
Bringest out their vast host numbers,
When day dies, and nations slumbers.

Life expands in all seeds for bread,
Thus God commanded earth, and said,
Let earth bring forth grass yielding seed,
On which animate bodies feed.

Spirit-born souls new creature life,
Breathe love's atmosphere free from strife;
Such pulsate love and holiness,
Life immortal, which God doth bless.

God is love, and love is his Son,
And Holy Spirit, in love one;
Thus spirit-born abide in love,
Abide in God, and Christ above.

"Without me ye can nothing do,"
Said Jesus, his word ever true;
None is immortal, of Adam's race,
Unless Christ's love life they embrace.

Great God, all nations are with thee,
As empty space value I see
Recorded by prophet of old,
Who, inspired by thee, truth told.

Matter that mortal man may view,
With telescopic vision true,
Like earth, thy starry flag unfurls;
Sins nations into chaos hurls.

HEBREWS xii. 9.

Father of spirits, God o'er all,
Sovereign supreme, saints Father call;
Creation word power son of love,
Redeemer, Saviour, Lord above.

All God's works silently proclaim,
And render glory to his name;
God's book of nature I revere,
They teach his power ever near.

The Lord God formed man of the dust,
And gave him breath of life in trust;
Then from Adam the Lord made Eve,
Whose soul egg mind evils conceive.

Love heaven's life, oxygen air,
That all breathe pure that heaven share;
God's spirit-breath that Jesus brought,
That Grace bestows when by faith sought.

They that of God are spirit-born,
On earth Christ's love seed doth adorn;
No others can immortal be,
On earth land or upon the sea.

The wicked soul's life-lamp expires,
With blood life's sinful vain desires;
Without Christ's spirit soul-life love,
No mortal's soul mind lives above.

COMMENTARIES.

A SON, AND CHILD OF GOD, BY SPIRIT BIRTH. (JOHN iii. 5.)

John i. 12: But as many as received Christ, to them gave he power to become the sons of God.

John iv. 24: God is a Spirit; and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

John v. 41: I receive not honor from men.

Matt. xxiii. 5: All their works they do for to be seen of men. (Read formal selected words, and call them prayers, heard by mortals' ears.) 8: Be not ye (children of God) called rabbi. (D.D., etc.) 9: And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. 10: Neither be ye called masters: for one is your master, even Christ. 11: But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant.

Rom. viii. 14: For as many as are led by the spirit of God, they are the sons of God. 19: For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.

Gen. vi. 2: Sons of God, etc. (Job i. 6; ii. 1; xxxviii. 7; Hos. i. 10.)

Phil. ii. 15: That ye may be blameless, and harmless, the sons of God. 16: Holding forth the word of life, as lights in the world.

1 John iii. 1, 2: Behold what manner of love the Father (of soul mind spirits: Heb. xii. 9) hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God. Therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not (Gen. iv. 1: Adam knew Eve: thus God's spirit word knows, quickens, into immortal spirit life the her soul spirit egg mind: Ps. xxxiv. 2). Now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be. But we know that when Christ shall appear, we (spirit born sons of God) shall be like him. 8: He that committeth sin is of the devil. 9: Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin: for Christ's seed remaineth in him; and he cannot sin, because he is

born of God. 10: In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil. Whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

1 John v. 18: Begotten and born of God.

M A T T H E W.

CHAPTER I.

1. The genealogy of Jesus Christ.

18. Mary's miraculous conception by way of God's spirit word promise. Gen. iii. 15; Heb. ii. 14.

The spirit word Son of God, the Sovereign of the created universe, appeared in human form to Moses, Abraham, Gideon, Elijah, and others, at various times and on various occasions. As a garment he assumed the human form, and put it off again at will (Job x. 11).

As Eve was made of Adam (Gen. ii. 22), thus woman's seed egg of nature, that is the initial development of all animate life on earth, in the Virgin Mary was caused by the spirit word spoken after the fall.

Gen. iii. 15: The woman's seed should bruise the serpent's head, and Jesus' body was thereby spirit begotten, as all soul spirit mind eggs must in like manner be impregnated with God's spirit, to become immortal.

Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul shall make her boast in the Lord.

1 Tim. vi. 13: I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things. 16: Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen nor can see. Jesus' human spirit begotten of woman's seed and only begotten body, by way of spirit impregnation word of God promise in Eden (Gen. iii. 15), and for the purpose promised. Heb. ii. 14: Forasmuch then as the children (spirit begotten children of God, by way of Christ Jesus' good seed).

Matt. xiii. 37, 38: The good seed are the children of the kingdom.

John iii. 3: Except a man be born again he cannot see the kingdom of God. 5: Jesus said, Except a man be born of water (repentance) and of the spirit (regeneration immortal life milt seed from God in Christ Jesus), he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

John iv. 24: God is a spirit. (Like begets its like, is God's universal statute law of his universe of lighted space, in all its boundless heights; therefore mortals cannot beget immortals.

1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality. And they that worship God must worship him in spirit and in truth. (Not by mocking his boundless goodness, love, and mercy, with rotten body resurrections. (Gen. iii. 19; Eccles. xii. 7.)

Isa. xl. 6: All flesh is grass, and all the goodliness thereof is as the flower of the field. 7: Surely the people is grass. 8: The grass withereth (nature blood life fed on grass products all dies), the flower fadeth, but the word of our (the Christian's) God shall stand forever. 15: Nations are as a drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance. 17: All nations before him are as nothing, and they are counted to him less than nothing and vanity. The prophet viewed Adam and Eve, and their sin lust begotten race (Ps. li. 5: In sin did my mother conceive me. Behold I was shapen in iniquity) as less than nothing in value to him, taking into the account the cost of redemption of believers, by way of the crucifixion of Jesus' spirit begotten body of the woman's seed egg.

Heb. ii. 14: Forasmuch then as the children (spirit born of Christ's good immortal life spirit word of God in Christ Jesus' seed) are partakers (by nature lust sin seed birth) of flesh and blood, Jesus also himself likewise took part of the same (spirit begotten of woman's seed egg, Gen. iii. 15), that through death (of that woman seed body blood life sacrifice, John ii. 4) he might (thereby) destroy (at the close of time, end of the world, or Satan's probation age).

Matt. xiii. 39, 40: The tares are the children of the devil, who sows them. The harvest is the end of the world; the reapers are the angels. As therefore the tares (foul weeds, emblems of sins which fill the soul minds of Satan's tare children) are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of this world.

Mal. iv. 1: Behold the day cometh that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all (not rebel Jews only, or part of Adam's incorrigibly wicked children of Satan's tare seeds, but all in the broad way to second death); all that do wickedly shall be stubble, and the day that cometh (the last day of time, the parenthesis between eternity past and eternity to come) shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts; that it shall leave them neither root nor branch.

Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24 : The soul that sinneth it shall die ; if they repent not before probation blood life of body dies. 26 : When a righteous man turneth away from his righteousness, and committeth iniquity, and dieth in them, for his iniquity that he hath done shall he die. 27 : When the wicked man turneth away from his wickedness that he hath committed (by repentance while blood life's lamp of probation still burns, and seeketh God through Christ for forgiveness of sins with all their heart, not part ; and acknowledges before the gainsaying wicked, and the righteous ; that they seek for immortal life of God, through Christ their mediator, and then) doeth that which is lawful and right, he (or they) shall save his (or their) soul alive.

Heb. ii. 14 : Forasmuch then as the children (Christ's good seed children, spirit born of God's immortality in Christ, by way of his spirit birth and as spirit word creation Son of God, in original and separate spirit essence from the blood life body partaken of by him) are partakers of flesh and blood, Jesus also himself likewise took part of the same (viz., woman's nature seed egg blood life), that through (blood life sacrificial) death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is the devil.

CHAPTER II.

1. Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem,

Bethlehem.—This city is otherwise called Ephrata and the city of David. There is another of the same name in the land of Zebulon in Galilee. *Wise men.*—Philosophers or astrologers.

From the east.—Eastward from Judea, perhaps Persia or Arabia ; descendants of Abraham by Ishmael. (2 Tim. i. 10 : Is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ.)

2. Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews ? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

His star.—Which was some bright extraordinary light in the form of, or resembling, a star, which God had created to be a sign of Christ's birth, that moved those wise men of the east, through

the spirit influences of the Holy Ghost, to follow the moving meteor that mysteriously moved on before them, like the pillar of fire by night before the Jews, when they traveled in their journey from Egypt to the land of promise, and the pillar of cloud by day. The star of Bethlehem was moved by the power of God, and was most likely an angel's chariot, or the germ of the spirit paradise, New Jerusalem, city of God in heaven.

3. When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.

4. And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born.

The chief.—This word is taken here and elsewhere in the gospels at large, for the heads of families, and of the divisions of the priests, as 1 Chron. xxxvi. 14. *Scribes.*—These were certain men well versed in Holy Scriptures, and did expound them publicly in the synagogues, and are called of the people, being of every tribe of Israel. (1 Chron. ii. 5; 2 Chron. xxxiv. 13; Ezra vii. 6, 11, 12). And were also admitted into public councils, as formerly the prophets were. (Jer. xxvi. 11.)

5. And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written by the prophet,

6. And thou Bethlehem, in the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel.

7. Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, inquired of them diligently what time the star appeared.

What time.—It is likely the star did appear two years or thereabouts before the birth of Jesus; and that upon this opinion, that the star had risen at the same time that Christ was born, Herod caused the little children from two years downward to be slain.

8. And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young child; and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.

Worship him.—Cloaking his hypocrisy, or devil spirit unclean within him, that mortal eyes could not see. Thus to-day the masses on earth who hold official stations cloak their secret thefts of books and lands, money, etc., led on by lawyers.

9. When they had heard the king they departed; and, lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was.

The star.—It seems that it had vanished out of sight some time previous, and that it did now show itself again to guide them to the spirit begotten Infant, by way of woman's seed. (Gen. iii. 15; Heb. ii. 14.) It was the chariot of the angel of the covenant, or some other guardian angel's light chariot, resembling to mortal vision a star. Luke i. 30: And the angel said, Fear not, Mary; for thou hast found favor with God. Matt. xviii. 10: Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.

10. When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.

11. And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshiped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense, and myrrh.

Fell down.—On their knees most likely, being impressed by divine motion and inspiration. *Presented.*—It was the custom of the Persians not to salute their kings without presenting a gift to them, which their custom they here follow in saluting of Christ Jesus, our spiritual king.

12. And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

Warned.—By divine revelation; by way of the star, guardian angel of the Lord.

13. And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him.

Dream.—Such dreams were the Holy Ghost's testimonies for man's assurance. Num. xii. 6: I, the Lord, will make myself known unto him in a vision, and will speak unto him in a dream.

14. When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:

Departed.—This took place after Mary's purification (Luke ii. 39).

15. And was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I called my son.

Which was spoken.—This place referred to Jacob's son Joseph and his brethren as Israel, or the church when the children of Israel were delivered from Egyptian bondage. But it referred to Jesus as the second escape from Egypt, of which the first was an allegory, the same as lambs were emblems of Jesus' sacrifice.

16. Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently inquired of the wise men.

17. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying,

Was fulfilled.—Herod renewed the sorrows which the tribe of Benjamin long before had suffered, showing that the powers of this world are, in their unsanctified aspiring selfish state, wholly allied to the prince of darkness, and that such as Herod are tare seed children of the devil (Matt. xiii. 39, 40), or devils in human form.

18. In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

Rama.—This word in itself signifies high; it is also a city in the land of Benjamin. *Because.*—Or insomuch as they are no more.

19. But when Herod was dead, behold an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt.

20. Saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel; for they are dead which sought the young child's life.

21. And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22. But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee.

Did reign.—Viz., being declared king by the will of his father Herod, but afterwards Augustus brought him to an inferior title of ethnarch, or governor of the nation, and took away half his kingdom from him. He was a son of Herod the Great, and his mother's name was Malthace of Samaria.

23. And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

By the prophets.—Judges xiii. 5: spoken of Samson, who was a figure shadow of Jesus, in strength, and being betrayed by Judas, like Samson betrayed by his wife. The prophets in their sermons thus probably illustrated the nature Samson, and the spiritual which infinitely surpassed him in strength. And the opprobrious appellation of a Nazarene, given Jesus by the wicked Jews as the nickname given Christ of Beelzebub, given him by a popular scorn from the name of the despicable city wherein he abode, that pervades the masses of the devil's children who call nicknames and blaspheme God's name, and steal, and lie, and slander the children of God on earth.

Nazarene.—That is, holy, and consecrated to God, or flourishing, and was so named of the city of Nazareth.

CHAPTER III.

1.] *In those days.*—In the twenty-fifth year of the Emperor Tiberius, Jesus' blood life on earth being thirty years old. *Came.*—Viz., sent by God to bear witness of Christ Jesus. *The Baptist.*—A Greek name signifying washer, and was a name which certain doctors among the Jews bore, who appointed their disciples and followers certain corporal washings, and as an enlargement of the ceremonial purifications of the law of Moses dispensation; all superstitiously without any calling or command of God, or any effect for the soul's regeneration.

2.] *Repent ye.*—Prepare yourselves with true grief and sorrow for your sins, to receive pardon from God, for ingratitude, adoration, and love, not rendered with all the heart, and the expiation of them by the true Messiah who is already come into the world to re-establish God's kingdom in righteousness and peace, to bring salvation to such as repent, and final ruin to obdurate rebels (Isa. lvi. 1; lix. 20; Mal. iii. 2; iv. 2).

3.] Isa. xl. 3: The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make straight in the desert a way for our God. *This is he.*—Namely, John the Baptist.

4.] *Of camel's hair.*—Whereof was made a coarse kind of cloth or felt. *Locusts.*—These were used for food in former times; and at that time, and even now, in China.

6.] *Baptized*.—A substitute for circumcision, which was nature emblem of the spiritual. Immortal life is not of the body, but of Christ's spirit seed sown in the soul (Matt. xiii. 37, 38).

John iii. 5: Except a man be born of water and of the spirit he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. 7: Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. Baptism is not a saving ordinance of water, but of the spirit by way of water from the side and heart blood life, drawn by the Roman soldier's spear from the side of the Christian's dearly beloved Saviour. Acts i. 5: John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost. Tears of repentance is a baptism of water flowing from the mortal eyes, when hearts are burdened with a full heart desire for spirit birth, love seed, and peace from the Lord. Acts ii. 38; viii. 12, 16, 17. 1 Cor. x. 1: All our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea (namely, between the seas, on dry ground). 2: And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea. 3: And did all eat the same spiritual meat. 4: They drank of that spiritual Rock, Christ. Exod. xiv. 16, 22, 28: And the waters returned and covered the chariots and the horsemen, and all the hosts of Pharaoh that came into the sea after the Israelites (thus Pharaoh was immersed; but the children of Israel were all sprinkled, baptized in the cloud). 29: But the children of Israel walked upon dry land in the midst of the sea. Luke xxiii. 43: And Jesus said unto the repentant thief on the cross, Verily I say unto thee, to-day shalt thou be with me in paradise; no baptism but the Holy Ghost baptism had the repentant thief on the cross. Therefore, it cannot be a saving ordinance to immerse in water mortal bodies. The tears of sorrow of the penitent repentant thief fully agree with John's prophecy (Matt. iii. 11): I indeed baptize you (sinners) unto repentance with water: but he (Christ Jesus) that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire. The thief that wept tears of repentance on the cross the Lord Jesus baptized with the Holy Ghost, the Spirit of God, or immortal life impregnation spirit birth seed, of which in the moment he believed on Jesus Christ as his Saviour, he was spirit born, in his converted soul mind egg with faith, love, belief in Christ Jesus, and, thereby fulfilling God's spirit world life eternal law (he the thief before), that moment became a new creature, by way of spirit birth regeneration from

Christ's spirit life immortal good seed (Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5, 6); and at blood life death his spirit new creature life went to paradise.

7.] *Pharisees and Sadducees.*—Sects and religious orders among the Jews. Pharisees signifieth separate, viz., from the common manner of living by a singular study in the law of God, as most preachers of the world have ever practiced, viz., to wrest God's statute plain laws, and by misconstruction of parables and words wrest the Scriptures to their own destruction, and all who follow their men tradition false creeds, that like Satan contradict God; when God said to Adam (Gen. ii. 17), In the day (age or prophetic day of a thousand years (Ps. c. 4; 2 Pet. iii. 8) that thou eatest of the forbidden fruit, thou shalt surely die (Gen. iii. 4). and the serpent (devil) said unto the woman (Eve), Ye shall not surely die. (Thus most preach that the devil told the truth that the wicked are immortal in hell or heaven, etc.) But God's truth says to Adam and Eve (Gen. iii. 19), Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. 22: And the Lord God said, Lest Adam put forth his hand and take also of the tree of life and eat, and live forever, therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden to till the ground from whence he was taken; so he drove out Adam, and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden cherubim and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life. Matt. v. 20: Except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven. The Pharisees were distinguished from the vulgar by abstinences, disciplines, clothing, and other like things. They followed traditions of men creeds, as do most preachers at this day, which were contrary to God's laws of truth. The institution might have been laudable in their beginning, but at the last they degenerated into superstition, errors, hypocrisy, pride, and faction. As found to-day, the different sects on earth are trying to build a spiritual tower, each to climb above the deluge of fire that will consume all the incorrigibly wicked at the last day of time's parenthesis between eternity past and eternity to come; thus their discordant creeds are a spiritual Babel, and must continue thus to be, until Christ's spirit-born watchmen see eye to eye, and drop all their discordant traditions of men creeds, and adopt the Bible as their only creed, and spirit birth holiness truth and love as the only way to heaven.

The Sadducees had their name from one Sadoc, their founder,

who wresting the saying of a master of his, that one ought not to serve God neither for hope of reward nor fear of punishment, brought in epicureanism among the Jews, denying the resurrection and the immortality of the soul.

God does not approve of the Pharisees, who did believe falsely in the immortality of the nature mortal, and a resurrection of the rotten or dust body. Vipers, people full of poison, malice, such as swearers, nicknamers, liars, slanderers, and all manner of sins flowing from poison malice, envy, hatred, and a desire to make their fellow mortals unhappy, and to lower their fellow beings, hoping thereby to exalt themselves. All such persons, whatever their pretences to righteousness, are base hypocrites at heart, and the devil's tare seed is in their souls, developing an unclean spirit child of the devil; such protrude their lust tongues between their lips like the viper serpent that seduced Eve in Eden.

Who hath.—Words of admiration to see such come, which had been previously so evil disposed to receive internal baptism of which they came repenting, to receive the sign. *Wrath to come.*—Num. xvi. 21: That I may consume them (the wicked) in a moment (Deut. iv. 24; Heb. xii. 29; Mal. iv. 1; Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27).

8.] *Meet for.*—Break off from your sins by doing right; repent of all your evil ways.

9.] *And think not.*—Do not dally with yourselves (as do preachers' children at this day, 1871), to think because you are issued from Abraham according to the flesh, you are in God's favor, and free from his judgment; for with him the imitation of Abraham's faith and piety is the only thing which demonstrates and causeth to be Abraham's true faith promise children, and not the corporal generation. Rom. iv. 12: Now such faith children spirit born of Christ's spirit life immortal seed may be brought forth of all nations. Think not that if you perish, God's people shall perish. For God's people shall always subsist in their faith that worketh by love, promise children of Abraham by way of Christ Jesus, who alone hath immortal life seed of his Father to impregnate soul mind intellect spirit eggs with the spirit birth faith's love seed of immortal life.

10.] *Now.*—Viz., from henceforth God will use no more such toleration as he hath done heretofore with you false Jews. Mal. iii. 15: But having proffered his grace in his Son, if you refuse it, he will suddenly reject and punish you. *The axe.*—That is, God's

justice fire is approaching, to consume in a moment and utterly destroy all who rebel against him as incorrigible sinners.

11.] *I indeed.*—Namely, by my preaching, and through my whole ministry, whereof baptism is the sacrament, I as the fore-runner of God's spirit word creation Son, and only begotten spiritually from woman's seed egg son, with blood alliance by way of Boaz and Ruth, and David, God's anointed king over Abraham's seed by nature, and the humble, pious, holy Virgin Mary, in the fullness of God's appointed time. His creation word in Eden, uttered Gen. iii. 15: the woman's seed should bruise the serpent's head, even to its utter death (Heb. ii. 14). Thus in Boaz a Jew, and Ruth a Gentile, all the nations of earth have access to the tree of life immortal in the Saviour, who shed on the cross as a sacrifice to infinite justice woman's seed life blood, uncontaminated by sin; that through the woman's seed alliance he thereby could redeem from slavery to the devil by way of rebellion against God's statute laws all of Adam's seed who truly repent of all their sins, and seek God with all their hearts, and leave forever the commander-in-chief of the rebel army of hell's broad way army of darkness, that each moment draws nearer the bottomless pit of outer darkness beneath lighted space; that will fully culminate on the last great judgment day, and close of time and probation.

12.] *Whose fan.*—Viz., like the farmer cleaning wheat with a fan windmill. He will not only thus purify the souls in which his immortal life seed is sown to salvation, from all contaminations of sin, but will also cleanse the body of his church from the mixture of all hypocrites and wicked men, casting them into or setting on fire the earth and its surrounding air element and waters, and withdrawing his sustaining hand that now holds the earth in its appointed place and annual rounds. All the wicked that repent not of their evil sinful ways, he will on the last day of time burn up with his unquenchable fire in a moment, as chaff (Num. xvi. 21; Luke iii. 17; Job xxi. 18; Ps. i. 4; xxxv. 5; Isa. v. 24). Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff, so their root shall be rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust. Because they have cast away the law of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word of (Christ Jesus) the Holy One of Israel. Mal. iv. 1: For behold the day cometh that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble. And the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts (good authority, O vain man tradition

endless punishment torturer preacher), that it shall leave them neither root nor branch (2 Pet. iii. 7, 10; Jer. xxiii. 28; Dan. ii. 35; Hos. xiii. 3; Zeph. ii. 2). And will gather his true believers into the kingdom of heaven (Matt. xiii. 37, 38, 41, 49).

13.] *To be baptized.*—Not for any sign of need to be purified from sin, or in token of repentance, but to fulfill all parts of God's service. He participated of all the sacraments, as well new as ancient.

15.] *It becometh us.*—Obedience to God in all things ought to be observed by my blood life body of woman's seed, that is worthy of imitation as an example to all who will to take up daily their banner of love, and follow my commandments and examples.

16.] *Were opened unto him.*—And John saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him. It was the spirit word Son of God, a distinct being from the body of flesh and blood from woman's nature life Adamic seed; but over that only spirit begotten body, the spirit word Son of God presided in power which was restrained, and love took full charge of the blood life body born for the last sacrifice for sin, which had been emblemized by Jewish sacrifices, and their ancestors from Abel down to the incarnation; Christ's immortal life spirit birth seed impregnation must all Adam's race partake of, if they would become like him, immortal. Like begets its like; mortals cannot beget immortals, nor thistle seeds wheat seeds, nor chaff any life whatever, nor any living, moving life without the egg from which they all germinate, becoming impregnated in God's appointed way; all nature eggs, or the soul mind spirit eggs or germs of life, unless impregnated they all rot, and produce no life whatever (John i. 33; Mark i. 10; Acts vii. 56; x. 11; Rev. xix. 11).

17.] *A voice.*—This manner of revelation by heavenly articulate voices was frequent among God's people after that prophecies ceased, whereof there are divers examples in the gospel and histories. *In whom.*—Viz., whom, in the quality of mediator, that fulfills my whole will, and satisfies my justice for men, I do perfectly accept of in him and for his sake only, for aside from his atonement there is no value in all Adam's rebel race. Isa. xl. 17: All nations are before God as nothing; and they are counted to him less than nothing and vanity.

CHAPTER IV.

1.] *Of the spirit.*—He was thus inclined by the drawing of the Holy Ghost within his will powers, that put his body in motion to go to the place spoken of (Luke iv. 1). *Tempted.*—For an exercise of his humiliation and a trial of the woman's seed blood life body intellects on soul minds holiness and righteousness, and of his victory over the devil by the holiness power thereof. And to give his church or children spirit born of his spirit word promise seed, a proof of assured victory against all the endeavors and subtleties of the evil spirit (Heb. ii. 14, 18; iv. 15). *The devil.*—A Greek word answerable to the word Satan, and signifies calumniator, as are all nicknames of persons or places, showing that all such liars who give false names, Beelzebub for Christ Jesus, Bob for Robert, Jack for John, etc., are tare seed legitimate children of their father the devil), or malignant false accuser. Zech. iii. 1: And he showed me Joshua, the high priest, standing before the angel of the Lord, and Satan standing at his right hand to resist him. 2: The Lord rebuke thee, O Satan: is not this a brand plucked out of the fire? Rev. xii. 10: the accuser of our brethren is cast down 9: The devil and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world; he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. Such enter nicknamers' liar hearts and soul minds.

2.] *Fasted.*—Feeling no want for a trial of his divine power in bearing up the woman's seed blood life body spirit begotten, with spirit food, unaided by nature life products; an hungered. When the spirit divine power let the woman's seed Adamic human nature voluntarily feel the want and discomfort, and so give occasion to the temptation of the human nature, for the spirit divine nature could not be tempted in any way whatever.

3.] *Tempter.*—The devil, who induceth and instigateth men to do evil, by using their lusts or appetites or inbred selfishness as the most urgent business to be attended to, and suggesting to the minds of all that he is permitted to approach what without reflection would seem plausible. *If thou be.*—It seems that the devil had two ends in these temptations, the one to draw from Jesus some proofs and trials of his connection with a deity, and of the mystery of his incarnation, of which he had but an obscure knowledge,

which was denied him, as miracles were to unbelievers and profane men. The other was to draw his human nature to sin, either of impatience and diffidency in his voluntary obedience, or of pride and presumption without vocation or necessity, or of rebellion against God.

4.] *Bread.*—The life of mortals is not concluded in bread and meat, but depends upon the good will and pleasure of God, for (Acts xvii. 28) in God we live, and move, and have our being. *By every.*—Viz.: not only by things appointed in nature to nourish man, but by all such things as he through his free will doth attribute such virtue unto. And likewise by his only power and will, without any means whatever.

5.] *Taketh him up.*—It seems that it was by some swift motion through the air, but without any hurt, and that by the permission of God, and of Christ himself. *The holy.*—A title given to the city of Jerusalem, by reason of God's ancient presence in his temple, and because it is a city that was consecrated to his service, the seat of the church, as also to be a sacred nature figure of the spiritual kingdom of heaven (Neh. xi. 18; Isa. xlviii. 2; Matt. xxvii. 53). *A pinnacle.*—The edge of the roof. The roof of the temple being flat according to the fashion of those times and places, there was round about it a cornice, jutting out, as well for ornament as to convey away the rain water; and there, it would seem, the devil did set the Lord; or it was upon the roof of the porch of the temple, sixty cubits high (Ezra vi. 3).

6.] *Bear thee up.*—That is, they shall take such care of thee, that no hurt shall come unto thee.

7.] *Tempt.*—Men tempt God when they forsake ordinary means lawful, to choose others according to their own fancy.

8.] *Showeth him.*—By some vision or illusion, as it appears by Luke iv. 5.

9.] *Fall down.*—So to fall down and worship the devil to-day, is such as forsake God's commandments, to honor, riches, and preferment, office to receive homage, applause from poor dying worms of dust humanity, and thereby receive of mortals titles and to obtain as to-day among politician lawyers the property of the state and government they are sent to administer for by the voters; and the devil puts the same spirit in nearly all lawyers, that he possesses himself, and that he puts in his other like children, the gamblers, and in horse racers, and party political strife to-day, and for ten years past has kept the inhabitants of the world, especially by way

of party strife deluged the United States of America, France, Spain and many other nations with fraternal death struggles, and the poor and the rich all suffer death, and taxations, sorrow and misery. Thus, in churches party sect has warred against each other, instead of being united as one army, and all their guns being trained against the foes of right doing, and not against each other; if they belong to Christ's army of light, they can if they will easily discern the devil's troops, the army of darkness, deception, lies, and frauds, who nicknames call to gratify their inward evil nature, whatever their outward professions may be. Love works no ill to his neighbor. God is love.

10.] *Get thee hence.*—Leave me; a command that the devil had to obey, for it was power divine that commanded, which, if Satan and his hosts' probation time had been closed, as it will be with time, Jesus would have said as he then will say, Depart from me. Life forever, John vi. 63.

12.] *He departed.*—He went to make his ordinary abode, and to teach publicly the way of life.

14.] *That it.*—That country which had formerly been desolated by the Assyrians (Isa. viii. 7), and grew afterwards degenerate in matters of religion, and was mixed with heathen customs and nations, was through God's sovereign mercy chosen by Christ Jesus for the place of his ordinary abode (Isa. ix. 1). To bring into it the light of life immortal grace and truth, and to give a beginning to the vocation of the Gentiles.

15.] *Galilee of the Gentiles.*—Within the confines of Palestine.

16.] *In darkness.*—Unsettled and comfortless people have now obtained knowledge light that if followed will lead them to Christ Jesus, the light of the world, spiritually the sunlight intellect spirit rays of wisdom from God who only hath immortal spirit life rays to impart by way of Christ Jesus his spirit word Son of light that no mortal being can approach unto (1 Tim. vi. 16). All unspirit born of God in Christ (John iii. 5, 6) are in spiritual darkness that ends, if pursued, in soul death. Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27: The soul that sinneth it shall die. Rev. xx. 14; xxi. 8: Which is the second death.

17.] *The kingdom.*—The gift of salvation bestowed upon poor sinners, through the mercy and goodness and loving kindness of the Father of immortal life being (Mark i. 15).

18.] *The sea.*—The Lake Gennesareth; for the Hebrews call that sea where there is a great confluence of waters.

Two brethren.—Who had been John the Baptist's disciples, and to whom Jesus had revealed himself, and now calls them to be his constant followers.

19.] *Fishers of men.*—Instruments of converting and drawing men to God, out of the sea of the world and sin darkness, and out of the abyss of death. (Gal. i. 4; v. 6; vi. 7, 8, 15.)

23.] *About.*—From place to place. *Synagogues.*—A Greek name, which signifies the particular assembly of the Jews for the exercise of piety, and the places where they were kept, distinguished from the temple of Jerusalem, where the general assembly was. *Preaching.*—Bring them the happy and joyful tidings of the coming and manifestation of the Messiah, his spiritual kingdom, in light, justice, and immortal spirit life, promised to the fathers on condition of obedience as good soldiers warring against evil sin darkness to his commands, and so long looked for. *Healing.*]—Emblem of soul restoration by way of spirit birth to life immortal; these signs and miracles were wrought for the confirmation of his doctrine.

24.] *Syria.*—Which bordered on those places.

25.] *Decapolis.*—A little province, so called because it contained ten cities, and was seated upon the confines of Palestine, going towards Syria. (Mark vii. 31.)

CHAPTER V.

3.] *The poor.*—A Hebrew phrase (Prov. xvi. 19; xxix. 23; Isa. lvii. 15) to signify the humble and meek-hearted before God, divested of all confidence in themselves, when they feel their miseries or God's visitations, opposite to the proud, presumptuous and cruel men. *Kingdom.*—Viz., they only are well prepared and qualified to receive the gospel of love, and to be members of Christ's church and kingdom in grace, and in spirit birth of his spirit life immortal seed, received by him of his spirit Father the sovereign supreme of the universe, and by this means to enter upon or into eternal life, where he reigns in glory. (Matt. xviii. 3; xix. 14; xiii. 37, 38; John ii. 5, 6.)

4.] *That mourn.*—That is, by a lively displeasure for their sins, a voluntary mortification, or by an humble patience in bereavement visitations and trials. (Ps. xxxiv. 18.)

5.] *The meek.*—Namely, those who are willing to suffer all things,—insulting, oppressive, ungenerous,—rather than revenge themselves. *Shall inherit.*—They shall be re-established in the right which Adam had before the fall by sin, disobedience, and rebellion against God's just and holy law infallible; and after blood life death, which sentence was pronounced on our first parents in Eden (Gen. iii. 19); Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. Then at body death the meek spirit born of Christ's good seed, and who endure meekly to blood life's close, are then exalted over all their haughty malicious foes to a heavenly paradise that serpents and devils, and wicked unrepentant mortals, never enter. No unrepentant swearers, nor nicknamers, nor liars. Rev. xxi. 7: He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God and he shall be my son. 8: But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable (nicknamers of Jesus Beelzebub, etc.), and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars (who give false names to persons or places) shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone (like Sodom). Which is the second death; first, blood life body death; second, death of the soul (Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27).

6.] *Which do hunger.*—Viz., which are not filled and puffed up with an opinion of their own proper righteousness, and do not feed themselves with false food of D.D., and all the various titles of popes, and other titles to lord it over God's heritage: when they meekly hunger and thirst for heavenly food void of self-aggrandizement; then when they acknowledge themselves wholly destitute of true righteousness which may appear before the judgment of God; and having a lively feeling for holiness to the Lord alone, do fervently seek it as God's gift in the free pardon of their sins, by virtue of the perfect righteousness and satisfaction of Christ, which is imputed to them, and is the true begotten of Christ good seed spirit born evangelical righteousness (Rom. iii. 22, 26), which is the cause of their sanctification and new obedience.

7.] *The merciful.*—Which esteem other men's afflictions as their own; and not award them an endless life of hell fire torture, while they alone are happy in heaven and not praying that God should withdraw all life from all his foes in a moment, at the last

day of probation time, as the word of God mercifully hath promised. Obad. 16: They shall be as if they had not been.

Mal. iv. 1: Behold, the day cometh that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble. And the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch.

Num. x. 20: The Lord said, I have pardoned, according to thy word; but as truly as I live, all the earth shall be filled with the glory of the Lord. The Jews should no longer be exclusively favored of God above other nations of the earth. Num. xvi. 20: And the Lord spake unto Moses and Aaron, saying, Separate yourselves from among this congregation, that I may consume them in a moment. Deut. iv. 23: Take heed to yourselves lest ye forget the covenant of the Lord your God, which he made with you, and make you a graven image, or the likeness of any thing. 24: For the Lord thy God is a consuming fire. It does not take God forever to annihilate the wicked, but one moment ends the life of his foes. For in God all live, move, and have a being; when probation ends they are consumed in a moment; out of God's sustaining hand all must die. Heb. ii. 14; xii. 29: Our God is a consuming fire: that cannot be quenched.

8.] *The pure.*—The holy, sanctified, righteous, and sincere, not spotted with the love of sin, some predominating vice, malice, and hypocrisy. *Shall see.*—Shall be admitted to the immediate presence and perfect fruition of God's glory, which will appear and be communicated full and openly in the kingdom of heaven: opposite to the small and obscure participation which believers have in his grace in this world by faith which apprehendeth things absent and to come (1 Cor. xiii. 12; 2 Cor. v. 7; 1 John iii. 2).

9.] *Peacemakers.*—Viz., which endeavor and study to preserve peace, and suppress strife and dissension. *The children.*—Viz., because he is the God of peace, not war makers.

10.] *For righteousness' sake.*—Viz., for the love and defense of goodness and right, and chiefly for God's righteous cause, his truth, glory, and pure service. *The kingdom.*—Viz., for a reward of their labors, and crown of their fights of faith, according to God's free promise.

11.] *All manner of evil.*—Nicknames, lies, slanders, and all the false accusations that their own evil nature bubbles up from unclean devils within them as children of the devil, warring against you a child of God by way of spirit birth, of God's immortal life

seed in Christ Jesus, sown by him by way of gospel truth promises on conditioned faith belief in his truth eternal grace promises of immortal life of love and peace. *Evil against you falsely.*—The confirmed debauched drunkard and liar, and prostitute, when down in filth of debauchery sin of the lowest dregs of human vice filth lies and corruption, are not sensitive to degradation by nicknames, drugged and dead in trespasses and sins, their feelings are callous; the dead man feels no pain at the slanderer's word on his soul mind intellects dead, nor on his dead body. But the holy pure immortal life being born of God's quickening life eternal, somewhat like the exalted Son of God, who is the spirit word of Almighty God's creation power, in time's creation of suns and systems of worlds, how aggrieved must he have felt while on a pure mission of love, to be reviled by the nickname Beelzebub. And all nicknamers hurt the feelings of those they nickname. and a printer that puts Jack, Dick, Harry, etc., as the nick opprobrious with devil, familiarity of the lowest slums of vice, ought to be imprisoned, to keep them as lepers, away from all decent persons. To the nicknamed they are as disgusting (if he or she nicknamed is pure in associations) as a dead horse, or skunk, comparatively.

13.] *Ye are.*—Words directed to the apostles and ministers of Christ and all the spirit born holy sanctified children of God, by way of Christ's good seed. The meaning is that the masses of Adam's rebel seed on earth are servants of the devil, and like him liars, and choose darkness rather than light, because their deeds are evil. The Christian holy loves the truth, and therefore believes God's Scripture truths, and proclaims them to the dying seed of sin lust and tare seed children of the devil or evil. The incorrigible wicked man or woman is a devil in human form; the same as Jesus was the son of God in human form, save his body was spirit begotten of God's promise word in Eden, that woman's seed (egg), in fullness of appointed time, should develop a human body form similar to Adam's lust seed race, that by way of spirit God Almighty alliance seed power, should bruise the serpent's head (Gen. iii. 15; Heb. ii. 14). And the apostles and ministers, if they or any one spirit born of Christ's seed should lose love to God, and truth savor, they then like other unrepentant wicked mortals on earth are as worthless earthy matter, void of immortal life and truth.

14.] *Ye are the light.*—A continuation of the same subject-

matter, in preaching the gospel truths intellectual light, in the worlds darkness of intellects that were spiritually dead in trespasses and sins, who like the drunkards are bundles of nature habits adhered to by way of vicious habits, appetites, and pleasure in doing evil, as it were scratching their itching evil nature appetite of intellectual attainments, by slandering their fellow-beings by falsely accusing them of doing wrong, when truth unearthed would show them liars; all nicknamers, and blasphemers, and liars, have a mean evil nature, void of pure holy light, of truth, holiness, love, that speaketh not nor even thinketh evil (1 Cor. xiii. 5); all other professors of religion, be they pope or priest, are but in truth in all they say as the sound of brass in value on earth; the good and evil in such persons is manifest to correct intellect vision, as a city on a hill to mortal sight. Thus a false unscriptural creed taught by pope or preacher is a mockery to God, and their false creeds becomes their mind habits that like the drunkard intoxicates their soul minds.

16.] *Your light*.—You spirit born children of Christ's good seed of life immortal, should by your lives and conversations give to all intellectual truth light as to your experimental knowledge of the narrow way that leads to immortal life (1 Cor. xiv. 25). Romans viii. 9: But ye are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be that the spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the (love to God supreme, and to their fellow-man as themselves the) spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

17.] *To destroy*.—To cause them to be thought false or unprofitable, to propound a doctrine contrary to them. *To fulfill*.—Observing the law in all points myself, and bringing to pass all that was foretold by the prophets, and putting in force the right of the law, viz., to require a perfect obedience and its promise, which is to give life to them that fulfill it, and is effected in me alone for all my church; and causing by way of faith in me by my spirit of regeneration, which I have gotten, and do communicate to all believers, the law to be by them voluntarily observed in its spiritual sense, though not in an absolute perfection in this blood life body, that possesses no self-immortality.

18.] *Till heaven*.—A proverbial kind of speech, as much as to say, never while the world lasts, Job xiv. 12; Ps. lxxii. 5. *One jot or one tittle*.—Or one iota, that is, a Greek letter importing as much as "i," in Latin. *All be fulfilled*.—Viz., till God's will revealed in his word be most perfectly fulfilled (Isa. xl. 8; Rom. iii. 31).

19.] *Whosoever therefore.*—He reproveth the Pharisees' false doctrine, who made a difference in God's commandments, as if some were great, and others small, the transgression of which should not be of so great moment (Matt. xxii. 36); and sheweth that they have all the same character of divine authority; and that they all bind equally, though the degrees of matter be diverse. *Shall be called.*—Though he retain the good foundation of the faith, yet he shall lose much of God's approbation, and of the good esteem of true believers in the renewed state of my church by the gospel light (1 Cor. iii. 15). He opposeth this to the scribes and Pharisee dignities and reputation, who attributed unto themselves those arbitrary definitions of cases of conscience. Those that teach dust body resurrection, mocking God as a God of dead rotten bodies (Luke xx. 38: For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living), and also mocking God by perverting plain parables, and wholly discarding plain statute laws of God, fully showing that all his foes he will utterly consume in a moment. Num. xvi. 21; Mal. iv. 1; Obad. 16: They shall be as if they had not been. Ps. xxxvii. 10: For yet a little while, and the wicked shall not be. 20: Into smoke shall they consume away. Ps. civ. 35: Let the wicked be no more. Ps. cvi. 18; cxlv. 20: All the wicked will God destroy (Isa. v. 24).

20.] *The righteousness.*—Which was all set upon vain ceremonies, arbitrary disciplines, false shows, and dead works, without God's spirit. *Enter.*—Viz., you shall not be true members of my spiritual kingdom which I have established in my church, nor attain to the kingdom of heavenly glory.

21.] *That it was said.*—In the text of the law by Moses, Thou shalt not kill. And then afterwards in the gloss which hath been added thereto by the doctors, which came after, according to their own carnal meaning. And did not direct them to God and his justice; and they set all the observation of the law in an outside external and hypocritical discipline, without any regard of God, inward piety, or righteousness of heart toward him, or dread of his judgments. *The judgment.*—The sentence and punishment of twenty-three judges, who had the cognizance of all criminal causes among the Jews.

22.] *But I.*—Christ doth not bring up a new meaning of the law, but re-establisheth the only internal and spiritual meaning, which is original and eternal, and was forgotten and unknown (Rom. vii. 7). *Whosoever.*—To show that the very first motions

of sin are deadly in the rigor of God's law, though there be some diversity in degrees of punishment, he makes use of the divers degrees of capital judgments which were in use among the Jews, and by judgment he means that of the twenty-three judges which had the cognizance of ordinary crimes; by the consistory, that of the (seventy-one) judges who had the cognizance of crimes of a higher degree, which concerned the public, as a false prophet, of a high priest, of an apostasy, or of the like cases; and by hell fire, or Gehenna, he means the great anathema, by which malefactor, besides his corporal death, was accursed in remembrance as long as the crimes wickedness smoke came in view of memory. *Exod. xxii. 20*: He that sacrificeth unto any god save unto the Lord only (Lord God), he shall be utterly destroyed (annihilated). *Without a cause.*—Viz., that may be approved in God's judgment. *Raca.*—A Syriac word, which signifieth void of understanding, witless, a fool. *Hell fire.*—The Gehenna of fire: a Hebrew word, which signifieth the valley of Hinnom, which was a place near Jerusalem, where idolaters did burn their children to Moloch, their heathen idol humbug; whereupon by reason of the cruelty of this idolatry the same name was attributed to hell, which means the grave, or to cover from sight, by consuming in a moment. *Num. xvi. 27*; *2 Kings xxiii. 10*; *Isa. xxiii. 10*; *v. 24*: Therefore as fire devoureth the stubble (*Mal. iv. 1*), and the flame consumeth the chaff (*Matt. iii. 12*), so the root of the wicked shall be rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust. Because they have cast away the laws of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel. *Jer. vii. 31*: And they have built the high places of Tophet, which is the valley of the son of Hinnom, to burn their sons and daughters in the fire; which I commanded them not, neither came into the heart of the Lord (such wickedness). Cruelty to animals laws were not then the governing national laws of Jerusalem nor the Jews. And at this, near the close of the nineteenth century, and the close of the twentieth, and last century that is to be shortened as the end of Gentile dispensation; and then opens soon a new millennial dawn, when the righteous shall govern the earth, or near at hand may be the closing hour of earth's funeral pile, which is already kindled and mutters with pent-up lava, to burst forth and consume the earth, its waters, and atmosphere. *Luke xvii. 26*: As it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. *28*: Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot. *29*: The

same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone out of heaven, and destroyed (annihilated) them all. Deut. iv. 24: The Lord our God is a consuming fire. Heb. xii. 29: Our God is a consuming fire. Nothing can stay or quench his consuming of the incorrigibly wicked, the devil, his angels, and tare seed children, and fallen angels, and all life in rebellion against God, in a moment, at the close of time. Num. xvi. 21: The punishment lasts forever and is everlasting; like the hung murderer, dead, they never again return to life in any form after the last second soul death, at time's close. 1 Cor. xv. 25: For Christ Jesus must reign till he hath put all enemies under his feet. 26: The last (there can be no more left alive) enemy that shall be destroyed is death. 28: That God may be all in all (then alive in any form). The eternal hell fire torturers should have a Bergh of mercy against cruelty to animals in their ranks to pray for their enemies' annihilation, instead of a pagan myth of popery traditions, brought down from the dark ages of popish reign of tortures, and burnings of the real saints of God in the fagot bonfires of the devil's preachers, who worshiped a devil god like themselves, that took delight in torturing helpless mortals after they had burned their bodies, to resurrect by supernatural power the same ashes, and elements, and roast it in torture, keeping the atom worthless dust, even rotten, quivering in hell fire torture eternally—for what? Not reform. Not to purify. Not for the satisfaction of seeing them writhe in pain. Then, maddened myth doctored popish tradition preacher, what for, this resurrection of wicked mortals after they are once dead, and who raises them? Not Christ Jesus, for he clearly says (John vi. 40), Ye will not come to me, that ye might have life. What is their resurrection? Isa. v. 24: Their root shall be rottenness. Dan. xii. 26 (in the Hebrew): A resurrection of rottenness (translated shame and contempt). Whence came the false myth doctrine of an endless hell fire torture? Not from God nor his Scripture truths; but from popery, paganism, by way of traditions of men from Martin Luther, the reformer, previously a Roman Catholic preacher of that church for many years, head of the Lutheran and Dutch Reformed Churches. John Calvin also, of blessed memory, the founder of the doctrines taught in the various Presbyterian, Congregational, Baptist and other churches; also previously Calvin was a faithful Roman Catholic preacher. Whence came the Episcopal, or Church of England? Henry

VIII., whom the pope crowned Defender of the Roman Catholic faith, becoming soon after offended at the pope's orders regarding his wife, he organized an opposition church to the pope, to show he was king of England. Thence John Wesley, an Episcopal preacher, organized the Methodist Episcopal Church of blessed memory. Experimental spirit birth no doubt many received in all those reformed churches, and many of them are to-day in heaven, in spirit bodies glorified like Christ's, resurrected by him at blood life death of their nature bodies. But sad misfortune followed from all those reformers, by way of tradition creeds of men, the mythy rotten body resurrections, and endless hell fire tortures of the wicked. Such pagan creeds from the darkest ages of murdering Romish priests and their satellites, tortures by fire of the children of God as heretics, should now, henceforth and forever, be banished from all but Satan's churches. It looks like his manufactured creed to mock the sovereign God Almighty of the universe, who only hath immortality, and dwells in spirit light unapproachable by devils or mortals unspirit born of Christ's spirit life eternal seed. Such only can become like God, immortal. Catholics would make endless hell fire homes for Protestants, and Protestants for Roman Catholics.

23.] *Therefore.*—Seeing the offense is so great before God, we ought at once to desire pardon from him, which cannot be obtained but by due satisfaction to our neighbor. *Ought.*—Any cause of offense for any injury he hath received; truthfully, not false accusations.

24.] *And go.*—To show that men's wrath and hatred are so displeasing to God that he disalloweth of any service done to him by any that are in such an evil disposition. See Job xlii. 8; 1 Peter iii. 7.

25.] *Agree.*—As one that hath offended another doth very wisely to make a friendly compromise for the injury, giving some reasonable satisfaction before the judge gives his sentence, seeing that afterwards he should be forced to pay what he hath amerced without any remission. Thus can you mortals make an end of your controversies, whilst you are in the world in blood life probation, before God doth give his irrevocable sentence against the obdurate offender of death that hath no life quickening Saviour.

26.] *Till thou hast.*—Viz., forever; for man hath not wherewith to give satisfaction to God's justice. *Uttermost farthing.*—It was anciently a piece of small value, as if we should say now a mite; till thou hast paid the utmost mite. He being worthless could not

pay, and therefore must have ever remained in prison. The utmost mite of life is clearly meant. The sin soul dies. Ezek. xviii. 4: The soul that sinneth, it shall die: 20, 24, 27. By repentance before blood life probation time dies, they save their soul alive. The person Christ speaks of is one unrepentant (Mal. iv. 1).

28.] *Already*.—Before God he is guilty thereof, as if he had committed it; for his soul is defiled, though his body be not.

29.] *Right eye*.—There is nothing so precious to which God's righteousness ought not to be preferred. *Offend thee*.—Do entice thee by its looks to offend thee. *Pluck it out*.—This must be understood by way of comparison; thus, thou hadst better pluck it out than be thereby induced to offend God, and be in danger of losing thy soul life; therefore seeing there is nothing more dear to thee than thine eyes, mortify thine old nature lusts and other sinful desires, place thy affections on heaven, obey God's commands and thereby save thy soul alive through Christ.

30.] *Thy right hand*.—By some kind of touch, which may provoke thee to call thy neighbor by opprobrious appellations, as false nicknames which the devil will suggest to the weak minds drugged with pride or self desire of exaltation, by attempts to lower the standing of a good-natured neighbor; by calling them by false names, claiming the slimy low filthy familiarity of degradation as excuse; because the vicious nickname each other, they also would be familiar with sin. The same devil excuse made by printers and church members, who serve self and Satan; that fraternal familiarity is all they feel when they call the bosom friend and baptizer of our Messiah Christ Jesus, the beloved John, Jack, and Robert's truthful name by a liar's false opprobrious appellation, Bob, which Webster's Unabridged Dictionary says is a mason's guide in building a wall of a house, or a jerking motion, etc. Not a name of a person: calling Henry, Harry; Richard, Dick; and all such mean nicknames given forth from devils within nicknamers, is of the same liar stock that called Jesus Beelzebub (Matt. x. 25; xii. 24; Mark iii. 22; Luke xi. 15). All false names of persons or places shows the would-be giver of them to be truthfully a liar and a thief; they would steal the truthful name of person or place, and donate a liar name, which should ever be refused and returned at once to the giver (Prov. xxvi. 7, 8, 9). Lustful concupiscence or theft, all vehement affections and passionate motions: which things ought to be suppressed and cut off, and silenced forever.

31.] *Let him give her.*—This law doth not permit nor approve of divorces made without just cause, but they being already of a long time in use among the people, God tolerating or taking no notice of them, had in some manner set down a rule for them, providing for the credit of the women which were put away by this writing, which did clear them from the crime of adultery, and set them at liberty, that the husband breaking the bonds of marriage on his side, the poor woman on her side might be free to marry again (Jer. iii. 1). God who only hath immortality by way of Christ Jesus impregnates the soul mind, or spirit egg, formed by way of the union of the heart, the life chit of blood life, and which pulsates blood life by way of the union with the lung inflations of God's imparted breath life; both of which pulsations of blood life and inflation of breath life inseparably united to prolong body life, without the aid of the mortal's will power, which in all other matters appertaining to body life on earth has full control of all the actions of the body life, the mind germ spirit intellect egg conceives good or evil from inbred habits and surroundings, and their character is formed thereby; but like the sun's rays of light on earth, the setting sun is an emblem of mortals in a state of Adamic seed nature life; the sun's light rays withdrawn leaves night's darkness, emblem of death, which inevitably ensues when blood life's inflations and pulsations set forever in death of nature life. To prolong life intellect soul mind, the will power of choice must receive a spirit impregnation from a spirit being who has the immortal holy life eternal love pulsating in his spirit body immortal; and none but God being self-existent, from eternity past, and for eternity to come, that life power and source of all life which he hath power and doth impart by way of his spirit word son Christ the spirit word creation power, veiled by way of a love impartation to the spirit word promise made in Eden (Gen. iii. 15) that the woman seed should bruise the serpent's head, that word then uttered impregnated in the fullness of time the nature seed egg of nature Adamic in the Virgin Mary, and that body, holy thereby, became allied to Adam's race, and was called Jesus whose blood life was offered as an atonement to justice omnipotent of God his Father, to redeem from death, by way of the blood, the soul minds of believers of gospel grace truth, sentenced to death (Gen. iii. 19-24), and under the sheriff Satan, all who would repent by way of the use of their will powers wholly under the control of choice of each mature seed of Adamic

lust sin begotten mortals; such alone who receive Christ's spirit life immortal, thereby become immortal, and their spirit born new creature life pulsates love to God supreme, and to their neighbors award the same as they ask for themselves; no others are or can be immortal. Satan's tare children as likewise himself are consumed with earth, which is the kindled funeral pile of all unholy when time's probation ends, and creation of probation beings ends.

32.] *Causeth her.*—Viz., is guilty of unjust dissolution of the marriage, and the only cause of copulation, which without this his illicit separation could not be lawful; and therefore is imputed as adultery to him, but not to the woman nor to her second husband. *That is divorced.*—It is here to be understood, except it be in case of adultery.

33.] *Forswear.*—The Pharisees had falsified the meaning of this law two ways: First, in restraining it to false oaths, sworn to harm other men, without comprehending vain and frivolous oaths. Secondly, by reputed such for indifferent, and as no oaths, which were not conceived in God's name, but were sworn by creatures (Matt. xxiii. 16, 18). *Unto the Lord.*—Either directly in such things as thou hast promised thy neighbor in his name. Not sworn officials to the Pope of Rome or English Church.

34.] *Not at all.*—Seeing that an oath is supposed to be a means and a help to obtain truth and to proof appointed by God and oftentimes very necessary, we are rather inclined to restrain this commandment of Christ's to voluntary oaths, not required by them who have authority. But I fully believe justice would be equally as secure by making the false answer before a judge, yes or no, as an oath. Vain, frivolous, vicious, and ill-conceived, and blasphemous; seeing those things which are written here have a relation to such oaths. *By heaven.*—By way of assertion, as in saying, so sure as there is a heaven, or as sure as there is a heaven, or by way of execration,—let heaven blast me, the earth abyss me, if it be otherwise than I say. *For it is.*—This reason doth prove the two evils of such oaths: namely, the impiety of the form, making use of the creature in them, instead of God alone, and the profaneness in the aim and intent, swearing scoffingly, without truth or reverence.

36.] *By thy head.*—Viz., affirming anything as engaging thy head upon it, which thou dost subject to all misfortunes if thou liest, or by saying, as true as my head is dear to me. *Because thou.*—Thine head is not for thee to engage it; or subject it by

such oaths or such chances as thou pleasest; as oaths of secrecy imparted by unauthorized persons.

37.] *But let.*—Namely, let your sayings be averred by a constant, plain, and uniform truth, and not by unlawful oaths. *Is more.*—Beyond the simplicity of the words, whether a thing to be affirmed or denied. *Of evil.*—Namely, from the devil, as unnecessary oaths which men do add, from their corrupted nature, and wicked custom or habit.

38.] *Ye have heard.*—Christ condemns the Pharisees' false expositions, who did extend the laws of equalizing and justly proportioning public punishments judicially inflicted to the suffering of private revenges.

39.] *Resist not evil.*—Do not requite evil for evil, overcome evil by doing good, do not work your own revenges. *Turn to him.*—Rather than to transgress the laws of charity and Christian patience, suffer a double injury.

40.] *Sue thee at the law.*—Namely, by violence, or by an unlawful or fraudulent plea. The meaning is, Do thou use no violence nor interchangeable fraud; lawyers, as a whole, have ever been more damage to the body politic than benefit. They are generally inclined to evil from their youth, and few of them have affection for their neighbors, parents, or kindred. All nations on earth, governed by laws of men's manufacture, never have perfect laws. Though year after year they assemble, there are ever among the legislators, lawyers who shut out all courts of conciliation from the statute-books, or make them useless by interpolations. The lawyers go to school often by periling the homestead of their parents to raise money, and from school to a law office to study the past labors of tricky lawyers; and judges, made of lawyers, decide not in equity and justice alone, like God's law, but take the precedent decision for a guide. Whether thus decided in equity, or by bribery, fraud, or ignorance, the title judge covers all. The man robbed, or the thief or murderer, if they pay the lawyer a retaining fee, have thereby hired a man to defend the thief or murderer with equal or more eloquence than they use to defend the innocent from the murderer or plunderer. Lawyers plan, when school students, that they will seek office in state or government when they become lawyers, and curse the government with wars and taxations; they make common plunder of public moneys under various fraudulent false pretenses. In 1873 the Congress of the United States of America voted themselves their

pay over again for two years. Forty-eight lawyers in the Senate, one hundred and fifteen lawyers in the lower house, which they call necessary to obtain men of talent to obtain a large salary, mileage, books, and stationery, and maps; and even in the United States of America Congress, garden seeds, etc., all free to them, but at the expense of all tax-payers; thereby covert extortion robbery is covered by the lawyer tricks of their trade; and for the past score of years Satan, their patron saint, as fable tradition history hands it down from the dark ages, is drawing the nations back to the corruptions and anarchy of the dark ages' dark deeds. Railroads are chartered, with millions of acres of government lands thrown in, and senators and congressmen lawyers often become very wealthy. The words of many lawyers are like Satan's, through the serpent to Eve in Eden, very flattering but utterly void of truth; they will promise to make a motion, and free a client from a would-be swindler for a trifle of a score of dollars, and mulct the client in many times the amount demanded by the robber, and then sue the client for ten times the amount the lawyer agreed to free the client from the swindler, and call it counsel fee; when in truth the lawyer's counsel was worse than worthless. Lawyers, as a whole, know little of the details or practical details of business life; and as legislators, they so muddle the laws that they themselves cannot understand them; the last United States of America Congress had in the Senate some three-quarters of the representation there present, and in the House of Congress sixty-five lawyers out of each hundred representatives. That readily accounts for their tricks on the people of the Southern States. Luke xi. 46: And Jesus said, Woe unto you also, ye lawyers! for ye load men with burdens grievous to be borne, and you, yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. The only amendment the old Constitution of the United States of America Government required, was, that each class of people in the Union should be represented in State and Congressional legislation according to their numbers,—farmers, mechanics, merchants, etc.

41.] *Shall compel thee.*—According to the custom of those days: by which it was lawful for one that went about public affairs which required haste to force any that he met upon the way to go along with him, to aid and assist him (Matt. xxvii. 32).

42.] *Borrow of thee.*—Luke vi. 34.

43.] *And hate.*—This was the false gloss of the Jewish doctors, who did restrain the word neighbor to kinsfolks, friends, and

acquaintances only. (Luke x. 29). Contrary to the true meaning of the law, set down in Exod. xxiii. 5; Lev. xix. 17, 18; Job xxxi. 29.

44.] *I say unto you.*—Viz., I declare unto you according to the true intent and meaning of the Scriptures given by Moses.

45.] *Ye may be.*—That ye may indeed show yourselves to be such, imitating God's natural goodness.

46.] *If ye love.*—That charity which imitates God's, and is by him rewarded, is not that natural inclination to love those that love us, because that God's charity extends itself even to his enemies; but the spiritual love, to love as he first loved us, and all those he commands us to bestow charity upon, without any respect to ourselves. *The publicans.*—Men which were infamous and execrable among the Jews, not only for their avarice and extortions, but especially because they were instruments of the Romans' tyranny upon the Jews.

47.] *Your brethren.*—Others your friends. *More than others.*—Viz., more than the publicans, and other sects of the Jews.

48.] *Be ye.*—Imitate God in his mercy; his rain and sunlight fall alike on the evil and the good on earth, and in regard to us and our salvation, is the fullness of his virtues; and thereon endeavor to attain to perfection (Eph. iv. 13; Phil. iii. 12).

CHAPTER VI.

1.] *Your alms.*—Other texts say righteousness: viz., every good work, especially in charity and liberality towards the poor (Deut. xxiv. 13; Ps. cxii. 9; Dan. iv. 27). *To be seen.*—That is, through ambition vain glory to be honored of them. *Otherwise.*—For the work which of itself is good is corrupted by the evil of affecting glory from men, instead of pure intent to perform the will of God to his honor; all mortals are by nature selfish, and each loves self best.

2.] *Trumpet.*—Viz., covet not that men should know it, to the end that thou mayst be honored for it. *Their reward.*—Having aspired only to this vain glory, from poor dependent mortals of dust, let them content themselves therewith, and not hope for additional reward from God.

3.] *Let not.*—A proverbial kind of speech, to signify a more concealed secret. Or, be content that God looks upon thee, and esteems thee, without puffing thyself up with foolish vain glory; great I and little u: the vilest cheats and swindlers that overreach the poor man with one talent, and get him to agree to a trade which he cannot perform, and the defrauder obtains all his hard earned means on hand, and soon turns the poor fellow-mortal's family into the street penniless; and then gives the avails of such robberies of the poor to educate the sons of the rich, by large donations to build colleges, and receive applause of men; such glory of men, void of holiness, may be yearly seen in State colleges. How much more noble would it be to return it to the poor!

4.] *Openly.*—In the clear light of the spiritual resurrection of the just.

5.] *And when thou prayest.*—What is availing prayer? it is the truthful deep desire of the heart, mind, and will of the mortals that feel truly their utter childlike helplessness, and in their secret contemplation of their state of destitution and brevity of nature existence, they cry in secret to God who only hath immortal life to bestow, that he would be pleased to create within them a clean heart, and renew a right spirit within them.

6.] *Thy closet.*—Withdraw thyself privately, and be content that thou hast God for thy witness; he alone through Christ can impregnate your soul mind with immortal spirit life seed, and light your mind with intellectual light eternal.

7.] *Use not vain.*—All repetitions are utterly useless, and long prayers as heathen orgies.

8.] *Before ye ask.*—Open thy deep heartfelt desires for immortal spirit life to God in secret communion, without vocal utterance, at the altar of prayer, that mortals may see thy humble sincerity.

9.] *Pray ye.*—Retain ye always the substance of this brief formula, and restrain all your prayers into conformity with these heads, and use the childlike simplicity and dependence, and sober brevity of it; pray for only those things then needed.

10.] *Thy kingdom.*—Establish thy Son's spiritual kingdom in the world by thy word and spirit, and destroy utterly annihilate the devil and all his rebel hosts, sin and death. *In earth.*—As willingly and faithfully by mortals spirit born of Christ's good spirit love life eternal seed, as it is in heaven by angels.

11.] *Give us.*—Please bestow on us, thy spirit born children, and all who truthfully seek with all their hearts, and will, and mind, to become thy spirit children, spiritual food from heaven, for it is not a product of earth. Like the heavenly manna (Exod. xvi. 16, 19.)

12.] *Our debts.*—Our offenses against thee (Luke xi. 4), for which we owe a death by thy judgment. *As we.*—Not thereby to give an example for God to return unto us, because he set us the example (1 John iv. 10; Eph. iv. 32; Gal. iii. 13), nor to ground our prayers upon the merits of our works (Dan. ix. 18), but to conform to God's conditions of pardon if we purpose to be pardoned ourselves, and to show our good conscience to God; we by faith in God's conditional promises are firmer in faith every time we clearly receive answers to our prayers affirmatively, which we are sure to do if we seek God through Christ aided by the Holy Ghost's infinite mercy, with all our heart, not part of it; viz.: by partial belief experiment, like a druggist clerk, without knowledge, experimenting with unknown drugs, and mixing arsenic with aloes and ginger, etc., to make a pill; thus the sinner who is ignorant of God's spirit life ways must be careful not to put his or her lust poison or self-exaltation, esteem, or personal merit of any kind in our prayers to God, but ever humble, helpless, and wholly dependent on God the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, as the infant child is dependent on its parents and friends for nature body life food. Joel ii. 13: Rend your heart, not your garments. Jer. xxix. 13; Acts viii. 37: If thou believest with all thy heart.

13.] *Lead us not.*—Please keep us from the broad way to death temptations, by leading us in life's narrow way of holiness and truthful love; please keep us from all provocations and desire to sin, and suppress in us all manner of inclination to evil; give us the light, safeguard, and maintenance of thy spirit rays of light life immortal, and please never withhold thy protecting care from us, for we are helpless as infants without thy aid, although we are mature men and women in earthly matter. Please give us not up into the devil's hand, leave us not to his wicked inducements; please leave us not to the lust impulses of inbred lust sin, and covetous, envious, and malicious desires; keep us, please, ever filled with heavenly light, wisdom, knowledge, and holy desires, filled with the spirit love of Christ's infinite love, and the Holy Ghost infinite mercy, each filled with God the Father's infinite goodness, love, and mercy, and light life immortal. *Amen.*—So be it, or so it is: a Hebrew word used at the end of prayers, to signify the

fervent desire to obtain that which a person prayeth for, or to testify their truth and sincerity.

14.] *For if.*—This hath an especial relation to verse 12. This cannot be understood as of the general remission of sins, in respect to the everlasting judgment, which hath no other cause or ground before God but Christ's satisfaction by way of an impartation of his love life power developed in the sacrificial atonement body spirit begotten by the spirit life begetting power word spoken to Satan in his servant the serpent, that woman's seed in the fullness of the then appointed time should by way of that woman's seed egg of nature impregnated by the word then spoken, bruise the serpent's head power of death, to all Adam's sin lust begotten race; the human body divinely begotten of Jesus as aforesaid made to God's infinite justice a pure sinless sacrifice of blood life, that Satan was not as sheriff executioner permitted to slay; and therefore the body blood life was permitted to be made a full atonement for all souls spirit born of Christ's spirit word impregnating seed, which impregnated with immortal life light the soul spirit egg mind intellect, which under the brooding of the holy dove infinite mercy developed, and still develops, and will to the close of time, new creatures in Christ Jesus (Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5, 6; iv. 24; 2 Cor. v. 17. Like begets its like, is God's law supreme, John vi. 63. Forgiveness of trespasses against us is the result following spirit birth of Christ's spirit life immortal seed birth, not the cause (Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15; John xv. 5). Without me ye can do nothing to merit salvation: James v. 20; 1 Pet. iv. 8.

15.] *But if ye.*—Your souls shall surely die, like your nature blood life body, unless you have Christ's forgiving spirit, which is the result of love, that all immortal beings pulsate; hatred pulsation in the soul's intellect mind soon produces death of soul. God's displeasure, called anger, endureth but a moment (Ps. xxx. 5). Num. xvi. 21: That I may consume them (the wicked) in a moment. A very different doctrine from that promulgated by those devils in human form that burnt at the stake the children of God, calling them heretics, and taught that God's anger endured forever with the wicked, and he would raise to life again those bodies they had burned, and torture them forever in an endless hell fire and brimstone torture, thereby showing that the God they worshiped was like the pagan wooden gods, infinitely magnified in stupidity and like themselves devils, instead of a God of holiness, love, whose mercy endureth forever, and whose anger

is but for a moment. Eccles. vii. 9: Anger resteth in the bosom of fools. Such worship a god like themselves.

16.] *Of a sad.*—By a hypocritical and ambitious affectation, or assimilated change to be in them. *Disfigure.*—They use art in making themselves look pale and wan; and strain at the gnat flowers on the poor girl's bonnet, or figures worked on their lace veils by their own hands, and the flowers are made by poor girls like themselves to obtain bread; and though the outlay cost of the poor girl's dress is not a tenth of the cost of the preacher's or his wife's, the preacher swallows the selfish camel's hair shawl and denounces with great threatening anathemas the gnat. Sin is the intentional violation of God's law of affection as regards dress, as in all other sins. If the poor girl's affections were centered in the posy, that would be a childish folly sin; but the mature swallowers of camel's hair shawls are those that denounce all who do not imitate them, instead of the pure intent to perform the will of God to his honor.

17.] *Anoint.*—Make no outward show of fasting by hypocrisy or vain glory, but rather seem to do the contrary. It is a custom among the Eastern people to anoint their heads and wash their faces, whereby to appear fresh and cheerful; so Christ teacheth us thereby wholly to avoid vain shows and ostentation. This ought to be understood of private fasts: for in public fasts God appointed there should be outward shows of repentance and humiliation, to further the repentance of the heart, and for the common edification.

18.] *Not unto men.*—Like secret prayer, there is no self-eulogy, or ocular applause from others. But wholly unto God the spirit Father of all spirit born immortal life.

19.] *Lay not up.*—Place not your affections upon any thing earthly so as to make a god of it, be not set with a deep desire of many worldly goods; for if you abound therein, there is great danger that you will set your hearts, your trust and content upon them, which is idolatry (Eph. v. 5; Col. iii. 5; Eccles. v. 10). He that loveth silver shall not be satisfied with silver. Astor, Stewart, Vanderbilt, and all like them piling up the earthly baubles by millions are more anxious to-day to increase their wealth than they were when they were not worth a tithe of their present wealth, and the last breath pulsation moment of blood life will in a moment leave them but dust, void of life, and penniless as the poorest beggar at his death. How transient is life! each pulsation

is big with eternal realities; the last one is unknown to any that live, and often comes when least anticipated. Abraham, Job, and Joseph were wealthy men, but their affections centered in God, the real owner and creator of all wealth. Mortals are bundles of habits, good or evil. A miserly hoarding of wealth becomes a habit, and its results are like the dog in the manger: they eat not the hay themselves, neither will they let the ox eat. Such have great cares, and little happiness.

20.] *But lay up.*—Contrariwise, purchase with great fervency spiritual and heavenly goods, and endeavor to abound in such wealth in this world (doing good to the poor and needy). And to obtain by way of spirit birth new spirit immortal creature life, through Christ Jesus, that you may thereby become the heir to an eternal inheritance and boundless exhaustless riches through grace that endureth with eternal life. All earth's wealth is uninsured against the great conflagration day that hastens with rapid strides; and all earth life is sentenced to, and soon, like the fast-falling sands of the hour-glass, all life earthly is swallowed up by earth that bore its body food, and its formation that all matures from little egg seeds and cuttings in inanimate nature life; and all animate nature life first germinates in the female egg and male milt, both of which without contact soon decay and rot as excrements; when brought in contact impregnation life, they, like the seed-life of inanimate nature, expand *ad infinitum*, until the angel of God shall announce on earth the close of time. Thus earth is a graveyard of all earth life bodies and parts; hell's intense horrors are fully developed on every battlefield, where devils in men, in power as rulers, force their fellow-men and neighbors to mangle in the most horrid manner, and leave with most horrid pangs of hell earth torture and death. Devils rejoice and demons laugh. But guardian angels, and truly spirit born children of God on earth, mourn at their secret altars of prayer.

21.] *Treasure is.*—The spirit born child of God daily through secret prayer places his treasures in heaven's savings-bank, the Lord Jesus Christ, the only ark of safety that will bear safely over the sea of fire to his Father in heaven all who without reserve place themselves, earth life, and treasures, all on board.

22.] *The light.*—Even as the eyes are the light and guide of the whole body, so that if it be pure and clear the whole body is well directed; and contrariwise, if that be dim and injured, the

body is (as it were) in darkness: so if man's understanding, which is the light of the soul in all its motions, be enlightened by God's spirit, all his actions are well guided; but if it be without divine light and be darkened with carnal cares and desires, the whole intellect life is blinded thereby; the whole man lieth and goeth wandering in the darkness of ignorance and sin, and at the last soul death (Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27; Rev. xx. 14; xxi. 8). The first death of body blood life, the second death death of the soul not spirit born of Christ's good seed, single or clear.

23.] *That darkness.*—Namely, the uncleanest, beastliest, and most lustful, covetous, vicious, disordinate passions and affections of thy soul. Thy dark benighted soul is at ease in sinful indulgences, as a drugged drunkard who deliberately drinks hatred poison and drowns reason.

24.] *Can serve.*—A proverbial kind of speech, which must be understood according to the subject whereunto it is applied: that kind of service which requireth the whole endeavor, strength, and heart of man to be applied to it, and in which masters or overseers are contrary, as light and darkness, goodness, love, and mercy, and hatred, malice, revenge, falsehood, and evil natures that prefer to toil hard to do injury to their pious neighbor, to scratch their evil nature by calling their fellow-being by an opprobrious nickname, rather than loving them as themselves, mortals, rebels against God, who daily spares their mean lives and sends his early and later rains to feed them (James iv. 4; John ii. 15). *Mammon.*—A Syriac word which signifieth riches, money, lucre, as Luke xvi. 6. He mentioneth here one species for all; and that which he saith of covetousness must be understood of all wicked concupiscences of the flesh. You cannot serve God and the devil or depraved self-lusts.

25.] *Take no thought.*—He forbids not all labor and care, but only such as distempers the spirit with fear and distrust. By placing all our thoughts on fear that when the sun sets (so mortals say, though the sun never sets, but earth revolves and hides the sun from our vision), to think the light of the sun may be gone forever, or fear the frost would destroy vegetation life food, or more fully distrusting God's promises of seed time and harvest to the end of the world. The true way to act was ever to plow and sow in season in full faith. *Is not the life.*—God out of his power and goodness having granted unto man his being, which is the

greater, will not deny him the lesser, which is the preservation thereof during its probation time.

27.] *One cubit.*—All the thoughts and endeavors of mortals are vain, except God gives a blessing to it.

28.] *Why take ye thought.*—Does not your blood life heart pulsate, do not thy lungs inflate without thy thoughts' aid? in the same way by God's appointment, fixed laws, vegetation food grows, thy thoughts and distrusts avails not. Your duty is plow and sow in season, leaving events all with God where they are already, and thy thoughts of distrust avail nothing; thus also in spirit life developments, sow to the spirit of Christ by secret holy confiding prayers.

29.] *All his glory.*—The providential goodness of God extended even to beautifying nature's products, extended to the flowers of the field, is above all that man can do by the utmost extent of his riches and power, for all his splendor of gaudy show of gold and tinsel is void of life and but dead matter, like their body with God's life expanded breath from Adam withdrawn by the creator, the same as earth, with sun-rays withdrawn.

30.] *Clothe.*—The grass is clothed with life, and mortals may be clothed by way of spirit birth of faith which worketh by love through Christ with immortal spirit life.

31.] *Take no thought.*—About the body life, which is like the grass life fed by nature's earthy elements, soon ended; but take thought about your superior privilege of access to heavenly spirit life by way of Christ Jesus, who will impart life light immortal from God his Father to all who seek God with all their heart and obey his holy commands.

32.] *Seek.*—With anxious care for body blood life's food and raiment, because they have not the knowledge of God, nor of spirit birth life immortal, nor faith in his power and fatherly love, nor lively apprehension of his providence.

33.] *Seek ye.*—Desire and seek before all other things to participate by way of spirit birth of Christ's immortal spirit life seed, that you may have part in the Son of God's kingdom in obedience, holiness, and spiritual uprightness. *Righteousness.*—This word is here taken for the new birth and newness of life. *Shall be added.*—The rest are but accessory, and must come in the second place.

34.] *The morrow.*—You ought not to expect what God will dispose; which if it be to your relief, contrary to your expecta-

tion, it were folly in you to trouble yourselves in caring for that evil which will come to pass; and if it be to your affliction and punishment, what good will it do you to anticipate the sorrow of it before the time? *Sufficient.*—Each day of life on earth hath its cares, labors, and troubles; to take thought of the morrow's toothache would not lessen the pain, nor would thoughts to-day tell thereof. God's laws are fixed and unalterable, save by the same power that made them.

CHAPTER VII.

1.] *Judge not.*—He means particular evil judgments which men judge of their neighbors, without any uprightness, charity, love, truth, or authority, or real knowledge of their inward intentions, judging wholly by outside appearances, through curiosity, pride, rashness, suspicion, malice, hypocrisy, etc. *Be not.*—By God, the revenger of this usurpation of power which belongeth to him only. And oftentimes also by men with the same vice, seeing God often suffereth one man's sin to be punished by the sin of another.

2.] *Ye shall.*—In like manner that you sentence your neighbor to nicknames, your name will be stricken from the book of life. *Ye mete.*—You that pass the sentence of an endless torture of fire and brimstone upon nine-tenths of your fellow-beings, including your neighbors and children, father, mother, brothers and sisters, uncles, aunts, nephews, nieces, cousins, and friends, thereby awarding or meting a measure of punishment you would abhor that they should mete out or adjudge to you; but the worst possible punishment awaits you more surely than them, for it shall be measured to you again. If you judge, or mete out, to yourself first, the punishment you award to them, you will be nearer the correct truthful punishment awarded the wicked; you would not, after you had killed the ravenous tiger that had killed and mangled the bodies of your dearest kindred, resurrect the tiger to life, merely for the purpose of torturing it in a lake of fire and brimstone eternally, if you had the power; how infinitely less would God, whose essence is goodness, love, and mercy infinite, resurrect the dead rotten bodies of sinners incorrigible to life, merely to torture them eternally. Such mockery of Almighty God, who

quickly destroys, annihilates, by fixed statute laws all his enemies, is the worst of blasphemy of the only Being who is good without alloy, and love without dissimulation, and whose mercy endureth eternally, and whose anger is but for a moment (Ps. xxx. 5; ciii. 9; Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27). How much better, O mortal preacher judge, is God's measure meted to us all if we come short! You for yourself, if you are at last to be the sufferer, would prefer God's truth way, death of soul as well as body, than what pagan Roman popery through the dark ages meted out to God's children, viz. torture and fire death; and they worshiped a demon god like themselves, that would resurrect to life merely to prolong their torture eternally, by way of supernatural life given them, so that torture would not kill them. You, O tradition of popish priest torturer of the dark ages, mete out like them what you yourselves, were it possible, would have measured to them again; but it is life or death.

3.] *Beholdest thou.*—A proverb used among the Jews. *The mote.*—That is, why divest thou so curiously into the faults of another, yea, the very least, and perceivest not where thou coverest thine own, which are foul and filthy? Mortals unholy feel not the pain they hypocritically inflict on their fellow-beings; they do and say the evil, and falsely accuse the innocent, or those with a mere mote atom of wrong. God will be judge, not man.

4.] *The mote.*—The eternal hell fire torturer rebukes the mercy mote in me; for, says he, you let the wicked off too easy by soul death, and Satan's and his tare seed children and associates destruction, after seeking rest and finding none to the close of time; and then with earth to be consumed is not enough. Torture them eternally, says the preacher, whose tune would be quickly altered (who himself was, if not now, a greater sinner than many he condemns) to enough, if he finds himself on the left hand condemned to death; then the beam is seen of devil hatred of all who will not his false doctrines of pagan devils popery believe. Again says the hell fire torturer eternally preacher, how can we awake the dreamy devil drugged sinners, who are drunk with the poison spirit of the world's dances, lust, lies, nicknames, blasphemy, thefts, and murders, and horrible sins of various kinds, unless we threaten them with eternal hell fire and brimstone torture after body death (which none of them believe, or fear as they do immediate punishments of States prisons, and the gibbet's halter of death). No genuine conversion from sin, nor spirit born child of God, was

ever frightened into it. 2 Cor. v. 11: Knowing, therefore, the terror of the Lord, we persuade men, not frighten them with falsehoods, to lead them to embrace God's truths. I do not believe there was ever one soul saved by hell fire eternal preaching, but vast numbers lost.

5.] *First cast.*—All human beings on earth embrace natural teachings of their parents, guardians, and teachers, or preachers, as their belief, although they may not act in accordance with it: this becomes, as it were, a beam, that fills with dark false ideas their soul minds, until spirit born of Christ's good seed; traditions of men theology, however absurd and revolting to enlightened reason, and void of truth, yet they like the blind man cling to their second nature dark ideas. They regard not God's statute plain infallible laws of life and death, of soul and body; but misconstrue plain parables of Jews and Gentiles into endless hell life in fire tortures of all who are heretics to their creeds.

6.] *Give not.*—Take heed of rash judgments; but likewise use discretion, and holy spiritual judgment, in not presenting the holy and precious celestial truth, to men that are profane and openly rebellious, lest you provoke them to blasphemy and contempt, or aggravate their rage against you (1 Pet. iv. 15). Such would tell Jesus, or his disciples, mockingly, that wisdom would die with them.

7.] *Ask.*—Lift up thy soul mind by faith that worketh by love to God, through the Mediator, the Lord Jesus Christ, your heart-felt truth desires for immortal life seed impregnations of eternal truths, wisdom, knowledge, and understanding from the Lord, bearing his spirit which pulsates love life immortal; confess before men, at the church altar kneel, and seek God with all your heart, not holding back part of the price, but like the volunteer soldier go thyself to battle, put thy blood life at peril; not to fall like a dead animal, as in earthly wars of Satan's hell tortures on earth, that hath no enduring reward; but in like manner of peril, be willing to give your blood life, and all you have, in exchange to the Lord for eternal life, and an eternal spirit life crown of glory, and life unending boundless estate. *Knock.*—At mercy's door, like a poor penniless starving beggar child in sin's rags, in secret prayers.

8.] *Findeth.*—If thou seek him he will be found of thee (1 Chron. xxviii. 9). Ps. cxix. 2: Seek him with thy whole heart.

9.] *What man.*—To show that we ought to ask of God only

such things as we stand in need of, truly good. If he refuse to grant us that which we desire, judge that it is not good for him that asketh it.

10.] *A serpent.*—God will not send Satan to give spirit life food to the truly penitent seeker, but his angel.

11.] *Being evil.*—Whose natural affections are much corrupted through the ignorance and malice which sin hath brought in, whereby oftentimes you misjudge what is good for your children. And sometimes also through anger, parsimony, or some other vice, you deny them that good which they ask of you; but you never come to that unnatural extremity as to give them hurtful or deadly things instead of good.

How much more.—We ought then to rely upon God, as concerning what is good for us, and not follow our own selfish wrong desires; of all earth's monstrosities of wickedness, the church office-holders are worse than the thief office-holders of state when they are left to self and Satanic influences, as the Bishop of London of the Popish English Church that receives salary equal to the amount given the President of the United States of America, and renders no service of any value for it; thus leaving the poor church members heavily taxed on their little means of support, while lazy imbeciles, under the false pretence of working for God, like Judas, are betrayers of truth and mockers of Jesus. Such are the results of Church and State; it is but wolves in sheep's clothing, mammon and the devil in human form. God never commingles with unrighteousness: light and darkness cannot occupy one room together. God knows what is good and expedient for us; if we will obey his Scripture commands and injunctions, we will not make merchandise of the gospel.

12.] *Therefore.*—To the end that you may obtain what you ask, do unto others as you desire should in like manner and circumstances be done unto you by God and men. Use no deceit in trade, treat your fellow mortals with the same politeness and kindness that you desire to receive in kind from them; in no case while you would claim to belong to the human family, try to make yourself a devil by using hell's dialect of blasphemy, calling your fellow-beings by opprobrious appellations, nicknames to persons or places, thereby acting the part of a thief and liar: viz., by stealing or secreting their truthful names, and giving a false mean name from thy devil unclean spirit within thee, to be a familiar devil.

The law.—The true uprightness which is required by the law of God, expounded and confirmed by the prophets; and by our Lord Messiah's law of love that speaketh nor thinketh evil of good advice. Which seems to be said to oppose it to the Pharisees' vain ceremonies and observations, and to show how Christ's doctrine of love was agreeable with the law of God, being taken in its true sense.

13.] *At the strait.*—Viz., for to come to eternal happiness do not follow the way of sinful pleasure to devils, and ease of the world and the flesh, nor the great number and multitude of men. But make choice of the happy peace of mind within, though laborious profession of the gospel with its cross, not of wood, or gold, or stone; but of combating the army of darkness evil. And join thyself to the small sanctified flock of the church of Christ, by faith and imitation of good men who follow the footsteps of the Redeemer in heaven's narrow way; who are always the smallest number on earth. *And many.*—That is, the masses covet freedom to get drunk; and to be left to the sway of their own imaginations, and to gratify all their evil habits of broad way life that ends in hell, their minds filled with hallucinations, lusts and seducing habits, dance and die.

14.] *Because strait.*—Or, how strait is the holy way that leads to a holy heaven, where no sin can enter, nor the defiled by sins of evil, no liars, swearers, nicknamers, thieves, murderers, or followers of their evil nature, unregenerate vices, or habits of evil; nor the spirit of the world, nor the devil.

15.] *Of false.*—Viz., in regard to their erroneous and false doctrines, or of their disloyal and fraudulent intentions when they do utter a truth. *Sheep's clothing.*—Namely, in so fair an appearance that they cannot be distinguished, except narrowly pried into and thoroughly examined; the pope of Rome is antichrist, and a false prophet (Rev. xiii. 18, Latin tongue = 666). The pope of the Church of England, a branch of Rome by way of Henry VIII., first pope of England, with creeds little varied; pope of the Greek church, now Emperor of Russia; reformers with many Roman Catholic popish creeds of tradition and early teachings, and second nature beliefs while Roman Catholic preachers, viz., Martin Luther, at first a Roman Catholic monk and preacher, founder of the Lutheran Church, Dutch Reformed Church; John Calvin, a Roman Catholic preacher at first, founder of the creeds of the Presbyterians, Baptist, Congregational, etc., churches; John Wesley, a

Church of England preacher of the reform school, or Protestantism, and compeer of Luther and Calvin, the founder of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Calvin and Wesley dug deep in Scripture lore, and found the heavenly spirit love diamond of inestimable value, viz., experimental spirit birth of Christ's good seed (Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5; vi. 63). But all Protestants still are trammelled with popery hobbles of endless hell fire tortures in their church creeds. When all creeds are dropped that come from pagan popery traditions of men, and the plain statute laws of God's Bible alone become the Christian's chart and guide, then unity of all holy spirit born watchmen will see eye to eye. Isa. lii. 8: Thy watchmen shall see eye to eye, when the Lord shall bring again Zion.

16.] *Their fruits.*—By their doctrine, manner of teaching, spiritual efficacy in their hearts, their lives, conversations, and intentions, seeing that by some of these ways, or many of them, hypocrisy discovers and gives itself the lie. *Thistles.*—The Greek word properly signifieth the prickly plant called a star-thistle, or water caltrop. Light and darkness, love and hatred war upon earth.

17.] *Good tree.*—The spirit born children of God, by way of Christ's seed sown in their spirit egg soul minds, at spirit birth new creature life, feel first drawn by the love of Christ to him and his Father by the way of the Holy Spirit Dove. The first pulsations of the new spirit born of God is love to God and of God immortal life pulsations; next it goes out in love to win other fellow-beings to seek for like spirit love birth. Peace deep within with love abounds, though nickname devils them surround, and call their father Christ Jesus Beelzebub.

18.] *Corrupt tree.*—Corruption fruits cannot grow on a good tree; nicknamers, swearers, liars, slanderers, murderers, thieves and all evil are the fruits of the evil tree. The good tree bears love, truthful names of persons and places, and a desire to soothe the sorrows of earth by kindness to all life animate, for all have their sorrows, and are soothed by kindness and love, and made unhappy by hate, envy and revenge.

19.] *Every tree.*—Although at every stage of life from birth to death, varied are all the states of Adam's sin lust race, and although Satan's tare seed children unclean spirits live after Adamic seed life ends, if the soul mind egg is not impregnated by Christ's good seed, or the devil's tare seed (Matt. xiii. 37–40 inclusive), yet at the close of time the devil and all his associates, children, and fallen

angels that kept not their probation first estate because of rebellion sin against God's fixed laws, and every evil creature that bringeth not forth good love fruit, is hewn down and cast into the fire (Mal. iv. 1).

20.] *Know them.*—The nicknamer, swearer, liar, slanderer, etc., are well known evil fruits.

21.] *Lord, Lord.*—This is to be understood of such as serve their masters more with mouth than heart, and therein are likewise comprehended all hypocrites. *He that doeth.*—Not only he that ordereth his life and manners according to the rule of honesty, but he who also by faith receiveth the Son whom the Father hath sent, and obey his commands, not the commandments of poor silly fallible popes and men tradition creeds.

22.] *In that day.*—Namely, of the last judgment. *Prophesied.*—Taught your popery men tradition creeds, taught your doctrines (not the Lord's). Prophesying is here taken for the dispensation of doctrine, as also 1 Cor. xiv. 1. *In thy name.*—As thy servants, by thine authority and commission, by calling upon thy grace and power. *Wonderful.*—This title in the gospel is specially appropriated to the greatest and most glorious miracles.

23.] *Knew you.*—I did never accept (O pope, and whoever may be addressed) nor approve of you as my true servants. Gen. iv. 25: And Adam knew his wife again, etc. Thus Christ Jesus knew or knows every mortal soul's she spirit egg mind, in which he sows the spirit life immortal begetting of God seed, who only hath immortality. Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5, 6; vi. 63; xii. 25, 26; 1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto. Therefore Christ is mediator.

24.] *Therefore.*—Seeing the only external profession of the gospel profiteth not to everlasting salvation, learn whereupon you may build your assured hope thereof, viz., upon the inward power of it received by a lively faith, and bringing forth fruits of regeneration and new obedience, which are the twofold end and effect thereof, from whence followeth the certainty of eternal happiness notwithstanding; and assuage all temptations, combats, and difficulties.

25.] *Upon a rock.*—Upon a sure foundation. The rock of ages (Ps. xxviii. 1). Ps. lxii. 2: God is my rock.

26.] *Upon the sand.*—Every one that follows men tradition creeds, like the Jewish corban. Mark vii. 11, 12: And ye suffer

him to do no more for his father or his mother, thereby their tradition creeds of men making void God's law on Mount Sinai, Honor thy father and thy mother. This similitude shows the difference between true godliness and formal or hypocritical; for they seem all one in outward appearance, like the fowl's egg without a mate; but let the fowl set on the unimpregnated with life milt eggs, tenfold time, and no life whatever is resurrected therefrom. Break the shell, and a resurrection of rottenness uncleanness stench alone is resurrected, like the unimpregnated with milt life immortal, or unclean spirit, tare life seed, and all such souls are as the fowl's egg void of life, and their resurrection is rottenness. Isa. v. 24: Their root shall be as rottenness (Dan. xii. 2). When they come to trial test, the true remains firm against all oppositions, but the other moulders away and falls to nothing. The regal earth crown baubles, and the aspiring office-holders in church and state, soon come to nothing.

27.] *It fell.*—False men tradition creeds, of endless life tortures in fire, and resurrection of rotten bodies to life, as rotten apples resurrection to life trees, is equal to absurdity; those that teach such doctrines false build on sand or rottenness. The soul mind spirit egg impregnated with immortal spirit of God life produces a spirit new creature in Christ Jesus (2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15). The apple seed sown in good earth produces the tree.

28.] *His doctrine.*—How different Christ's truthful doctrines are from men tradition creeds!

29.] *As one.*—Viz., with divine and sovereign majesty, a serious truthfulness and spiritual power, penetrating by way of the will door of the soul, and impregnating the mind with immortality, and to the persuasion and conversion of such as are good and fear the Lord, and to the conviction of wicked and hardened mortals. *As the scribes.*—The substance of whose doctrines was more concerning frivolous and unprofitable forms and ceremonies, and unprofitable questions about non-essential allegorical metaphors, thereby as to-day making mountains out of dust atoms. And their manner of teaching more remiss, affected, vain, and framed for ostentation of themselves, and to please the auditors, as is the preaching and prayers of many now. God ever speaks with power. Let there be light; and there was light. Let the earth bring forth grass. Let the waters bring forth abundantly. Let the earth bring forth the living creature. And it was so (Gen. i. 3, 11, 20, 24).

CHAPTER VIII.

3.] *Leprosy*.—That disease was not like the leprosy at this day, but was incurable by mortal means then known.

4.] *See thou*.—The cause of forbidding to tell who cured him seemed to be that Christ would have men look after his doctrines rather than after his miracles. And also because that those miracles produced for the most part nothing but vain effects of admiration, worldly honor, and desire of participating of those corporal favors, did rather hinder than further Christ in his chief end, which was the eternal salvation of souls. *To the priest*.—Viz., to be searched according to the law, be judged clean, and to have permission to come again into the company of men and of the church. *For a testimony*.—Exod. xxv. 16; Levit. xiv. 4.

5.] *A centurion*.—A Roman and a heathen, but instructed and inwardly enlightened in the true religion and belief in God.

6.] *Palsy*.—That is, unable to use his limbs.

7.] *I will*.—Jesus' spirit power went and healed him, as it now heals those who ask, seek, and strive with all their heart.

8.] *Lord, I am not worthy*.—This is the real Christian feeling, always unworthy.

9.] *A man*.—And thou art God. I am a subject, and thou supreme Lord of earth. How much more shall thy command be fulfilled than mortal man's!

10.] *He marvelled*.—He used some external gesture of wondering, to cause the centurion's faith to be so much the more commended and believed; not that he was ignorant of the cause of it, nor that it was a faith beyond Christ's capacity and apprehension.

11.] *Many*.—Namely, of the Gentiles, such as the centurion was: people which were aliens from the covenant of God. *Sit down*.—Viz., shall all enjoy the fruits of eternal life with the holy patriarchs, having by faith become their promise seed heirs of the promises made to Abraham and their posterity.

12.] *The children*.—Namely, the Jews who by the prerogative of God's covenant seemed to be the true heirs of his kingdom; but they were merely the Adamic lust sin nature seed of Abraham's nature body, not spirit born of Christ's spirit love holy immortal life faith seed of Abraham, which was demonstrated in attempting to offer even Isaac if God demanded the blood life sacrifice to offended

justice ; emblem of Jesus' blood life of woman's seed spirit begotten by God's promise word in Eden (Gen. iii. 15). *Gnashing.*—The Jews, the rich man cast out into outer darkness ; hell weeping and gnashing of teeth fire tortures like the last rage and blasphemies and horrid noise which the devils, fallen angels, unclean spirits' demons, Satan's angels and wicked men, women, and children then upon the earth, at the close of time, the last judgment day, and death penalty execution in mass of all the then foes of God's justice, equity, and statute laws of the heavens and the earth. Then when the funeral pile internal earth fires, prepared for the devil and his angels at first, and his tare seed children, reap his death incorrigible rebels against God's just laws, the internal lava brimstone fires will then burst forth in earthquake upheavals, and fire now confined by earth's crust will then at the command of the judge of all the earth burst forth, and in a moment consume all life of devils and damned, and earth as a condemned, accursed of God, stench mass of death and sin lust rottenness remains, bearing all the remaining foes of God like the sin goat shall sink while consuming like lightning in flight down through lighted space into inane chaos darkness bottomless pit outer darkness (Matt. viii. 12). Rev. xx. 1, 3, 10, 11 : And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth (and the earth's atmosphere, all the open space air heaven for the birds to fly in) and the heaven fled away ; and there was no place (in lighted space) found for them (14, 15 ; Rev. xxi. 1, 8).

14.] *Wife's mother.*—Showing that Peter the apostle had a wife, and the absurdity of Roman Catholic popes and priests pretending to be followers of Peter and forbidden to marry, and keeping nunneries of assignation in many parts of the earth.

15.] *Touched.*—Jesus, by merely shaking hands with the sick, restored her to health.

16.] *With his word.*—Using no means like earthly physicians, his word creates, heals or destroys. Annihilates, the vessel breaks.

17.] *It might be fulfilled.*—That he might verify as truth what Isaiah had said and written, namely, that he is the only Saviour of souls commissioned by his Father a spirit, and who alone can or does impart by way of Christ spirit to intellect soul mind spirit eggs the immortal spirit life milt. Mortals beget by way of their selfish sin lust gratification. Thus spirit life immortal alone can be developed by the contact of the only immortal spirit life seed, from

the only immortal self-existent source of all life being, the almighty Jehovah God, the supreme sovereign ruler of the universe of lighted space. Christ Jesus, by his voluntary sufferings, appeared the universal sentence of all Adam's seed to inevitable body and soul death, that had no resurrection life, mercy, or power, but left doomed to rottenness, as all other nature product earth life, animate or inanimate, are still doomed, save those spirit egg soul minds that are impregnated with immortal life by way of the immortal spirit of God who only hath immortality (1 Tim. vi. 16), in his spirit word Son who atoned for, by way of sacrificial offering of spirit begotten blood life of woman's seed egg of nature blood life, the blood of the body pure and holy, without sin, of Jesus as the satisfaction of God's holy justice law infallible, for all who in like manner would sacrifice worldly lust desires and honors of mortal and blood life to the service of spirit life holy, in obedience to God's commands of love, gratitude, and adoration. And thus all who believe and obey the conditional requirements, and with all their hearts open their soul's will door to the intellect spirit egg mind, thereby obeying Christ's commands, who is the only pope and commander-in-chief of God his Father on earth, such alone become, by way of spirit birth of the spirit egg intellect mind, impregnated with God's spirit in Christ, who only hath on earth brought life and immortality to light through the gospel, 2 Tim. i. 10. Acts iv. 12: Neither is there salvation in any other. Like begets its like, is God's eternal law; mortals beget but mortals. Isa. xl. 6: All flesh is grass. 7: Surely the people is grass. 15: Behold the nations are as a drop of a bucket, and are counted (in the universe of lighted boundless space, and numberless suns and systems of worlds, inhabited by exalted probation beings, of which earth's Adam and Eve's race are the least capable of spirit life immortal) as the small dust of the balance. (In their nature blood life brief state unspirit born of immortal spirit life seed, Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5, 6.) 17: All nations are before God as nothing (in their natural Adamic dust blood life's brief state), and they are counted to him less than nothing and vanity. (A proud, butterfly, momentary life, rebelling against God, the sovereign owner and creator of the sun, Mars, Venus, earth, and the four outside stars that with earth play round the sun, occupying millions of miles of space lighted by the sun, where once chaotic darkness, inane death, void of life, slept its eternal darkness sleep, and which will sweep down at time's close again into

outer darkness, and will be no more missed in God's boundless universe comparatively, I believe, than a sand on the ocean shore.)

18.] *The other side.*—Namely, the lake of Gennesaret.

19.] *Master.*—Many say Master, and Lord, Lord; even some church officials most frequently use great words, as teachers, deacons, class leaders, etc., on the sabbath, and lie and cheat their fellow-beings during the week; even of their own class, under false pretences, they borrow money that they never intended to return. Such vile hypocrites call nicknames freely.

20.] *The foxes.*—This was spoken either for a trial of the truth of the scribes' profession, or for a preparative for him to keep it, being in time instructed in the condition which is inseparably connected to the gospel, namely, the cross. *Nests.*—Or places to go and shelter and rest themselves in. *The Son.*—Christ calls himself so frequently in the gospel, to signify the truth of his human nature, by way of woman's seed egg nature life, and the purity, and holiness, and the excellency of his person above all other men. As who should say that a man which hath in all ages been foretold, expected, desired, and often seen by the prophets (Dan. vii. 13) for a prelude of his incarnation and manifestation in the flesh.

21.] *Bury.*—Assist him in his extreme old age, until the end of his life.

22.] *Let the dead.*—In trespasses and sins: Eph. ii. 1. Being called to the ministry of everlasting life seed gospel truth life eternal words, leave off those duties belonging to a mortal transitory brief life, to those that are like them, and have their callings and places therein, that thou mayest readily and without disturbance follow the duties of a spiritual life, which are incompatible with those of a temporal life of nature; that thou mayest also bear the heavenly spirit life immortal message of conditional pardon and immortal life to thy nature life father and kindred and neighbors, and all whosoever will obey (his dear mother probably was not living, as he mentions only his father).

23.] *Followed him.*—They were drawn by love's magnet, and voluntarily willingly followed.

24.] *A great tempest.*—Christ would thereby try the faith of his disciples, to show and make them sensible of their own weakness and helpless infancy in grace life.

25.] *Save.*—That is the natural cry still, of all who awake

from sin's drugged inebriation, and behold death's tornadoes of diseases from sin's sweeping near them.

26.] *Rebuked.*—To signify God's power to appease the commotion, and that tempests obey his commands.

28.] *The other side.*—Of the lake Gennesaret. *Gergesenes.*—It is thought to be the ancient nation of the Geshurites (Josh. xiii. 13), or (Gen. x. 16) Girgasites, where the city of Gadara was, called by St. Mark and St. Luke the country of the Gadarenes; it is eastward beyond Jordan. *The tombs.*—Into which the devils forced and detained them, to frighten them with the graves of the dead.

29.] *To torment us.*—Driving us out of our delight in tormenting these poor wretches. We know that there is an appointed time at the end of this world's probation and last judgment day and close of time, when we and all unclean spirit life, and all mortals that serve our prince of evil darkness the devil, being his unclean spirit tare seed begotten children by way of evil impregnations of their soul spirit egg minds, with whom we affiliate as brethren, and all fallen angels that kept not their first estate, and all rebels against the laws of the supreme spirit God Almighty, and incorrigibly wicked of all ages past that shall then retain a particle of life spirit expanded *ad infinitum* from the germ life spirit breath of the only fountain of life enduring, and only source of life immortal. The torment of the death tortures of the incorrigibly wicked unclean devil tare seed spirit life is hereby clearly demonstrated by the unclean spirits' cry before the time, showing that they have, like the sentenced murderer, a knowledge of their appointed time of death. Ezek. xviii. 4; Rev. xx. 14: This is the second death. First, blood life body death; second, soul death, which wholly annihilates all Adam's rebel sin lust seed, not spirit born of Christ's spirit life immortal seed from his father, who only hath immortality; by way of the soul spirit egg intellect mind, showing heaven to be an intellectual spirit life eternal abode of infinite wisdom food from God the Father of all spirit life holy pure and immortal (eternal). Rev. xxi. 7: He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son. As all spirit life milt of immortal life alone can impregnate the soul spirit egg mind with immortal life, thus woman's nature egg, unimpregnated by life milt from a male, soon rots, and passes off in excrement; thus the soul mind decays, and like the crushed or rotted grain of wheat is void of breath of God,

the life thereof. Gen. i. 11: And God said, let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed. Rev. xxi. 8: But murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars (nicknamers, who are liars, must be included, for all liars unrepentant are included) shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone, as the lava now bursting forth in its fiery rage to consume the foes of a holy just God: which is the second or soul death. Ezek. xviii. 20, 24, 27: First grass body death of blood life. Isa. xl. 7: Surely the people is grass. The green grass and colorless water makes body life's white milk.

30.] *Swine*.—Forbidden food to the Jews; still eaten in vast quantities, but unhealthy food.

31.] *Suffer us*.—The devil always desires to do mischief, but he can do no more than God permits.

32.] *Into the sea*.—Namely, the lake of Gennesaret.

33.] *Kept them*.—Those hog-tenders, like whisky bar-tenders, dislike to have their profits cut off by the casting out of the poor defiled drunkards the unclean spirit appetites for the intoxicating beverage. The hogs went for drink when the devils got in them.

34.] *They besought him*.—Not for any hatred they bare to him, but for fear of that divine power which they only considered in him (Luke viii. 37). An ordinary motion of a man's conscience, not yet confident in God's grace, when he feels his majesty's approach. *Depart*.—The Gergesenes esteemed their swine of more value to them than their souls' immortality, or than Jesus Christ, the only being that could impart immortal life impregnation to their souls' spirit egg mind intellect, their only chance of future life and salvation. Thus all mortals are inclined by carnal fallen sinful nature to say, Depart; not now.

CHAPTER IX.

1.] *Into his own*.—Namely, Capernaum, where he made his ordinary abode (Matt. iv. 13; Mark ii. 1).

2.] *Seeing their faith*.—As also his that was sick of pa'sy, for without faith there is no forgiveness. *Thy sins*.—Sins are the cause of this thy disease, and generally of all those evils that befall men.

3.] *Blasphemeth*.—Attributing unto the mortal woman's seed body, like their own, they imagined falsely from appearances, the authority of pardoning sins, which belongeth to God alone.

4.] *Knowing their*.—As truly God's spirit word Son, the Prince Lord God Messiah, the only searcher of hearts.

5.] *Whether is*.—According to your carnal judgment, it is a higher and more difficult thing to heal this diseased man by my word than to forgive him his sins. Now I will do that which you judge to be the most difficult, and is visible; to show that I can do that which you esteem to be less, and is spiritual, and hidden; both equally depending upon the same divine and supreme power.

6.] *The Son*.—Namely, he whom you so much undervalue.

8.] *The multitudes*.—These were ignorant of Christ's divinity annexed to his humanity, and therefore they speak so slightly of it. *Unto men*.—Such as they thought Christ to be; being not yet instructed by experimental spirit birth, new creature spirit life of his seed.

9.] *Matthew*.—And Levi also (Luke v. 27). *Receipt of custom*.—Where taxes and tribute were paid.

10.] *In the house*.—Of Matthew, as Luke saith. *Sinners*.—Unspirit born men, of wicked life previous.

11.] *Pharisees saw it*.—The self-righteous unspirit born Pharisees were zealous to find motes in others.

12.] *They that be*.—As you presumptuously judge of yourselves, imagining that ye be just and holy, despising such weak ones as sought Jesus Christ to be cured.

13.] *And learn*.—You hypocrites do set all your piety and righteousness chiefly in ceremonies and external discipline, and hold them to be profane and unworthy of your conversation which do not follow you and adhere to your false tradition creeds of men's manufacture. Whereas, by this saying of the prophet, you might have learned that the most acceptable service to God is that mercy which I use towards poor sinners, procuring their salvation and amendment, by my familiarity with them, in truthful sayings and loving kindness; seeing that grace by the gospel which I am mediator for, and distributor of, is but to repentant sinners. *Righteous*.—Self-righteous, such as are puffed up with a vain conceit of their own righteousness, as doctors of men tradition false creeds divinity.

15.] *Of the bridechamber*.—Namely, of the bridegroom's most intimate friends and companions: John iii. 29. I will not disturb

the joy my disciples conceive by reason of my presence; after my departure out of the world, they will have afflictions and sorrow sufficient, and time enough to feel them.

16.] *No man.*—Besides this cause, I have also a regard not to oppress the weakness of those which are mine, with too vigorous a discipline in these beginnings. *New cloth unto an old garment.*—The old garment is the Adamic nature blood life body; a new addition cannot be made to that; to make blood life immortal, it would be worse than it now is. Gen. iii. 24: A flaming sword which turned every way to keep the (narrow appointed spirit life, new spirit birth, new creature in Christ Jesus, way. 2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15, new creature) way of the tree of life, Christ Jesus. John vi. 35: I am the bread of life. John xi. 25: I am the resurrection and the life. John xiv. 6: Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life. No man can come unto the Father but by me; clearly showing the way of life kept by the cherubims and flaming sword, that consume all who seek not the spirit birth holy narrow way to immortal life, Christ Jesus.

17.] *Old bottles.*—They were made of leather, and in leathern vessels wine was carried upon asses and camels. At that day glass bottles were unknown. The old leathern bottles would not, when cracked, withstand the pressure of the fixed air; and also illustrate nature bodies, old in sin: new spirit life wine could not become immortal in them easily. Prov. viii. 17: They that seek me early shall find me.

18.] *Ruler.*—They were certain superior ecclesiastical persons in particular Jewish assemblies, and there pronounced what was right according to law, ended controversies, and punished exorbitances.

20.] *And touched.*—This woman was moved through humble faith belief pure, and by this emblem all seekers of immortal life by way of Christ from God who only hath immortality, through faith belief prayer by way of the Mediator, will be impregnated with spirit birth life the moment they repent of all their sins, and truthfully seek God by way of Christ the only way and life mediator, faith life's eternal love conductor. *His garment.*—She ascribed not this power of healing to Christ's garments (as I fear many gnat strainers do), but to himself, as by the next verse appeareth.

21.] *If I may.*—She felt in her humble simplicity love for Jesus, that if even she could, unworthy of his notice as she was, but

even touch his garment (emblem of his nature woman's seed body life, in which his infinite spirit love life linked with divinity dwelt in restrained power), she might be healed; it certainly could not harm her. Thus should reason every unspirit born nature descendant of Adam, when like hers a public acknowledgment of belief in the power of the spirit God, who only hath immortality life to impart through Christ his spirit word Son, commissioned to utter his conditional life impartations to the impregnation of the atom time soul mind spirit egg intellect, immortal life, spirit birth while the soul remains under blood life quickening life nature's life eggs. All animate nature life germinates in females, like blossoms of the inanimate nature life, which female egg germ of nature Adamic Eve life woman's seed must have the impregnation quickening life, or it monthly passes off as excrements of daily nature life food. Thus twelve embryos at least yearly decay, and produce nothing, like the soul spirit egg mind, if they remain until blood life death unimpregnated with good or evil. The male milt, in vastly greater numbers of life-imparting powers, also is taken up by the absorbents, if unused, and passes off with the nature life food of which it is a part, and therefore cannot possibly be in any state, even in blood life beings matured immortal, or anything more than nature that produced the component parts and union quickened to life by mortals, who cannot beget immortals.

22.] *Daughter.*—Her faith in the efficacy of Christ Jesus impregnated her soul mind egg by mere faith touch, and produced an intellectual spirit birth new creature daughter while in the female blood life body form, but without sex when resurrected from the body grave at blood life death. Gal. iii. 27: As many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. 28: There is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

23.] *The minstrels.*—They were certain hired people which did play mournful tunes at funerals, according to the custom of the Jews (2 Chron. xxxv. 25) and of other nations.

24.] *Is not dead.*—In respect of me, and of my divine power, this death is but a sleep. I will revive this maiden to blood life pulsations and lung inflations by my word, as if she were but asleep.

28.] *Believe ye.*—Christ would be acknowledged by these blind men before their fellow-mortals, as to-day by poor blind unspirit born sinners seeking for spirit life birth sight (Matt. x. 32).

32.] *A dumb.*—Either naturally dumb, and possessed of an evil spirit, or only from the evil spirit.

33.] *When the devil.*—Showing clearly that devils enter the souls of mortals, or are natives born of the soul mind spirit egg by the impregnation thereof by the evil spirit. Matt. xiii. 38–40: The tares are the children of the wicked one. The enemy that sowed them is the devil.

34.] *Through the prince.*—Namely, by magic art, and by a covenant made with the chief of devils, called elsewhere Beelzebub (a nickname that devils in mortals called the Lord Jesus Christ), by whose authority and power he driveth out inferior devils. This was blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, the highest impiety, that never hath forgiveness from God, but inevitable annihilation destruction awaits all such nicknamers, whose foul devil breath of nicknames would mar the love peace joys of heaven, if it were possible that an unrepentant liar nicknamer could be permitted to enter heaven to call God's spirit word creation power omnipotent pure and holy, Beelzebub.

35.] *The gospel.*—By which God gathered together his people to reign over them.

36.] *Moved with compassion.*—Not so much for their corporal labor in following of him, as because he knew them desirous to hear God's word, which was not preached to them by their ordinary teachers and pastors, and no prophet of God since Malachi, four hundred years previous.

37.] *The harvest.*—There are many who by the inward operation of the Holy Ghost are, as it were, already ripe, and disposed to receive the gospel spirit's quickening impregnation of their soul's spirit egg mind and new creature life immortal spirit birth (John iii. 5, 6). And to be gathered into the church, as it were into the Lord's barn, to there in appointed time, at blood life death of stalk body and head chaff, to be removed therefrom into the heavenly spirit garner as clean wheat, but the body begotten in lust sin. Ps. li. 5: Behold I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me. 10: Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me. 17: The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise.

38.] *Send forth.*—A term which representeth God's powerful operation in stirring up and moving men to the solemn work of the holy ministry. Jer. xx. 8: The word of the Lord was made

a reproach unto me, and a derision daily. 7: Thou art stronger than I, and hast prevailed: every one (of the wicked inhabitants of his neighborhood) mocketh me in derision; but the uncalled church and state official office-holders are called by a desire to lord it, and receive a large salary, and receive the applause and approval of the wicked, by way of conforming to the spirit of the wicked on earth led by the spirit of the world and Satan in union. But really called by the movings within by the Holy Spirit of humble truth, such feel the necessity which is imposed upon them of preaching the gospel (1 Cor. ix. 16), and the readiness which is required therein. Such are known by their fruits of love of the right.

CHAPTER X.

1.] *Twelve disciples.*—As he had established twelve patriarchs, so would he in this number of twelve now build and renew his church. *Gave them power.*—The right use of miracles is herein seen, and to what purpose they are wrought, namely, for a witness to and establishing of God's word; for none but those commissioned of God could by any other power vary God's fixed laws of the universe of lighted boundless space.

2.] *Apostles.*—A Greek word, which signified sent or deputed to do some business, ambassadors; as were the twelve called, because they were to have no certain abode of residence, and their ministry was to be about the world as in a strange country, out of the church, to carry ambassage of God's conditional reconciliation, and to gather his elect together. (Not as popes, cardinals, bishops, and priests, with fixed residences and large salaries, and palatial dwellings, as in Rome and England's church and state lord wolves in fine sheep's clothing, faring sumptuously every day on the extorted robbery taxation of the helpless poor.) *The first.*—Not only in the list as elders, and first called with Andrew (Matt. iv. 18), but also, as it would seem, conduct and presidency over the other, as the eldest brother, by the Lord's own disposing, for the time they lived together; for when they were separated there is no such thing spoken of, and all were without any superiority in degree, much less in dominion (clearly showing popery, cardinals, etc., to

be antichrist.) *Is called*—By a surname given him by Christ himself (John xxi. 15).

3.] *Lebbæus*.—Who is the same as is called Judas, the brother of James, the son of Alpheus (Luke vi. 16), whose the epistle is, entitled St. Jude. It is thought that Lebbæus, the Hebrew word, and Thaddeus, the Syriac word, are of one and the same signification, viz., a man of heart or breast.

4.] *The Cunaanite*.—Which is, according to some, of the city of Cana; according to others it is the name of a religion or sect: namely, of Zelotes, or zealed, as it is set down, Luke vi. 15; wherewith the Hebrew word may very well agree. *Iscariot*.—It is not certainly known from whence the surname is taken. Some interpret it the mercenary apostate, or the man that doth or shall revolt for reward. So Judas may be named after his treason, and in this sense might be so named here by way of anticipation for his avarice which did appear afterward. Others hold that it signifieth a man of Kerioth, which was a city of Judea (Josh. xv. 25). *Betrayed him*.—This was also spoken by way of anticipation, like that of Mary (John xi. 2).

5.] *Go not*.—This and those things which follow are but only concerning this their first mission at that time. *Samaritans*.—These were a mixture of pagan nations who after the captivity of the ten tribes were brought in and settled in their country, where they set up a false worship in the mountain of Gerizim (2 Kings xvii. 24, 29; John iv. 20); whereupon it was but as a bastard nation, and they were held as pagans.

6.] *The lost*.—Namely, that are in the way to perdition through their ignorance and by means of their false doctrines, and evil conduct of their teachers. Isa. liii. 6: All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way (tradition creeds of pagan Roman Catholicism, and Babel spirit life with rotten bodies instead of spirit life birth of Christ spirit life immortal seed new creature life. 2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15; Rom. viii. 9: If any man have not the spirit of Christ he is none of his).

7.] *Preach*.—Men must begin with and ever retain Scripture truths and doctrines, and build on God's plainly revealed statute laws, showing it a plain matter of life or death with every human offspring of Adam's sin lust seed sooner or later, of both soul and body, each passing day of their brief earth's sojourn; each holds their will door to their soul mind choice of good or evil spirit impregnations, because it is the foundation of faith. Isa. viii. 20:

To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.

8.] *Freely give.*—That is, apply yourself freely to the exercise of it, without expecting any worldly profit by it, or reward or pay for telling people how to get to heaven.

9.] *Provide neither.*—Trouble not yourselves with things which may be obstacles to the execution of your calling. *Your purses.*—Girdles wherein anciently they carried their money, as in purses.

10.] *Neither shoes.*—In St. Mark, the Lord suffered them to take shoes on their feet, and a staff in their hands, whereby it appears in this place plainly, that they should freely and speedily take their journey in the state they were then dressed, and clothing on hand, without any further preparation. (They were not ordered to go to college, as now, before they are allowed to preach, though ordered to do so by the Lord the commander-in-chief of the army of light, that warreth against the evil army of darkness.) Being sure that God would provide for all real necessities, food and clothing, if they were God's truthful ministers, there is no command to ask or receive a large salary, or church office with a state income like the Bishop of London, nor to preach politics. James iv. 4: The friendship of the world is enmity with God. Whosoever therefore will be a (political or otherwise friend to worldly pride or spirit of the world, or the devil or his fashionable dances) friend of the world, is the enemy of God.

11.] *Is worthy.*—Prepared by God's inward grace and virtue to receive the preaching of the gospel with humility, fervent desire, etc. (2 Cor. iii. 5). *There.*—With such a man. *Ye go thence.*—Out of that city, castle, or place.

12.] *Salute it.*—Saying, Peace unto this household; or, The blessing of God be on all who love God here.

13.] *Let your peace.*—Let your blessing be ratified and accomplished by the Lord. *Return.*—Those desires and well wishes of yours being not accepted, and being deemed by the occupants thereof unprofitable to their house, let them be as a witness before God of your zeal and good-will desires, which God will reward as if they had received you, when he resurrects you from your mortal blood life body at its journey's end on earth.

14.] *Shake off.*—In token that you will have no communion with that people, and also that God's curse and annihilation await them (Neh. v. 13).

15.] *More tolerable*.—For they were not so warned and preached unto.

16.] *As sheep*.—He informs them of their burdensome calling, that when they are in extremity they should not be astonished, *As serpents*.—Gen. iii. 1. The meaning is, mix your simplicity and clearness of conscience towards men, with wariness towards mortals; do no mortals hurt, call no person or place by opprobrious names to offend their nobler feelings with low, ill-bred names, given in derision of each other by children of the devil, sunk in mind and body in sin's pollutions; see that there is nothing of the kind accepted by you. If they call you by the nickname that they called me falsely, Beelzebub, call them truthfully as I did, children of the devil (John viii. 44), by answering a fool according to his folly, but truthfully, that all nicknamers and other liars, and thieves, and blasphemers, and murderers, adulterers, and sinner servants of the devil, in all their lust filthiness, are children of their father the devil. Provoke ye no man, save thus in rebuke for their malicious vile insolence; keep yourselves from the world's indignation, by middle ways of retiring and avoiding the nicknamers and slanderers of the pure in heart, in the same way you would avoid a rotten dead carcass, for all such are dead in trespasses and in sins within, though without they are as a gilded coffin, with a rotten body within. Finally, beware of any reciprocal violence, by brutal combat fights, for thereby you would become like them, which is incompatible with the true profession and preaching of the gospel; and if both these virtues will not free you from Satan's tare seed children's snares and annoyance, then remit yourselves absolutely to God. *Harmless*.—Or sincere and innocent of doing evil.

17.] *But beware*.—Trust not, nor associate yourselves with mortals that are opposed to the gospel; suspect them always, for hatred against gospel truths prevaileth above all natural or civil respects. Beware therefore of them so far as your conscience and your vocation will suffer you. *Councils*.—They were the Jews' courts of judgment, to whom it was permitted by the Romans to proceed against those that offended and did contrary to their law, so far as scourging, but not to any capital punishment (Matt. xxiii. 34; Acts v. 40; xxii. 19).

18.] *For a testimony*.—God will suffer it and so dispose of it to the end that the Jews who shall give you up, and the Gentiles to whom you shall be given up, may by your free confession of my name and truth, on the one side have notice thereof, and

on the other side be convinced and made inexcusable in their obstinacy.

19.] *Take no thought.*—Seek not the means in your own strength to overcome your adversaries, for Satan the prince of darkness evil is their commander-in-chief. Unclean spirits are also his aiders and abettors to arm vile tare seed children of the devil, or devils in human outside form. And Satan was once an angel of great power while in his probation state in the sixth or next to the lowest heaven, our sun's atmosphere, and Satan's probation does not close until the end of time, and he has the power of death, being the death penalty sheriff (Heb. ii. 14). Rely alone on God's omnipotent power, and you are safe.

23.] *Flee ye.*—Quickly withdraw into another place where you may perform your charge; and do not think it to be lost labor to go from place to place; for in a short time I will make the truth of my coming appear. *Till the Son.*—Till it doth clearly appear, especially to all spirit born of immortal life seed from God, that the promised Messiah is come in the Spirit; such shall the power of my spirit be, when joined to your preaching.

24.] *His master.*—The father is or should ever be master of his household; not children or wife. No wife or child until possessed of the devil, or unclean spirits, will attempt master-ship.

25.] *The Master.*—The spirit word creation power Son of almighty Jehovah God, and only spirit begotten Son of God, and father and owner of the pure in heart by way of redemption sacrifice. Heb. iii. 6: Christ as father over his own house; whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end. *Beelzebub.*—An opprobrious appellation nickname given to the Son of the Most High God, the Prince of the eternal heavens, the Lord Jesus Christ Messiah. If they have called the father of the children a nickname very mean and villainous, what better can my beloved apostle John expect but that he also shall be nicknamed? How much more shall they nickname the persons and places of the residence of God's household! The Jews attribute the nickname they gave Jesus, Beelzebub, to be the name of the prince of devils (Matt. xii. 24), by reason that all the ancient Baals were called devils (Deut. xxxii. 17; Ps. cvi. 37).

26.] *Nothing covered.*—Do your offices courageously, and be not affrighted for the world's oppositions, because that at the last

the light of the gospel will break forth, and shall shine through all obstacles.

27.] *In darkness*.—Severally and as it were in secret. The housetops, openly, because they were made flat like open terraces.

28.] *Kill*.—Fear not them which kill the body, as in wars; is not the body blood life dead, when the mortal is killed? does not the body and blood and all the body parts rot like any other animal body, and like inanimate nature life products, of which the bodies of all mortals are composed? When the apple body is rotten like the human body, it contains seeds that if removed before rottenness death destroys their vitality, they by being cultivated in good ground produce trees, and the trees produce new body apples; but the rotten apple body is never resurrected. Thus the human body, rotted, is never resurrected. The soul, like the apple seed emblem, though of a different animate life nature that requires impregnation life quickening seed milt, like the animate nature life bodies of all animate earth life, which first develops in an egg form in all females; which nature egg, unimpregnated, is as a rotten potato very soon, and wholly void of any resurrection seed in any form whatever. Thus souls unimpregnated by immortal life seed (Matt. xiii. 37, 38), or Satanic unclean spirit tare seed (38-40) are as the potato, wholly void of any life seed; when their bodies die, their soul spirit egg mind unimpregnated with good or evil is as the fowl's egg, without a male or any other of all animate life eggs in females unimpregnated with life male milt seed. The fowls may sit on them, or the ostrich leave its eggs thus unimpregnated in the hot sands, but no life in any form whatever can be regenerated therefrom after it is laid void of male milt; break the shell after six weeks, and nothing is resurrected but death rottenness stench. Isa. v. 23, 24: Woe unto them which justify the wicked; their root shall be rottenness (Dan. xii. 2). Thus fear God, who withdrawing his rays of life from you would in a moment thereby annihilate all life in you, and thereby destroy annihilate both soul and body eternally, in the common dust of the grave, or hell, to cover from sight. The same word is used by our Lord, kill the body, and kill the soul. Mortals cannot kill the soul, but God can. Matt. xix. 26: With God all things are possible. Mark x. 27: Jesus saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God; for with God all things are possible. Luke xviii. 27: And Jesus said, The things which are impossible with men are possible with God. Everything is possible with God which is not

in opposition to himself. It is impossible for God to lie (Heb. vi. 18). Acts xvii. 28: In God we live, and move, and have our being, like the sunlight; if God withdraws his life rays, the mortal or mortals instantly die and commence to decompose, and are soon like the rotten potato, if their souls have not been impregnated with spirit male milt. As well claim the sunlight as ours, and that it cannot withdraw from us, and leave us in darkness death emblem, as to say God's life rays cannot be withdrawn from our souls. God will not resurrect the wicked dead, and impart of his immortal spirit life to the incorrigibly wicked, to supernaturally keep them in life, merely to torture himself, or life which can alone emanate from God. 1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto. John iii. 5, 6; v. 40: To the wicked Jesus saith, Ye will not come to me, that ye might have life. Ezek. xviii. 4: The soul that sinneth it shall die.

29.] *A farthing*.—Which was a kind of money then in use, being eight mites in value.

31.] *Ye*.—Christ's disciples, and all spirit born of Christ's spirit from God seed (John iii. 5).

32.] *Therefore*.—For a conclusion therefore of the exhortation and truth proclamations that I have made unto you who have or may comply with the truthful conditions of the gospel proclamation, and such only will I acknowledge before my Father which is in heaven, as my spirit begotten children. *Shall confess me*.—Made an open and free volunteer profession of believing in the truth of my gospel, and in me as their only Saviour. Rom. x. 9, 10: With the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

33.] *Deny*.—Refuse to receive Christ's spirit birth seed (Matt. xiii. 37, 38) by way of their soul will door into their souls intellectual spirit egg mind, which by way of the infinite mercy rays of God in the Holy Spirit or Ghost, hatches quickly to spirit born new creature in love's likeness image of Christ Jesus God's infinite love spirit word, and communicated to mortals by way of the only spirit begotten of God beings, by way of the Virgin Mary's nature life seed egg, which mediator Jesus alone of all that pertain to immortal life can beget spiritually, by way of his immortal love pulsating life and soul mind intellect womb, of those that seek God through the only mediator between mortal life and immortal life. John vi. 63, 68: Thou hast the words of eternal life. John iv. 24: God is a spirit, and they that worship him must worship him

in spirit. John iii. 5, 6 : Except a man be born of the water and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. Rom. viii. 1 : There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the spirit. 6 : To be carnally minded is (spiritual) death ; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. 9 : But ye (spirit born holy) are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the spirit of Christ, he is none of his. 1 Cor. xv. 23 : Christ the first (resurrection) fruits ; afterwards (second resurrection) they that are Christ's (third resurrection rottenness.) Isa. v. 24 ; Dan. xii. 2 : And all unclean spirit tare seed with Satan is annihilated at the close of time. Heb. ii. 14 : Forasmuch then as the (spirit born holy) children (1 John v. 18 : Begotten of God sinneth not) are partakers of flesh and blood (by Adamic nature sin lust birth). Jesus also himself took part of the same (woman's seed spirit begotten without male seed, Gen. iii. 15), that through (blood life nature) death he might destroy (annihilate) him that had the power of death, that is, the devil (1 Cor. xv. 26 : The last enemy).

34.] *Peace*.—Christ insureth an inward peace into the consciences of those that are his, but they must be at continual strife with the wicked. *But a sword*.—Not by any natural property of Christ or of his gospel, which contrariwise teacheth nothing but benignity, patience, and meekness, and is the only means of true peace with God, and among men ; but by the devil and the wicked inhabitants of the world opposing themselves against Christ, his kingdom, and by reason of this merciful delay, their deadly hatred of truth and gospel light violates natural and civil duties often, and respect for even the peaceful natural rights of Christians.

35.] *At variance*.—This proceeds not from the harmony which is in Christ the prince of peace, but by the wickedness of mortals who will not be obedient to God's laws and commands.

36.] *Foes*.—Natural depravity, nature body lusts, and covetous desires and sinful thoughts within.

37.] *Loveth*.—Father and mother God commanded all on earth to love, and also God, with superior to self and parental love of nature life, which all animate life on earth hath more or less affinity with, by inbred nature love regard for offspring, and parents of blood life nature bodies. The superior love comes alone from spirit life beings born of God's spirit life immortal, pure and holy, which beareth the spirit fruits, and pulsates in spirit born new

creatures in Christ Jesus, infinite love born from a God who pulsates love, goodness, and mercy; thus we readily perceive the reason why the blood life nature mother Mary was renowned (Matt. xii. 48-50). For immortal attributes that are infinitely superior in all holy beings in love to their spirit father, to nature self, and earthly nature parents, which we should ever love superior to self love; to forget or neglect love and honor to parents is a horrid sin. Matt. xxii. 37: Jesus saith unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment (Deut. vi. 5). Matt. xxii. 39: And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. 1 John iv. 16: God is love.

38.] *That taketh not.*—That doth not dispose himself in a voluntary obedience and patience to bear those afflictions which are laid upon him in his earthly pilgrimage at variance with the world. In love and imitation of Jesus, who gave the woman's seed blood life holy to save believers of his truths; his cross, not Christ's.

39.] *That findeth.*—He that shall imagine he hath so well provided for the safety of his life, and for his worldly goods, by renouncing the gospel, shall fall into everlasting death, that hath no resurrection rays of life or vitality that could possibly be quickened into life, viz. rottenness (Isa. v. 24).

40.] *Receiveth me.*—He comforteth his disciples against the ungrateful undervaluing and despising of them. *Him.*—Receiveth immortal spirit life from God, who only hath immortality in Christ.

41.] *He that receiveth.*—He that through Christian charity shall do good to Christ's children and servants, those that believe in the Lord by reason that they are such, and not for any other civil, natural, or vicious respects, shall be rewarded by me. *Prophet.*—A minister and speaker of Scripture truths. *Of a righteous man.*—A spirit born of Christ's spirit seed, a holy man, and commendable for his spiritual virtues.

42.] *Of these little ones.*—Mark x. 15: Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein. 1 John iv. 4: Ye are of God, little children. Matt. xi. 25: Jesus said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes. Even so, Father: for so it seemed good in thy sight.

CHAPTER XI.

1.] *Commanding*.—As commander-in-chief over all in time's space, he commanded his disciples to go and preach through the land of Judea, and confirm their doctrine with signs and wonders. *In their cities*.—In the cities of Galilee, from whence most of the apostles were.

2.] *He sent*.—Not for himself, who was fully assured of the truth concerning Christ's person (John i. 29), but to assure his disciples thereof by Christ's most effectual word and presence.

3.] *Art thou he*.—The Messiah which was promised our forefathers.

4.] *And see*.—For Christ did miracles in their presence.

5.] *The blind*.—He seems to send them back to consider upon the prophecies Isa. xxxv. 5 and lxi. 1, in which these benefits were promised to the church by means of the Messiah at his coming. *The poor*.—Such as could not, like the rich, build elegant churches and own pews therein, and pay a large salary to support a lot of titled officials in gaudy trappings, to simply tell the way to heaven; of which the most of that class of aristocracy that lord it over what they call God's heritage, but experimentally they have little or no knowledge. The humble perplexed, and such as had a contrite heart, could then by thousands, without money and without price, hear from Christ truthfully the way to immortal life, under the canopied starry heavens, a decoration infinitely above any churches on earth, and lighted up by the sun far excelling all church light, with the shady forest trees of inanimate life, decorated with living green leaves. By miracles the poor were fed. Rev. xxii. 17: Whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely. Isa. lv. 1: Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters, and he that hath no money; come ye, buy and eat; yea, come, buy wine and milk without money and without price. 3: Incline your ear, and come unto me: hear, and your soul shall live. What the soul promised life are not all immortal, saith the pagan tradition creed preachers.

6.] *Shall not*.—That shall not dislike the plain unvarnished truth; nor by reason of my doctrine being contrary to the sense of depraved flesh lusts sins, and the tidings of the cross tribulations (1 Cor. i. 21; Gal. v. 11).

7.] *Into the wilderness.*—Where John the Baptist preached. *A reed.*—Namely, a thing of nought. The meaning is, Did you go by chance, or to behold some worldly greatness, or to hear the word of God from an excellent prophet of his, such an one as you believe John was? If it be so, why do ye not give credit to the witness which he bore of me?

8.] *Soft raiment.*—Or, costly. He shows that John had nothing about him whereby men's eyes might be attracted to him: no robes of ceremonial pretences to piety in outer body garments or adornings.

9.] *More than a prophet.*—For they foretold of Christ afar off, but John showed that he is already come.

10.] *Before thy face.*—In Malachi it is, "Before my face," but the sense is the same, for the Father hath appeared to the world in his Son's personal love developments of spirit soul mind birth life immortal.

11.] *A greater.*—In dignity of office, and in clearness of doctrine of salvation, showing with truth Christ already come, and preparing the world to receive him (Luke i. 15, 16). *That is least.*—That is, every spirit born new creature believer, or servant, of God, in the state of the church brought to life by the Messias, shall have more advantage than John the Baptist hath had, because they shall see the mysteries of the redemption accomplished in my person, and shall enjoy the fruit thereof by my Spirit, which shall be spread abroad in greater abundance and virtue.

12.] *The kingdom.*—John hath begun to stir up the desire of participating God's grace by the gospel, and that increaseth and shall daily increase more and more by virtue of my spirit, which shall bring forth strength of faith, and fervency of zeal in mine elect in great numbers, to run, as it were, thronging into my church, to enrich themselves with spirit life immortal; which is like in this unto a city taken by assault, where everything is subject to pillage (Isa. lx. 4, 8-11).

13.] *For all.*—John's precedence above the preceding prophets is, that they have only foretold and described things to come. But he hath declared salvation present, and in him is begun the evangelical ministry legal. The figurative is ceased, the reality is now fulfilled.

14.] *If ye will.*—Know that he (John) is the Elias, whose coming was foretold by Malachi, unless you will refuse to believe the truth.

15.] *He that hath.*—A frequent admonition in the gospels. Rev. ii. 7; iii. 6: to stir up believers, who have received the gift of faith, which is the ear of the soul, to exercise it in apprehending and executing those things the revelation of which was directed to them.

16.] *Unto children.*—He hath a relation to some popular song used in those days, to signify that neither John's preaching of repentance, accompanied with great austerity of life, nor the annunciation of God's grace by Christ, confirmed by the admirable benignity in conforming himself to the ordinary course of man's life, calling and drawing unto him the most grievous sinners, could assuage the Jews' hardness; their king even murdered John to pay the devil's daughter for dancing.

18.] *Neither eating.*—Living almost of nothing, taking no care for his body, nor the worldly pursuits and vain pleasures of this life, retired from the ordinary manner of living. *They say.*—Especially scribes and Pharisees say, as all blackguards and slanderers and lying nicknamers and defamers say, that which hath not one atom of truth in it, that John hath a devil, when the truth was the devil was in them. The same pharisaical hypocritical self-called and devil-called preachers to-day say even in Sunday-school papers, to destroy as far as they can the peace of mind of the same name, Jack for John.

19.] *Son of man.*—He speaks of himself as mediator alliance by way of woman's seed, though spirit begotten as the son of man, his spirit, after the man body life blood was shed, moved about the dust thereof to communicate through the body with his disciples, men in human dust product bodies. *Wisdom.*—Soul intellect mind, quickened into immortal life wisdom by the spirit word of God impregnating the soul mind spirit egg, by way of the will door belief of truth from God, who only hath immortality, and dwells in wisdom light life unapproachable by Adam's nature rebel lust sin seed race. Believers endowed with true spiritual wisdom have acknowledged, approved of, and maintained against these calumnies, also the celestial doctrines uniformly preached by John and by Christ, as also God's wisdom in appointing each of them their manner of living befitting their preaching. *Of her children.*—This means, that the wisdom of God in Christ hath been received and acknowledged by its true spirit born children of God in Christ. And that nicknaming bastards, who boast themselves to be wisdom's D.D. children, yet following pagan false men tradi-

tion theology creeds of men, and thereby rejecting God's statute laws of life and death, of body and soul, and teach that mortal men and women beget immortal offspring by misconstruing parables of the Jews and Gentiles. They discard God's truths in the Scriptures, which remain entire and perfect, which though D.D.'s and college bred misconstrue, still shall ever endure.

20.] *Mighty works.*—Christ's high and glorious miracles (Matt. vii. 22.)

21.] *Chorazin.*—Chorazin and Bethsaida were cities situated by the lake of Gennesaret. *Tyre and Sidon.*—Profane cities of the Canaanites, to whom the prophets have denounced extreme desolation; they were situate by the Mediterranean Sea in Phœnicia (Isa. xxiii.; Ezek. xxvi.). *Repented.*—Not with the internal and spiritual repentance, which the working of miracles cannot bring forth, but is an effect of God's spirit co-operating with his word; but only with that exterior and disciplinary kind of repentance which is nothing but being displeased and a forsaking of these great and grievous sins which do fight against the law, nature or civil and moral justice, and do violate human society, for which sins the Lord destroyed those nations. Now this was sufficient to condemn the Jewish insensible and inflexible rebellion. *Sackcloth.*—These were outward signs of repentance.

22.] *But I say.*—We must here imply those nations are indeed perished. But the lengthened punishments and sorrows that shall fall upon the inhabitants of Chorazin and Bethsaida shall be even greater than the sorrows of the inhabitants of Tyre and Sidon, when judgment shall be pronounced against them, and they overthrown as cities. Sodom and Gomorrah were suddenly destroyed; suffering was brief.

23.] *Capernaum.*—This city was one of the chiefest of Galilee. *Exalted.*—By that incomparable honor and blessing of having been the place of abode and ordinary conversation of the world's Saviour. *Hell.*—To destruction as a city, and their bodies to the grave, and covered from sight, as a people on earth. With prolonged suffering from sword and famine, etc., as Jerusalem.

24.] *Land of Sodom.*—People living on the lands of Sodom will not suffer from the invading armies of Rome at Jerusalem's judgment day overthrown, and Capernaum, as the inhabitants of Capernaum will then suffer at their overthrow. Fire and brimstone destroy life in a moment (Num. xvi. 21).

25.] *I thank thee.*—By the glory of thy divine majesty, I ac-

knowledge thy sovereign power, accompanied with justice, wisdom, and mercy ; insomuch that thou hast not wrought upon the minds and hearts of wise worldly men college-bred ; nor heathen philosophers of Greece and Rome studied by the college bred, worldly-wise. 1 Cor. iii. 19 : For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. 1 Cor. i. 21 : The world by its wisdom of nature knew not God, to give them the lively light of the mysteries of eternal salvation ; priest who assumes to know more than God reveals of himself is described in Prov. xxvi. 5, 12 : a fool.

Revealed.—The mysteries of soul spirit egg mind birth, by way of spirit life immortal impregnation. Matt. xiii. 37, 38 ; John iii. 5, 6 : Except a man (not infant) be born of water and of the spirit, an infant spirit, born of Christ's good seed, to whom God reveals immortal life wisdom, although they are mere spirit born babes of Christ's good immortal life seed, sown in the soul's spirit egg mind. What must the maturing of that babe of spirit life wisdom become, when the highest earth intellectual development of spirit soul mind life wisdom was but the intellect yolk embryo unimpregnated with the Spirit of God, who only hath immortality (1 Tim. vi. 16 : God only hath immortality), dwelling in the light which no man (nature man, unspirit born) can approach unto. Therefore the necessity of the mediator Christ, who alone could impart immortality to the soul's spirit egg minds. Rom. viii. 8 : So then they that are in the flesh (unspirit born) cannot please God. 9. : But ye (spirit born holy) are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now, if any man have not the spirit of Christ, he is none of his. 2 Cor. v. 17 : Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature. Gal. vi. 7 ; viii. 15 : Be not deceived ; God is not mocked ; that is the spirit God immortal. The pagan wooden god ; the popish dark ages god, that would take the heretic that they had burned to death (though God's spirit born babe holy) and resurrect them to life and supernaturally miraculously keep them alive forever, and keep them in an endless hell of fire roasting torture, or that their god would burn himself, he being alone immortal life imparted to them eternally. And the doctor of divinity's god, who will do the same roasting torture of the wicked, and resurrect to immortal life rotten bodies or blood life egg shells. (He must be a very sickly god, if such sickly honored filled physicians are employed by him.) Be not deceived, God is not mocked. (The spirit God, sovereign supreme of the

universe, that I worship never was, nor will he be, ever sick; he has no use for D.D.'s.) For whatsoever a man sows, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to the flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the spirit shall of the spirit reap life everlasting. For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature. Priests who attempt to give a creed commandment of men-god doctrines are of the heathen mythology myth god order. Job ii. 12.

26.] *Even so.*—I not only acknowledge this truth, but do also approve of it. *Seemed good.*—This shows that by nature we attain not saving faith, by our own judgment understanding or knowledge; but through God's hidden and secret illumination, immortal life's spirit wisdom, obtained only by spirit birth of the soul's spirit egg mind.

27.] *Are delivered.*—He means the universal kingdom which he hath received from God his Father in the quality of mediator. And especially over his church or spirit born children of grace, love seed, holiness unto the Lord, to accomplish their salvation according to the Father's everlasting decree, which also he only reveals by words and by works. *No man knoweth.*—The mystery of the Son's person (and consequently of the Holy Trinity), as likewise of his incarnation, and all the properties of his office of mediator is only known by God, by a perfect knowledge. And all that man or angels know thereof is through his revelation to mortals by his spirit word creation power Son, to whom it only belongeth to reveal it; and he only having the property of being the word of God (John i. 1) and revealer of his secrets (Ps. ii. 7; John i. 18; xvi. 13: Spirit of truth, Christ, will show God's children things to come.)

28.] *That labor.*—In your souls and consciences, by a lively feeling of your past ingratitude to God for all his past daily bestowments for your temporal blood life necessities and infinite love of the dear Redeemer unrequited, and your sluggish want of appreciation, and practical application of the invaluable treasure placed within your reach, when you strive with all your heart, soul, might and will and mind for spirit life immortal birth; while your labors heretofore have been for hard masters, your worst enemies: the world's approval, recreations, dances, and morbid fiendish appetites, perhaps of drunkenness, and other dissipations and hurtful lusts; and the prince of darkness and his hosts of evil seducers, all void of love, peace or rest (Isa. lv. 2).

29.] *Take.*—Yield yourselves to the Lord by obedience of faith to obtain immortal life, that you employ to obtain nature food for your transient fleeting blood life, putting off all pride and rebellion. (1 Cor. vii. 22; ix. 21; 1 Pet. ii. 16.) *Learn.*—Imitate my example in these virtues which are fitting and necessary for every Christian life unto full salvation of your souls.

30.] *Is easy.*—Or sweet: namely, to those that are regenerated spirit born of Christ's immortal life seed, whose sanctified will, inclined by God's Spirit, doth no more oppose Christ's law, which in the corrupt mortal is the only cause of the law's severity towards them, but consents unto it, and sets their whole delight therein (Rom. vii. 22; viii. 9). And this yoke of Christ's law, unsufferable without him (Acts xv. 10). To the intolerable yoke of pharisaical orders (Matt. xxiii. 4). And to the cruel tyrannical yoke of the devil, and other princes of this sin cursed world (Isa. ix. 3; x. 27).

CHAPTER XII.

1.] *At that time.*—This history is not mentioned according to the order of time, as appears by the other two evangelists. *To pluck.*—According to the permission of the law. Deut. xxiii. 25: When thou comest into the standing corn of thy neighbor, then thou mayst pluck the ears with thine hand; but thou shalt not move a sickle unto thy neighbor's standing corn.

2.] *Is not.*—The law did forbid them to dress any food upon the sabbath day (Exod. xvi. 23; xxxi. 13), which the Pharisees did superstitiously extend to those petty acts of plucking and rubbing of ears of wheat.

3.] *Have ye not.*—The meaning is, the rigorous observance of ceremonies must yield to necessity, when there is no contempt nor profane disobedience, as David did without being reproved for it.

5.] *Or have ye not.*—Seeing God hath not tied his ministers in his temple to the observance of the sabbath's rest, they do their ministry that day, though it be very painful. My disciples likewise following and serving me may very well be exempted from it, seeing I am truly the Messiah and Lord of the sabbath, and as the service of the temple sanctifieth those. *Profane.*—He applies

himself to the capacities of the hearers, when he calls that profane which the priests in the exercise of their ministry did in the temple.

6.] *Is one.*—I myself am the prince spirit word creation power son of Almighty God, and I am Lord of the sabbath and the temple, and the Messiah, who really and in truth am all that which was personified by the temple, and the service belonging to it, the spirit temple of saints.

7.] *If ye had.*—Another reason which hath relation to the Pharisees' cruel hypocrisy, who through an ostentation of external discipline went against charity, not pitying the poor apostles' distress from hunger, which they should have volunteered to assuage in a plentiful manner.

8.] *For the.*—He proclaims a reason for the apostles' innocence; for, if there were any offense in the act, he being the judge of all the earth, and under the power delegated to him by his Father, the creator, and the real truthful owner of the earth, and every grain of wheat, corn, or other grain, or life fruit trees, or other vegetation life inanimate; they were all his spirit life word products of nature elements, which in obedience to his commands brought them forth, and each grain of wheat his apostles had eaten was produced by his hand, and each grain's chit germ of life reproduction *ad infinitum*, until the close of time, was life from his word, without which none would have ever been in existence; and the same breath power of lives chit reproduction in Adam, Eve, and all their sin lust race; even they, the Pharisee fault-finders, were the products thereof, and were daily feeding on his products. Man, it was true, plowed the ground, sowed and dragged or cultivated in the seed, but the earth was God's, and the sun and the rains early and late, without which aids man's labor would produce no increase or life whatever. And the sabbath days were his, for if his sustaining hand was withdrawn, earth and sun, and system of worlds, would into wild chaotic masses rush down through space, and crush of worlds and earthquakes, and thunders roar, and lightnings' flashes alone would light up the wild chaotic inane mass of matter void of form as ere creation's dawn (John i. 1 to 5, inclusive).

9.] *Synagogue.*—The Jewish church, which, with all the faults of the Jews, were not as close shut up as ours to-day.

10.] *To heal.*—The Pharisees' traditions did forbid the use of artificial and natural physick upon the sabbath day, unless it were a case of extreme necessity; and now they apply the same to

miraculous cures and healings (Luke xiii. 14; John ix. 16). *Sabbath*.—They were extremely conscientious in observing outward ceremonies, without taking any care to preserve true piety (like all church and state churches of this day, 1871). With Pope Pío Nono, Queen Victoria, and Emperor Alexander, popes of the Roman Catholic Church, the Episcopal Church of England, and the Greek Church; dust mortal images, that soon rot like a rotten potato; pagan gods, of which their wooden gods were images. *Accuse him*.—As a despiser and transgressor of their men tradition false creed laws. In like manner pagan Roman Catholic false doctrines of wicked men are held sacred.

15.] *Withdrew*.—Not for any fear he had to die, but because his hour was not yet come. *Them all*.—That had need of being healed.

18.] *Judgment*.—Isa. xlii. 1: I have put my spirit upon him; he shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles. Matt. iii. 16: And John saw the spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon Jesus.

19.] *Not strive*.—He shall not seek after worldly glory, whereupon arise great strifes among men; he shall proceed in all humility in himself and mildness towards others.

20.] *Reed*.—That is, he will support the weak. *Smoking*.—Flax wherein some fire is fallen. *Till he send*.—Till he be entered into possession and exercise of his everlasting kingdom; from thence he will subdue all his foes; unto victory, everlasting death, annihilation.

21.] *His name*.—The name of the spirit prince Son of Almighty God, Jesus Christ; in his name the Gentiles trust, but the Jews would not trust in Christ Jesus, earth's spirit king of the Jews and Gentiles, spirit born of God, his Father's immortal spirit life seed in him. The Masonic fraternity, that claim to have originated with the Jews in building Solomon's temple, and saved many Jewish lives during the horrid murders of the Roman Catholic popery dominancy of the dark ages, began in the year 1000, in York, England, by practical masons; also reject Christ Jesus, unless they were, or become, spirit born of his immortal love of life spirit seed; then they seldom, if ever, after a truthful conversion to spiritual life, attend the lodges; the brotherly kindness pledged by passwords, and grips of the hand, etc., are all moral and Scriptural; but a vile politician or speculator will use the moral kindness to corrupt the legislators and office-holders

to the ruin of the government or state, and vile Masons will, by way of the honest Mason's confidence in his solemn pledges, borrow money, and make utterly false pretences, and rob a Christian brother in the same way that a vile hypocritical Judas church member will defraud the real Christian brother; and the robber of the innocent, like Cain, claim not to be their brother's keeper, and the wicked defrauder will ever slander and nickname the person they rob.

22.] *Blind.*—Blinded by the devil in mortal sight, as well as spiritual, as are the earth's masses.

23.] *The son.*—The son, the Christ, namely, the promised Messiah, by way of woman's seed from David's offspring, for Jew and Gentile were united in him, by way of Boaz, a Jew, and Ruth, a Gentile.

24.] *Beelzebub.*—The nickname Beelzebub. The unpardonable sin nicknamers, Matt. xii. 31, 32, the tare seed children of the devil, gave the heir of immortal life, Jesus Christ, the prince spirit word Son of God. The same children of the devil's tare seed of evil call Jesus a bastard; others blubber Jack, for the name of the baptizer to repentance; and Bob, or Roberts & Co. for the honorable firm of Roberts & Co.; and Robert's son, Robertson, etc.: clearly showing the effervescence of unclean spirit nickname devils in their evil nature.

25.] *Jesus knew.*—Their nickname Beelzebub thoughts, that would gratify evil nature.

26.] *If Satan.*—The ground of this reason is, because the Lord did drive nicknaming devils out of men's souls by his saving love doctrines that drove out hatred and envy, as well as out of their hearts and bodies, by his mighty spirit truth words. Wherefore none but evil ones could suspect that there was any collusion with the evil spirit, as impostors oftentimes have; at whose instance the devil comes out of a body to gain many men's souls by seduction, superstition, false men tradition doctrines, and unclean spirit manifestations through unclean spirit mediums: in mockery of Christ the mediator between the spirit God love, and spirit love begotten children of God on earth; and of the coming spiritual outpourings of God's truth manifestations as in these Day Thoughts, given I humbly trust and believe through me a worm, unto the churches on earth (Job xxv. 6; Isa. xli. 14).

27.] *If I.*—You show your malice in judging evil of me, because you have exorcists of your own nation, which make profes-

sion of driving out devils out of men (Acts xix. 13), and do not condemn them, though you have no more reason to mistrust my actions than theirs; it is clear then that because I am good, and ye are evil, I am love, and ye are hatred; out of kindness I cast out soul destroying devils, out of your hearts and souls unclean devil malice evil nature. You nickname me Beelzebub, instead of calling me Lord, such as you will continue to call opprobrious names to serve your father the devil. It is uncertain whether Jewish exorcists did operate by any gift of God and calling upon his name, or by some unlawful art. Christ does not approve or disprove; but is content with confuting his nicknaming adversaries by the example of these. *Judges*.—That is, their acts shall condemn you. Nicknamers love their devil evil nature.

28.] *But if I*.—You do plainly see that I dispossess the devil of the tyranny which he hath usurped over souls, hearts, and bodies; acknowledge that I am that great and only king of the church, who alone have power to subdue mine enemy, though I spare his life until his probation ends, which is the close of time; and Satan and his hosts are the unclean spirit tare weeds, that like nature weed products are to try the patience of, and make all who would live in heaven strive with industry to store immortal life food, with the same energies that they lay up earth food stores for their brief blood life; such I take as prey from Satan, which otherwise, and to every other man, would be impossible.

29.] *Or else*.—If the kingdom of God were not come, the devil could not be overcome, and consequently could not be spoiled. *Enter*.—Isa. xlix. 25: The prey of the terrible shall be delivered.

30.] *He that*.—Here Christ begins another discourse, the meaning is, All those not allied to me, as their spiritual new creature spirit born of God's love life immortal in me are mine enemies; there is no division between these two ways; one by way of me, the narrow spirit life immortal way leads safely to heaven; the other broad way of death inevitable, of soul and body; which all Satan's tare seed children, and unspirit born Adamic sin lust seed travel in to inevitable destruction unless they 'bout face, forward march, double quick into freedom's lighted spirit life eternal way of salvation by Christ Jesus, the only bearer of conditional life pardon to earth's rebels sentenced to death. *Gathereth not*.—He that teacheth any other doctrine than the doctrines of truth as revealed in the Scriptures, doth spoil and undo it as far as in him lieth; or, they that seek salvation anywhere but in me shall lose

all life in inane chaotic death night e'ernal, that hath no life rays.

31.] *Wherefore*.—Because of this contrariety between you and me, you may fall in an extreme degree which is irremissible; I will give you notice of the property and quality of this sin, that you may take heed of it. *Forgiven*.—May be pardoned by true conversion in faith and repentance, by way of spirit birth new creature life immortal. *Against the*.—Against this action and proper operation, which is to enlighten inwardly, and to seal God's truth within the heart, the blood life chit giving it some relish and feeling of God's grace, and exciting some spiritual motion in it (1 Cor. xii. 3; Heb. vi. 4; x. 29). *Shall not*.—The cause whereof is in God's will, who hath not appointed two regenerations, or spiritual resurrections. He hath not promised to begin again anew the work of his grace, which was brought so far as the gift of the spirit life by way of Christ Jesus, his spirit word and only spirit begotten Son: when it is once destroyed by a general apostasy, and by the total loss of this spirit life gift, and extinction of this light (Isa. xi. 14; v. 24; Dan. xii. 2). Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24: In his sin that he hath sinned, in them shall he die. 27: And when the wicked man turneth away from his wickedness that he hath committed, and doeth that which is lawful and right, he shall save his soul alive.

32.] *Speaketh*.—Shall out of ignorance, without illumination of the Spirit of God, have thought or uttered blasphemy against Christ (1 Cor. xii. 3; 1 Tim. i. 13). *Against the Son*.—Not only against his person and his offices, but chiefly against that which is his proper operation, namely, against his word, which he doth outwardly reveal and declare, as he himself being the spirit word power of creation, and wisdom of God. *But whosoever*.—Highest ecclesiastical office-holder, preacher or lay member of the church, or outside of the church sinner, that hath been driven by the extreme wickedness and impiety of his heart, or hers, as to utter nickname words of blasphemy, as calling the spirit word of God power in Christ Jesus, Beelzebub, the power of devils; which is a blasphemous outrage against God and his truth, of which he hath had the seal of persuasion and knowledge in his heart by God's spirit, which is the chief sin of the devil and the damned, and the very height of the wicked's malice, and sheweth forth like mean malice in calling persons or places by opprobrious nicknames. Editors who publish nicknames should be severely

punished by earthly tribunals as an assault. *Neither in this world.*—Never, eternally, as St. Mark saith, iii. 29. Or, neither in this world by the effectual application of the ministry of the gospel, by the Holy Ghost, in finding the peace and joy of conscience; nor in the world to come, the pure holy spirit life eternal. Acts iii. 19; 1 Thess. iii. 13: To the end that he may establish your hearts unblameable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints, shows they are all then resurrected and come from heaven's paradise with their Lord, to witness the last death of all the unholy (Rev. xx. 11).

33.] *Make the.*—Put the case, or grant that the tree is good or bad, the fruits will be like it, therefore seeing you are perverse, you can neither judge nor speak but perversely of me and of my works; such will oppose no doubt God's truths in these day thoughts of light.

34.] *Speak good.*—As if he should have said, Your nickname Beelzebub words may well show what you are. Gen. iii. 4: And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die. All who preach that the wicked are immortal in hell fire torture, or in any other place with life existence, preach the same doctrine that the devil in the serpent preached to Eve, and flatly contradict God. Gen. ii. 16: The Lord God said, 17: Thou shalt surely die. 7: And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground. Gen. iii. 19: In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou (not part of thou) return unto the ground; for out of it thou wast taken; for dust thou art (not part and balance immortal indissoluble, indestructible), and unto dust shalt thou return. Eccles. xii. 7; Matt. iii. 7; xxiii. 33; Luke iii. 7: O generation of vipers, not immortals. 1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto. 2 Tim. i. 10: But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour, Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death in souls of believers (of all Adam's race, they may by spirit birth, of Christ's spirit life immortal, thereby in new spirit creature life live), and brought (spirit) life and immortality to light through the gospel. John v. 40: And ye will not come to me that ye might have life.

35.] *A good man.*—Hath in store only good things, love, goodness, mercy and truth, he is a gentleman, she is a lady, they call persons or places by their right names, they speak truthfully when they accuse the wicked of wrong doing. They try to persuade the drunkard to save his temporal life and respectability and

reason ; and try to persuade all to do right, seek God through Christ for a clean heart, and a right spirit birth spirit of love, truth, goodness and mercy, that thinks not evil but good thoughts. *And an evil man.*—Thinks evil thoughts continually ; their minds are stored with the spirit of their viper spirit tare seed father the devil. They make all around them unhappy by ungentlemanly or unladylike language ; they prefer to call persons or places by a mean opprobrious nickname. They slander the good, and circulate utterly false stories against the righteous, as they did against Jesus and his disciples.

36.] *Idle word.*—Nicknames, vain and unprofitable words, which are of no sense nor use, falsehoods, falsely speaking evil of others by falsely accusing them of wrong that they never did ; to cover the way of themselves, the wrong doers, swearers, story tellers of unclean lust affinity, any words spoken untruthful, and any words spoken not for the glory of God, nor for the good of one's neighbors ; how much more then of blasphemous words shall they give account to the Judge of all the earth, who is holy.

37.] *By thy.*—This seems to be similar to judgments in which the accused is cleared or condemned, according to the answers and confessions. But the Lord extends it to a more general sense ; namely that in God's judgment mortals shall be judged wholly by their words, as the nearest and most ordinary effects and signs of what is in their hearts or souls mind thoughts, desires and consummations, or was in their hearts when alive on earth, in dust body, that like earth's fruit soon rots and returns to earth as it was before life animation. The words each one of all Adam's race have uttered are recorded in each one's own pass-book memory, and in the recording angel's spirit telegram book of remembrance. Mal. iii. 16 : Then they that feared the Lord spake often one to another ; and the Lord hearkened and heard, and a book of remembrance was written before him, for them that feared the Lord and that thought upon his name (not nickname, Beelzebub). 17 : And they shall be mine, saith the Lord of hosts. The words are remembered, and the secret prayer thoughts. But their body blood or heart life ceases forever when it dies and rots ; no life will ever again pulsate their corruption dust bodies (1 Cor. xv. 44, 50).

38.] *We would see.*—A demand of curiosity, which church and state officials ever exact of God's spirit born children ; for their men manufactured D.D. and professor intellect college worldly wisdom medicine, never cured a sin sick Adamic soul or heart ;

much less are they capable of doctoring any divinity gods; all the gods they are competent to doctor are pagan like themselves, material gods, and resurrection of rotten apples, and rotten potatoes, and rotten human bodies made of them, and grass products, instead of a spirit God, spirit born of spirit, new creatures of spirit seed, of the spirit immortal Father of spirits, not rotten bodies.

39.] *Adulterous*.—Disloyal in God's service, Isa. lvii. 3: or a bastard and degenerate generation. *But the sign*.—Instead of the miracle which you desire, I will give you instruction by the figure of Jonah. For as he, after he had been three days in the fish's belly, which fish (Jonah i. 17) was made by the Lord expressly for the purpose (not a whale, with its nets of bone, as infidels assert falsely, to limit God's power to prepare a fish with sufficient capacity to swallow Jonah, shows the impudent assurances of Satan's tare weeds), came out to preach the will of God to the Ninevites (save that Jonah forgot or had not studied his Bible, like many modern preachers, who study false theology instead of the Scriptures. Jer. xviii. 7, 8: If that nation against whom I have pronounced turn from their evil, I will repent of the evil that I thought to do unto them), so three days after I have given my woman's seed spirit begotten holy blood life a sacrifice for the sins of holy spirit born of my spirit seed holy believers, I will with my spirit life power take the flesh body void of blood life from the tomb and speak through it in communication with my disciples. And by my resurrection (Rom. i. 4) I will convince them of the truth of my person and word. Luke xxiv. 39: A spirit hath not flesh and bones (not blood), as you see me have.

40.] *Three days*.—A common expression then, as now; three days' work may be limited to eight hours out of the twenty-four, as now is the law of some States; but the resurrection of the flesh and bones body of Jesus (by Christ's spirit word Son of God power, with which there was a unity of love the same as with his saints) was on the third day after the crucifixion; the labor of conquering death was finished early on the morning of the third day, now kept as our sabbath, remembrance of the day our Lord triumphed over the devil and death (Heb. ii. 14). *In the heart*.—Viz., within an earth heart rock; a tomb hewn in a rock; a vault.

41.] *Shall [or does] condemn it*.—They repented in Nineveh of their evil deeds at Jonah's preaching, and their nation was spared, according to God's law (Jer. xviii. 8). The spirit begotten Son

of God preached to the Jewish nation, as did also his apostles; but the Jews repented not, and their national judgment day came, and they were swept by the Roman soldiers from their promised land, by their breach of the conditions of the solemn contract made by their fathers; they were persecuted unto death for centuries, and but a few years since they were sorely taxed, persecuted, and plundered, and excluded from cities in some countries. How much more tolerable the state of the inhabitants of Nineveh!

42.] *Condemn it.*—This is to be understood as rather referring to the matter of the ruin of the Jewish nation, as occupiers of the inheritance of their fathers, than to the person of the visiting Southern queen of Solomon's glory.

43.] *When the.*—After Christ had confuted his malignant adversaries upon the occasion of the possessed man's deliverance, he now instructs the people, wishing them to beware that the unclean spirit is the devil, or his tare seed child, and that the soul's spirit mind egg or eggs are susceptible of impregnation by the unclean spirit life of the devil. Matt. xiii. 38: The tares are the children of the wicked one. 39: The enemy that sowed them is the devil. 40: As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of this world; clearly showing that all the tare seed children of the devil in wicked mortals are Satan's unclean spirit children, that live as long as the devil their father does, viz., to the end of time as aforesaid, the end of the world; when they are to be consumed in a moment, by Christ's word as judge (Heb. ii. 14). The unclean spirits cast out of Mary Magdalene, and out of the men in the tombs, and others, show that the unclean spirits seek quarters together in some congenial human soul, viz., drunkard's unclean spirit, at his blood life body death, seeks, without finding any rest, a drunkard's living blood life body, and urges the poor drunkards to drink, to satiate their thirst, but the unclean spirit's thirst and unrest remains unsatisfied; they find no rest. Spirit mediums keep unclean spirits busy at the present day; no rest will they have until infinite mercy of God the Holy Ghost withdraws its staying power to God's flaming sword of justice fire; then as infinite love the Lord Jesus Christ leaves the mediatorial seat at the right hand of his Father, and is crowned judge by his Father, and takes his seat on his great white throne in the heavens above, surrounded by his saints and angels who accompany him (Rev. xx. 11).

44.] *Empty.*—Namely, of Christ and of his spirit, to whom as

to the stronger (the devil's tare seed child that had left its dead flesh lust body to return to its earthly elements in the earth grave, hell covered from mortal vision, dictionary) the unclean spirit had yielded or fled from the soul of the man, woman, or child described, which had quite likely previous to its departure called Jesus Beelzebub, for unclean spirit devils in mortals call nicknames opprobrious, applying them to persons and places where children of God reside; it gratifies and scratches their evil nature or unclean spirit devil within. *Swept.*—Figurative terms, as much as to say made ready to receive him, all virtues which are hindrances and odious to the devil being rooted out of it, and vices established and placed there instead of them, makes a demon garnish for evil unclean spirits' abodes.

45.] *Seven.*—Viz., a great number, many unclean spirits often possessing one body (Mark v. 9; xvi. 9). *Enter in.*—Christ shows by this similitude how fierce and eager Satan is to overcome again any one who by grace hath been delivered out of his bonds; the drunkard is tempted, when reformed, to return again to his poison drink, to drown his little reason at last; the nicknamer the devil, and his angels who assume the appearance of angels of light when dubbed D.D., and Rev., and editor, and apostle, in the case of Judas the betrayer, and tare seed children of the devil, who are devils in human form on earth, possessed with unclean spirits that blaspheme God's name, nickname his Son Beelzebub, and God's children by opprobrious names, liars, thieves, murderers of soul and body when they can, and after body death they as unclean spirits or devils seek rest and find none. (43.) And they deprive all on earth with life of peace, when they can, by calling others nicknames, nicknaming their places of residence, slanders, etc.

46.] *His brethren.*—According to some they were his flesh woman's seed blood life kindred (Matt. xiii. 55; Mark vi. 3; John ii. 12; vii. 3; Acts i. 14; 1 Cor. ix. 5; Gal. i. 19).

47.] *Thy mother.*—Ps. li. 5: Behold I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me. Gen. iii. 19: Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. 15: It shall bruise thy head, her seed, woman's nature seed egg, that at puberty, until forty-five years of age, when healthy monthly appears, and if not quickened with male milt life seed, soon passes off as excrements, wholly void of any life seed whatever, of such an egg quickened to life by the spirit promise word of God uttered in Eden; when body blood life death was pronounced by the judge of all the

earth on Adam and Eve, our first earthly nature parents. Mary, the nature mother of the woman's seed egg blood life nature of the body of Jesus, was herself under the sentence of death, and her only hope of salvation was by way of the Lord Jesus Christ, not as her son, but by way of God's spirit word promise spirit life immortal seed life, that alone lived after nature's blood life body was dead and dissolved into nature gases, and refuse dust that will consume into ashes and fall with the earth's conflagration through lighted space into inane outer darkness bottomless pit chaos. That blood life body of the Virgin Mary, like Eve in Eden, and all her race, was, and will be reduced to dust; such is God's sentence irrevocable. Gen. iii. 19: Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return; and 17: Cursed is the ground for thy sake, in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life. How can there possibly be a lengthening out of human blood life when their bodies are to partake of nature food produced from the earth by body labor? All the days of thy life means all body life ends with blood life death. Then the Virgin Mary had nothing immortal by nature blood life birth of immortality over any other virtuous female of all Adam and Eve's sin lust begotten race. The Saviour then knowing all this, and that spirit life immortal which alone was in him from Jehovah God, Almighty Sovereign Supreme of the universe of lighted boundless space. 1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen nor can see. From whence then do the popish cardinals, bishops, and preachers of the Romish Church and their pope obtain their blasphemous false assertion that the Virgin Mary was the mother of God? She is a far superior mother to the popish mother, church and state, or the mother of antichrist popes, and their titled church and state nobility that swears allegiance to the beast (Rev. xiii. 15, 16, 17, 18), the Latin-tongued serpent. John iii. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the spirit is spirit. The Virgin Mary was a descendant of Boaz, a Jew, and Ruth, a Gentile; and by way of the line of David, who admits himself begotten in iniquity and conceived in sin (Ps. li. 5), therefore clearly demonstrating that Matthat was the father of the Virgin Mary (Luke iii. 24). And that Mary being herself born of flesh was but flesh with blood life, sentenced to death, at her brief probation on earth close. John ii. 3: The mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine. 4: Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have

I to do with thee? (It was the spirit word Son of God that thus spoke, by which power alliance to God alone miracles could be performed, and the separation of spirit from matter flesh life of blood was not yet come.) John iii. 6: That which is born of the spirit (not of flesh or body, nature blood life birth) is spirit. John iv. 24: God is a Spirit. John iii. 5: Jesus said, Except a man be born of water and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. John xi. 25: Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection and the life; he that believeth in me, though he were (dead spiritually in trespasses and sins) dead, yet shall he live. 26: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. John vi. 63: It is the spirit that quickeneth, the flesh profiteth nothing. The words that I speak unto you they are spirit, and they are life. 68: Thou hast the words of eternal life. The flesh profiteth nothing. Therefore the spirit word Son of God was in no wise benefited by the woman's seed spirit begotten egg flesh body, it profited him nothing, for he could have made innumerable millions of bodies in human form without Mary or any other mortal aid, as he had done when he made Adam and Eve, and he likewise spake through a body he made in human form, to Moses, Abraham, Gideon, Aaron, and others previous to the spirit begotten sacrifice, woman's seed body, by way of which Mary and all Adam's race that believed on or in Christ Jesus, with all their heart, soul, mind, and blood life strength, were promised immortal spirit new creature life. 2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15: Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature. Be not deceived, God is not mocked (with dead rotten body resurrections nor eternal hellfire tortures). For whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the spirit shall of the spirit reap life everlasting. For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature. Rom. viii. 9: But ye are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the spirit of Christ, he is none of his. 1 Cor. xv. 23: Christ the first fruits, afterwards they that are Christ's at his coming, at blood life's probation close. 37: Thou sowest not that body that shall be. 44: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. 50: Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption (rotten bodies) inherit incorruption. Heb. ii. 14: Forasmuch then as the children

(spirit born of Christ's spirit love seed) are (not will be) partakers of flesh and blood; Christ Jesus also himself likewise took part (woman's seed, not man's) of the same, that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is the devil. *Exod. xx. 12: Honor thy father and thy mother.* Christ's spirit father and mother was God (*Heb. xii. 9*).

48.] *Who is.*—In mine office, and order of spiritual life, I acknowledge no kindred in the flesh, but hold to be my brethren and allies in spirit only, and equally, all true believers who are God's spiritual children, adopted and regenerated by him, by way of the soul's spirit egg mind new creature spirit life being; and who show the true proofs thereof by their works. Christ speaks not here by way of contempt, but truthfully to illustrate the nothingness of flesh blood life void of spirit love life immortal. Blood life is under the sentence of death, and at longest but a compound dream, mostly unpleasant, as a panoramic vision of good and evil. Christ preferred infinitely the spiritual before the carnal parentage,—his spirit Father, the supreme sovereign of the universe, to poor transitory blood life affinities that was accursed for rebellion against God, and sentenced to death (*Gen. iii. 19*).

49.] *My mother and my brethren.*—Clearly showing the nothingness of nature birth, if the soul spirit egg mind is unimpregnated with immortal life from the spirit God sovereign of the universe; who only hath immortality, and is the Father, and hath no need of the aid of a mother in begetting immortal spirit beings. *Heb. xii. 9: We have had fathers of our flesh, which corrected us; and we gave them reverence. Shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of Spirits and live? 1 John v. 1: Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God; and every one that loveth him that begat loveth him also that is begotten of him. 4: Whosoever is born of God overcometh the world; and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith (faith is trusting in and wholly relying upon God in Christ without a sinful doubt). 12: He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son hath not life. Rom. viii. 9: If any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.* Thus it is clearly stated Christ sows his spirit love life immortal seed, brought by him to earth from his spirit Father, in the intellectual soul spirit egg mind, through the heart's blood life will door to the soul mind; thereby they are born of God, without a nature or spiritual mother. The soul is the spirit mother. *Gal. iii. 28:*

There is neither male nor female; for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. There are no such things as female nor male sex among spirit beings, the soul mind embryo thoughts are without sex qualities, as hath animal life, and another proof positive that no sex bodies are ever raised from their rottenness or refuse dust and ashes of sin lust begotten nature life.

50.] *Whosoever*.—Showing clearly that God is not a respecter of kings or popish triplicate crowns; but whoever humble themselves as a little child and no others, and that fear to disobey God's commands clearly stated in statute laws by his dearly beloved spirit word spirit creation power spirit son, who veiled a portion of his infinite spirit love life immortal from his Father in his promise word in Eden that woman's seed should bruise the serpent's unclean spirit, that seduced Eve to disobey God's imperative Eden law, all those begotten truthfully of God in Christ seek not to be popes or titled lords of God's heritage, but to be servants of all, and like his disciples, chosen by the Lord, not from the worldly wise college-bred, but illiterate fishermen. Like Gideon's army, they must be small, like myself in worldly wisdom, that all the glory of intellectual development from the Lord of himself, through me a worm, may truthfully appear as the Lord's not my wisdom. *Will of my Father*.—The dear Redeemer gave all the glory to his beloved Father, the source of his spirit life immortality and wisdom, and power infinite and alone infallible, of all who ever lived on earth. All spirit born of God in Christ, the same is my mother, sister, and brother; there is no male or female spirit with immortal life, for all partake of God's immortality and are as drops of water or ten drops of water to eternal lighted space were it water, in resemblance of God or as one ray of light's point, or ten, to God the boundless light of lighted space. The Virgin Mary could not obtain spirit soul mind birth by any other than God in Christ the Holy Ghost, and he in his love spirit life Father, one in love. Earth life all dies, and remains dead. All Adam's race is sentenced to death. Christ is the life (not Adam's breath of God) and the resurrection of all soul minds begotten and born of God (John xi. 25, 26; 1 John v. 18).

CHAPTER XIII.

1.] *The house.*—The house where he had taught the aforementioned things.

2.] *Were gathered.*—Desire to hear the doctrines of the gospel invited them to come to Jesus, although not at all with the same affection.

3.] *In parables.*—This was a kind of teaching used by mythology poets, and then common among the Jews, and followed by our Saviour as very useful to make the truth known to their ignorant minds steeped in heathen parabolic myths, endless hell fires, and Egyptian mummy body resurrections. Malachi, the last prophet, died four hundred years previous, and to cause the apprehension to enter into the spirit soul mind intellect of the hearers, by a well appropriated similitude of some framed narration; wherein a parable differeth from an allegory, which takes the figure of a true history; but in various senses, to represent moral or spiritual things and form an enigma which hath more obscurity and brevity than a parable, and from a plain similitude inserted in the natural and proper extent of the discourse; and is therefore clear and plain to be understood by those who desire to learn of the Lord instead of perverting it to contradict God's plain infallible statute laws, as men tradition false creeds often do. Many of the parables used by our Lord were warnings and rebukes to the Jews. Without a parable he did not speak to them.

4.] *Way side.*—Gospel seed sowed by travelers, sectarians, and infidels with false ideas, or wilful lies, lead the poor to drop from their soul mind's truth.

5.] *Stony places.*—The man or others of his family swears, drinks intoxicating liquors that drown reason, or they have been brought up by infidel parents.

6.] *Scorched.*—It is spoiled by too much heat, not having soothing love. Anger consumes love seed.

7.] *Thorns.*—Lusts of sexes, vicious appetites, infidelity, worldly aspirations, pride, etc.

8.] *Good ground.*—Repentant, weeping, humble, childlike believers of God's truths, and whose hearts souls will mind and strength are in earnest for immortal life, and striving to obtain God's forgiveness for the past, love for the present and evermore,

and obedience, love, gratitude and adoration to God; and joining Christ's army of light, and putting blood life at stake in warring against the devil's army of darkness, like a good faithful war soldier at his post. *Some a hundredfold.*—According to their faith and labors. Compared to wheat. One grain of wheat in good ground and proper climate, in a good season, produces thirty grains of wheat in each wheat head. Sometimes it sends up two stalks; sixty grains are then produced; and sometimes three stalks, and a hundred grains of wheat. Thus the spirit born soul mind receives of the spirit of Christ in greater or less quantities, according to their improvement of their intellect spirit talents and faith.

9.] *Who hath ears.*—Spiritual intellectual discernment, enlightened by the Holy Ghost, faith ears of the soul.

10.] *Unto them.*—Contrary to the clear and familiar way which thou usest towards us.

11.] *Because.*—Only spirit born new creatures can receive and discern spiritual truths.

12.] *Whosoever.*—In spiritual things God gives the external means and directions of his word to those who aspire for heavenly spiritual life immortal to guide them to seek the grace proclamation salvation by compliance with its requisitions, as all offers of salvation are conditional with obedience to the directions and commands of the only Mediator and commander-in-chief of time's army of light truth immortal life that warreth against the army of falsehood darkness and death; that they may, after seeking for love life, in the gospel truth spirit life promise words of God in Christ the spirit tree of life impregnating intellect fruit mediator, who gives spiritual peace love nourishment to all who have opened their soul's will door into the spirit egg mind belief of God's spirit word promise conditional with compliance to truthful directions, which narrow way alone leads to immortal spirit life, by way of spirit soul mind intellectual spirit birth of Christ's quickening spirit seed of immortal spirit life; but from them that have not the inward gift of the spirit of Christ in the soul womb spirit intellect egg, he taketh away even the external light of his word, and his other gifts. *That he hath.*—St. Luke saith, That which he seemeth to have; for none can truly say, he indeed hath spiritual gifts, unless they have the spirit of Christ. Rom. viii. 9: If any man have not the spirit of Christ, he is none of his, unless they be rooted in Christ by faith love and spirit new creature life immortal.

13.] *Parables*.—Parables are not God's fixed plain statute laws. Isa. xxxv. 8: The wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err therein; and no spirit born holy mortal can mistake the narrow way of holiness, truth, and love, paved with God's statute laws of truth; for the broad way of parabolic myths, falsely construed (the plain statute laws of God to mortals is life, and death; Gen. iii. 19; Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27) into an endless hell torture death, ever dying and never dead, nor into rotten body resurrections (Luke xx. 38; Rom. vi. 2, 3).

14.] *Esaias*.—Isa. vi. 9: Hear ye indeed, but understand not (as if I should lecture about arithmetical problems to unlearned people that had not learned figures). And see ye indeed, but perceive not; the partakers of the expanded wheat life bodies, in their daily nature bread food, seldom, if ever, any of the millions of partakers daily of bread, think or comprehend that all the grain life expansion is the expansion of God's spirit life breath, in his spirit life power word. Gen. i. 11: And God said, Let the earth; the earth of itself could do nothing of the kind; but let God's life infinite in every breath ray expanding, *ad infinitum*, until the life ray returned to God, its immortal life fountain, the spirit returns to God (Eccles. xii. 7). Boundless upper seventh heavens ea, the same as the waterdrops of rain unused return by way of rills, brooks, creeks, and rivers, back to the ocean fountain from whence in misty atoms it was breathed forth into the air and wafted by mercy clouds grace breath winds to water the dust earth with life sustaining food, for animate with spirit expansion of God's breath life in Adam and Eve; as in like manner in all animate life animals, or animate and inanimate life. Job xii. 10: In God's hand is the soul of every living thing, and the breath of all mankind: as the rain-water unused returns to its original fountain, and the sun's light is withdrawn at night from the earth; in like manner God's spirit life breath returns to God that gave it. Eccles. xii. 7: Then shall the dust (of mortal bodies at blood life death) return to the earth as it was (previous to its vegetation life formation; gases, dust, and other elements of nature). And the spirit shall all return unto God who gave it. Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15: He that soweth to the spirit (that returns to God the fountain of all life at body death) shall of the spirit reap life everlasting.

15.] *For this people's*.—What the prophet ascribes to the secret counsel of God, Matthew doth to the stubbornness of the people, for the one cannot be separated from the other.

16.] *For they see.*—The glory light truth immortal of the Son of God, knowing by way of spirit birth of his spirit love seed, that he was their Saviour.

17.] *Which ye see.*—The fulfilling of these things which they had prophesied.

18.] *Sower.*—One that removes grain from the garner, and sows it on prepared ground. When the ground is covered by native forest trees, no seed, good or bad, can be cultivated, the animate life seed remaining in the garner unsown, like inanimate life nature seed produces no life or body increase; thus the female eggs of nature are utterly void of all life, as was the earth, until God's word impregnated the earth with all the varied vegetation, or inanimate life seed. Thus Adam received from God the quickening life milt. Gen. ii. 7: And breathed into his nostrils the breath of life. (In the original Hebrew it is plural, lives, not singular, life, as translated erroneously.) And without the lives male milt quickening no female egg would ever produce one body in any form, mortal, beast, bird, or fish. Thus where the female eggs are laid we can readily trace the truth of reproduction by removing the male fowl. Eggs will be laid by the female, but no life whatever can be obtained therefrom; break the shell after the hen hath set on them three weeks, and a resurrection of rottenness is all that escapes. Thus the intellectual soul spirit egg mind, unquickened by Christ's spirit love grace of God immortal spirit life milt, the she (Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul shall make her boast in the Lord) soul spirit egg mind intellect, will produce nothing but rottenness. Dan. xii. 2: And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to a resurrection of rottenness (in the original Hebrew, but erroneously illustrated by the words "shame" and "everlasting contempt." Isa. v. 24: Their root shall be as rottenness). The tare seed of the devil. Matt. xiii. 38, 39, 40: As, therefore, the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of this world.

19.] *The word.*—The gospel, which is the doctrine of Christ's spiritual kingdom, by which he also gathereth together his elect, and governeth them. *Understandeth it not.*—Doth not conceive any lively light thereof in his soul, nor receive any deep impression by virtue of the spirit, to the end that his heart may be bent and his blood life subservient to the obedience of faith, and to a spiritual renewal (Rom. xii. 2). *In his heart.*—That it might come to

his heart, the seat of blood life propelling power, through the external senses, but could not take root there by reason of the heart's hardness, or, plainly, in his knowledge soul mind.

20.] *But he.*—There is another kind of man, who indeed gives some admittance or entrance to God's word, but the heart blood life's sensualities, and lusts in aspirations, being not mollified by love of truth, gratitude and spirit love to the blood life senses, nor disburdened of its perverseness and natural rebellion, set forth in comparison to the stones in the field, the gospel is not ingrafted in it, nor united to it by a lively faith and love, which are the true and only causes of perseverance (Heb. iv. 2; James i. 21).

21.] *Is offended.*—Loves his old vicious habits; and lust gratifications and appetites better than holiness, purity, truth, and spirit life immortal love, that would draw them as a magnet to God the spirit life immortal source of all love that is immortal. Blood life animal love soon grows cold, alienated, unwilling; blood life also soon dies, and all its affinities are in opposition rebellion to holiness, until new creature spirit birth development of love spiritual, which if allied to God by way of Christ is then only immortal.

22.] *Among the.*—Jer. iv. 3: Break up your fallow ground, and sow not among thorns. *Deceitfulness.*—Covetousness increases with the accumulation of riches; it is like the drunkard's appetite, ever wanting more. Eccles. v. 10: He that loveth silver shall not be satisfied with silver. They become miserly, or proud and domineering, and full of worldly cares.

23.] *Good ground.*—God's spirit life immortal seed, sown by his mediatorial spirit word creation power Son our Lord Christ Jesus, in the intellectual she soul womb will door, and truth belief spirit love milt coming in contact with the soul's intellect spirit egg mind, and impregnating it with immortal life, under the infinite mercy Holy Ghost's dove baptism, it brings forth quickly a new creature, intellectual being, full of the spirit love of Christ, having intellectual peace of mind and joy in the protecting care of the Holy Ghost. *Beareth fruit.*—Of confession of what the Lord hath done for them, good works, new obedience, and perseverance, love of truth, holiness to the Lord, supreme love to God, and love to their brethren like them spirit born, and a desire that all should embrace the gospel truths.

24.] *Good seed.*—The Christian sows truth seeds. The devil's tare seed children sow lie seeds about the Christians.

25.] *Tares.*—A kind of hurtful plant which injured the grain

in Palestine ; a vile, ugly, annoying, injurious weed, that then at that date was exceedingly hurtful to grain fields, and the farmers at great labor pulled it up, and burnt it to destroy its seeds. He shows that the good and the bad shall be enrolled on the church records of earth, that holy believers and faithful members might learn to arm themselves with patience and constancy. A parable of Abraham finely illustrates it, viz., that a man called on Abraham who was an avowed atheist infidel, and told Abraham he did not believe there was any God. Abraham ordered him to leave his house at once. God then asked Abraham where the man was that had called upon him. Abraham said he drove him from his house because he denied God's existence. Then God replied, I have patiently borne with that sinner threescore and ten years, and couldst not thou thy fellow mortal by nature birth bear company one hour? Often patience is severely tried in churches, where wicked officials as well as lay members are retained on the church rolls, and false creeds.

26.] *Fruit*.—The perfectly ripe ear of truth seed. *Tares*.—False mockers of truth.

29.] *Nay*.—We cannot see the heart's blood life, nor soul mind, thoughts, desires, besetting sins, nor surrounding foes ; we may judge very erroneously ; especially if we take the tare seed testimony of the haters of truth, we shall assuredly misjudge and condemn the innocent. If the Pontius Pilates and pharisaic popes, cardinals, bishops and priests, and the other devil tare seed lawyers, judges and officials of the earth were to be judges of Christ's genuine (not bastard professors) spirit begotten of God children on earth, they would most likely fare as their Lord did.

30.] *Grow together*.—He means not that liberty should be given to wicked men, or that they should be suffered to remain in the church, when clearly discovered to be Satan's tares, without a palliating doubt. For he hath appointed means for cleansing the church, and Jesus also set the example himself when he drove out the money changers and sellers of doves. But he sheweth that it shall never be perfectly purified upon earth. *Of harvest*.—That is, at the consummation of the world, the close of time's probation ; the tares, the children of the devil or evil unclean spirits or devils, in spirit form and in Adamic human bodies alive on earth, and all devils, fallen angels, and evil tares of all lighted space, as national bundles, shall be consumed with this earth (38-40).

31.] *The kingdom*.—These two ensuing parables are of one

sense, namely, to show that Christ's spiritual kingdom and the state of his church groweth out of very small beginnings to a supreme greatness and power, by the secret virtue of the Holy Ghost (Ezek. xlvii. 1-5; Deut. ii. 34, 35; Isa. ii. 2, 3; Mic. iv. 1; Mark iv. 30; Luke xiii. 18).

32.] *The least.*—That is to show that we should not be astonished at the small beginnings of the gospel. *Becometh.*—This was a singularity of that country.

33.] *Till the whole.*—By this he exhorts the faithful patiently to expect that fruit the gospel brings with it.

34.] *Without a parable.*—Christ held the people in suspense and longing, that they might the more earnestly desire to comprehend these things when the time should come. The Hebrew word signifies grave and sententious discourse, proverbs, and similitudes; this was because the doctrine might carry with it the greater majesty. All who use the Lord's parables as seals to found false creeds mock God.

35.] *That it might.*—Ps. lxxviii. 2: I will open my mouth in a parable; I will utter dark sayings of old. Prov. xxvi. 7: The legs of the lame are not equal; so is a parable in the mouth of fools. The parable of the Jews as Dives, and Gentiles as Lazarus, is made by them also blind.

36.] *Declare unto us.*—Clearly showing the statement true that in parables only the Lord spoke to the self-righteous Jews, who had been given riches of plainly declared laws by Moses and the prophets for their guidance, while the miserably poor Gentiles had no guidance of God's revealed will to guide them, save crumbs that fell from the lips of Jews outside of the synagogue, the rich man's table.

37.] *He answered.*—Our dear Redeemer kindly explained to his disciples, He that soweth the good seed (spirit love life immortal seed in the soul's spirit egg mind intellect, and heavenly wisdom, knowledge and understanding) is the Son of man; used over ninety times to the prophet of God, Ezekiel, as xiii. 2: And the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, Son of man, prophesy against the prophets of Israel. Job xxv. 6: How much less man, that is a worm, and the son of man which is a worm. Ps. xxii. 6: But I am a worm, and no man; a reproach of men, and despised of the people (this was our Lord Jesus that David spoke of, prophesying). 16: They pierced my hands and my feet. 18: Part my garments among them, and cast lots for my vesture. 29:

All they that go down to the dust shall bow before him, and none can keep alive his own soul. 30: A seed shall serve him; it shall be accounted to the Lord for a generation. Isa. xli. 14: Fear not, thou worm Jacob, and ye men of Israel; I will help thee, saith the Lord, and thy Redeemer, the Holy One of Israel. Isa. vii. 14: Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign: Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel. Isa. ix. 6: For unto us a child is born, unto us a son (of man Adam the first of our race by descent came the Virgin Mary, her woman's seed egg was of Adamic life, therefore the flesh blood life body of Jesus was the son of man, and of woman's seed, Gen. iii. 15). *The Son.*—Who in his proper person first sowed his Father's grace proclamation conditional with obedience thereto spirit word of God seed of gospel light truth promise, soul spirit egg intellectual mind seed, and afterwards continueth the sowing of it by his mediators between him and the rebel nature lust sin nature blood life egg seed of all females, which in a like manner is quickened into life only by male contact milt seed; thus, in like manner all who are spirit born of God's spirit word life immortal promise seed in Christ Jesus, the spirit mediator between the spirit God, who nature mortals cannot approach unto in their nature earthly state, nor comprehend; but after spirit birth by way of Christ's gospel truth words quickening milt, by way of the soul's will door comes in contact with the soul intellect mind egg, and the baptism of the intellect new spirit born creature, by infinite mercy of the Holy Ghost, then all such become mediums between Christ and mortals, and by preaching truthfully God's gospel truths (not men tradition false creeds hung upon gnat misconstructions of parables, and wholly discarding God's gospel statute laws), working in and by them, through his only power and virtue granting each spirit born of his spirit (Rom. viii. 9).

38.] *The children.*—Namely, the true believers, begotten by spirit word life immortal seed (John vi. 63), and adopted and regenerated by the Sovereign of the universe who alone hath immortality. 1 Tim. vi. 16: And made heirs of the everlasting kingdom of glory; which spirit life immortal gospel words are sown, and raised, and brought forth in the world by the preaching of the gospel by holy spirit born new creatures in Christ Jesus (2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15). The tare seed children of the devil were like those unclean spirits or devils, cast out by Christ Jesus' word of God command (Matt. viii. 28); and others were the tare seed

children of the devil, that had been sown in the soul mind eggs of mortals when in blood life bodies on earth; whose blood life flesh lust sin begotten and vegetation nature condensed bodies were then rotten in or on the earth, or returned to earth elements in utter death, never again to see life (Gen. iii. 19; Eccles. xii. 7). I could not preach an endless fire of torture to rebel sinners, nor the resurrection of the rotten particles of decayed matter bodies made from a grass base. Isa. xl. 6, 7: Surely the people is grass. Nor from the bodies of mortals made of dead swine and other dead bodies of animate or inanimate life. Nor that fallible man's translation of the Bible is truth infallible. But I would teach that all parts thereof correctly translated, and God's untranslated book of nature life, is truth infallible. All traditions of men preachers have many things handed down in sectarian theology utterly void of truth.

39.] *The enemy*.—Is the devil. Church members at colleges where heathen mythology is taught by way of worldly wise self-conceited mortals, who grasp at the structure of the earth from outcroppings or upheavals by earthquakes; and teach that there never was a flood that covered the earth, and that the north pole was never submerged by being tipped down, instead of up as now; and that the bodies of elephants found on the northern mountains of Siberia were natives of that country when it was a tropical country, etc; such wise infidels teach that the Lord's devil is a myth, when they have his unclean spirit darkness dictating all their thoughts, and are his maturing tare seed children. Like the vile child, they know not their father the devil; and therefore deny Scripture truths. Unbelief of gospel truths is an evidence of soul blindness to spirit truths. The soul spirit mind egg will door opened to the spirit of worldly wisdom aspirations and self-aggrandizement.

40.] *In the end*.—When all liars, like the tares, are consumed with this earth; when all men tradition false creed preachers and their believers, and scandalous hypocritical and profane men, shall be separated and rooted out of the church forever. Many are, and many more should be removed before (Ps. ci. 8, and 1 Cor. v. 13). It is plainly stated here, as God's infallible unmistakable law, that in like manner that the people of Palestine then burned up the vile tare weeds, the wicked on earth at the close of time, and the devil and his tare seed children and all unclean spirits and death are to perish with the earth's conflagration, and be hurled with their refuse, and the refuse of this sin curst earth, into the

chaotic outer darkness outside of lighted space. John xii. 35: He that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth. Matt. viii. 12: Outer darkness. 2 Pet. ii. 4; iii. 10: The earth also, and the works that are therein, shall be burnt up. Job x. 21: Land of darkness, and the shadow of death. Job was a spirit born child of God, and at body death of blood life his spirit saw the shadow of death, and went in a spirit body to heaven. John xi. 25, 26: Whosoever liveth (spirit born life) and believeth in me shall never die. Job x. 22; Isa. v. 24: Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff, so their (the incorrigibly wicked) root shall be rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust: because they have cast away the law of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word (Christ Jesus) of the Holy One of Israel. Mal. iv. 1: For behold the day cometh that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch, utter destruction of the incorrigibly wicked. Matt. iii. 12: And gather his wheat (saints holy) into the garner (heaven). But will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire. Which fire is God's justice sword of flame word. Deut. iv. 24: For the Lord thy God is a consuming fire. Heb. xii. 29: For our God is a consuming fire. Nothing can quench God's fire, and it is everlasting, but not so the wicked.

41.] *Things that offend.*—That is, all persons, all incorrigibly wicked, which by their deeds and examples serve for nothing but offense to God's justice and patient forbearance, and hindrance, corruption, and ruin of others.

42.] *Furnace of fire.*—The earth on fire, and its elements, into which unclean spirits and the devil and fallen angels that kept not their first probation state, that float as soul miasma poison in the air element of earth, shall all be consumed when Christ, as judge of all, leaves his mediatorial throne, and pronounces the sentence, Depart, ye accursed, into the justice flame of second or soul unclean spirit death, then earth shall flee away as the sin goat into the outer darkness bottomless pit of death's chaotic night of eternal darkness death that hath never a ray of life light. Rev. xx. 11: The earth and the heaven (earth's atmosphere on fire) fled away; and there was no place found for them. In lighted space they are swept into inane chaos beneath lighted space. Rev. xxii. 8: But the fearful and unbelieving (of God's truths), and the

abominable (nicknamers and slanderers of God's children), and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone. Which is the second death: souls' and unclean spirits' death; the first is body blood life death; the second is soul and spirit death. The nations then on earth in human bodies, as in the flood, will gnash, curse, and moan, when earthquakes upheave earth's crust, and internal fires burst forth in eruptions. Matt. xxiv. 37: As the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. Luke xvii. 29: The same day Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed (annihilated) them all. 30: Even thus shall it be when the Son of man (the Lord Christ Jesus) is revealed. 2 Thess. ii. 8: And then shall that wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming.

43.] *The sun.*—The righteous spirit born of Christ's spirit word life seed immortal life, then in unity, shine as the sun: not as Babel sects, with men tradition creeds, but like Scripture truths united. Let there be light; and there was light.

44.] *The kingdom.*—Christ's whole spiritual kingdom is a thing of such incomparable value, that to obtain it all other manner of good things comparatively ought to be laid aside and forsaken, which is the laudable purchase-pointed at (Isa. lv. 1; Rev. iii. 18). *He hideth.*—He receives it into his soul intellect egg mind through his ear or sight will doors, it takes command of the heart blood life senses and in the inner spirit life keeps sacred from mortal outward sight the pearl seed spirit of Christ within his or her soul mind, which aided by the Holy Ghost infinite mercy of God quickens into a new creature life the spirit child of God,—spirit born of God's immortal spirit life in Christ's spirit life promise word.

45.] *Pearls.*—Good intellectual spirit wisdom, knowledge, and understanding pearls.

46.] *Sold all that he had.*—Blood life recreations, and vicious sinful lusts and appetites; and like the war soldier gave blood life, to become a soldier in spirit life's army of light, to make war upon the broad-way hosts of darkness, and false creeds and superstitions.

47.] *Is like.*—The preaching of the gospel gathereth together into the external body of the church not only all the spirit born holy believers, but many professors unspirit born, with mere external name on the church record to vote temporally, but no

record in the Lord's spirit book of life immortal ; long ceremonial pharisaical prayers, deacon, class leader or preacher, with varied office-holder titles, or adornings of popish clown triplicate hat crowns, of no value practically as a hat to shelter from the sun's rays, or rain, mere childish baubles as are all earthly crowns, and court tinsel nonsense, to act as so many clowns their part of a silly circus, are all titled church officials and popish Latin mummeries, and read prayers by machine imitators and ceremonial litanies that give not forth spirit birth, but after responses before the echo had fairly died away in the streets returning home. I have heard the same loud Amener blaspheme God's holy name, and mummery ceremonial robed preachers of the Church of England's shame have ran horses the afternoon after preaching. Many hypocrites, also other hardened infidels, wicked men, women, and children, who shall never be wholly severed from the hearing of the gospel trumpets, but at the end of the world. The nets referred to were a kind of seine or drag nets, which dragged upon the ground at the water's bottom and brought up whatever they met with. *Of every kind.*—Both good and evil, righteous and wicked.

48.] *Cast the bad away.*—The incorrigibly bad wicked mortals are worthless as rotten potatoes, or rotten eggs ; when their blood life body shell is broken, a rotten stench is all that is resurrected. The bad rotten, or the bad kinds of fish or eels, or water snakes, that the net brings to shore, are all like the incorrigibly wicked, cast away to rot as dung upon the earth ; and their refuse consumes with the earth at time's close.

49.] *So shall it be.*—There are few, if any preachers, that plainly teach the Lord's doctrines of eternal truth, that the wicked are cast away like bad fish, and burned up with the earth. Those alive in human bodies on the earth at time's close are the ones spoken of that in anger and pain anguish gnash their teeth in bitter despair, when hope of deliverance hath fled forever ; and dread realities of mad and pent up fires burst forth in eruptive earthquakes, and forked lightnings and fire and brimstone, as torrent showers fall from earth's surrounding atmosphere, when the spirit born children of God, like Lot from Sodom, leave no one to plead for infinite mercy, to stay God's justice sword of fiery flame ; that devils and unclean spirits, fallen angels, and rebel incorrigibly wicked of all ages past, concentrated on this crust of God's earth death hell of graves, when the angels of God sever the living righteous from earth, as they did Lot from

Sodom, then speedily will time close, the horrid second unclean spirit deaths will then as fiery pestilence attract unclean spirits in the incorrigibly wicked with fear, no more seductive dancing music of Edenic viper serpents will cheer their horrid lust begotten sin bodies. No dancing then; but the dancers at midnight will howl for anguish in despair, and gnash their teeth with anathemas against their false preachers of false creeds of peace. Matt. x. 28: Fear him which is able to destroy (annihilate) both soul and body in hell. Mark i. 24: Art thou come to destroy us? 2 Pet. ii. 12: But these natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, and shall utterly perish in their own corruption (rottenness). Heb. ii. 14: Destroy him that hath the power of death, that is the devil. Unclean spirits, as time's closing fires draws nigh, will enter into government officials; and plunders, wars, and crimes will increase in all the wicked on earth, as before the flood, only evil thoughts (Gen. vi. 5).

50.] *The furnace of fire.*—The centre of the earth is the furnace of fire pent up ready to leap forth and consume the incorrigibly wicked, at the command of the Judge of the earth.

51.] *Unto them.*—Namely, to his disciples.

52.] *Therefore.*—Preachers of the gospel spirit born holy, that Christ's spirit word life dwells in, are searchers of the Scriptures to learn therefrom things old and truthful, and daily pray to God by way of Christ Jesus for new heavenly wisdom. All such have fresh new spirit developments to declare unto their hearers. But tradition creeds of men, called by self-desires to follow preaching as a trade for pay, and to receive the men commissioned parchment to preach, have theology politician calls to preach old false creeds of men's manufacture; creeds of men commandments.

54.] *His own.*—To Nazareth, where the woman's seed blood life body resided (Matt. ii. 23; Heb. ii. 14). *Mighty works.*—The mighty works were done by his spirit word power spirit Son of God, that had veiled of his spirit love infinite in the blood life spirit begotten of woman's seed (Gen. iii. 15), Jesus, and for the express purpose of destroying the devil and death by way of the sacrifice of the blood life spirit begotten without sin lust seed, as fully stated in Heb. ii. 14. Faith is requisite to displays of spirit powers of God on earth, and those who grow up with flesh lust bodies of sin, with the spirit born holy, have not the soul mind belief faith in them, that they will have in an utter stranger, even if void of spirit life birth.

55.] *Brethren*.—Seeing that Joseph was held to be his father. They were in utter nature darkness, unspirit born; and looked not at the proof miracles that Jesus brought forth to their nature visions; but like the faithless false creed traditions of men theology sectarian creed pharisaical preachers to-day they look wholly to nature body worship resurrections and arbitrary tyranny torture punishments eternal, of all who disagreed with their false creeds, instead of honestly seeking for truth of the Lord and his prophets and apostles, spirit born holy seed of Christ's spirit truth; judging that they know all about the spirit born and spirit begotten, when truthfully they are utterly destitute of any experimental knowledge whatever of Jesus or of his spirit born children of whom they would judge.

56.] *Whence*.—Where did Jesus, they ask of each other, obtain the wisdom and miraculous powers that we must acknowledge he possesses? not at colleges.

57.] *Offended*.—They desired of Jesus proofs of the source of his superior knowledge, and were offended at their own want of capacity to comprehend spiritual things, known only by experimental spirit birth. *Save in*.—A common proverb, grounded upon the ordinary vice in men, that is to make small account of homebred things, and to give but little respect to their own countrymen even in most holy offices, because intimate familiarity and acquaintance breed contempt in all Satan's children against the righteous.

58.] *Their unbelief*.—Through which they made themselves unworthy of God's favor, and also did nullify the chief use of miracles, which is the confirmation of the faith to heavenly doctrines (Mark vi. 5).

CHAPTER XIV.

1.] *Herod*.—Surnamed Antipas, who was the son of Herod called the Great, by some surnamed Ascalonites, who caused the children to be slain (Luke iii. 1). *Tetrarch*.—This name signifies a lord or prince of the fourth part of a country. By this it seemeth, that under Alexander's successors began this division of Palestine, called also Judea, into four parts, of which the ancient Judea, the land of the tribe of Judah, made the one

(Luke iii. 1). Now after the death of Herod the Great, Antony, and after him the Emperor Augustus, divided also this kingdom of Herod's into four parts among his children, taking the ancient Judea away from them and the title of kings, though by abuse they yet retained the title among themselves; and to this Herod's lot fell Perea and Galilee under the name of tetrarchy.

2.] *He is risen.*—This was a common error, that they thought the souls of such as were deceased were transmigrated into some other body. Pythagoras and his disciples were of this opinion. The Egyptians also believed in the transmigration of and return of souls into the dead body again after the death of the animal into which they had entered, provided their old first body was whole; therefore, they at enormous expense embalmed the bodies of their dead, which we find, after three thousand years, still uninhabited, and they are exhibited as Egyptian mummies. Equally absurd, and more erroneously visionary and crazy, is the idea promulgated by preachers of men tradition creeds in this age of the world, 1871, viz., that the transmigrated soul re-enters the body worn out, rotten, eat up by trees and vegetation, and mortals and beasts and sharks and other fish, and they all again rot, and are redevooured by worms; and then the rotten potato, grass seed, swine, and other meats of dead bodies eaten, and fruits, etc., rotted; their god they mock and blaspheme as a god of the dead, rotten grass bodies. Isa. xl. 6, 7: Surely the people is grass. 17: All nations are before God as nothing; and they are counted to him less than nothing, and vanity. Luke xx. 38: For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living. But they cast all statute laws of God's Scriptures aside even. 1 Cor. xv. 44: It is sown a nature body; it is raised a spiritual body. 37: Thou sowest not that body that shall be. Look at the sown grain of wheat or any other grain; still their myth god they mock as a resurrector of rotten bodies. If I should say rotten potatoes (out of which, when sound and eaten, portions of many human bodies are made) were to be resurrected to sound potatoes, all sane men would righteously consider me insane; or that the rotten apple's sound seed (emblem of the soul's mind egg) put into congenial soil in a proper season of the year would, if nurtured, bear apples sound, that is sane, but resurrecting rotten apples is an insane idea; and equally insane is transmigration of souls to heaven, and then, after thousands of years to have God resurrect their old rotten body, that centuries previous was mouldered

back to earthy elements, is equally insane and worse, for it is mocking God's power and is blasphemy. *Mighty works.*—The meaning is, he is a man wholly divine and celestial, and hath angels to assist him, working in him and by him. *Show forth.*—That is, to confirm his resurrection and to invest him in greater authority. I say the soul, if impregnated with the spirit of Christ, will be a spirit immortal like God the Father of all spirits (nothing in nature rotten is ever restored to life again; body worship, self-love, begets the rotten body, resurrection thought of life).

3.] *Had laid hold.*—Having found him in his jurisdiction, whither, it is likely, John went by divine inspiration to divert Herod from his incest, for otherwise Herod had no jurisdiction in Judea of which John the Baptist was, and where he had his ordinary abode (Luke xxiii. 7). And had not received any such power from the Romans, as afterward his son Herod Agrippa did (Acts xii. 1). *His brother.*—By the father, but not by the mother side.

4.] *Not lawful.*—For it relished both of rape and incest.

5.] *When he would.*—Mark vi. 19: This is attributed to Herodias, not to Herod, who contrariwise did keep John from being put to death for a certain time; but that which is here spoken may be referred to some sudden danger, which was abated by some second thoughts set forth by St. Mark.

6.] *Birthday.*—According to the custom of antiquity. *The daughter.*—By her first husband called Salome. *Danced.*—According to their lascivious manner, to excite lust. Exod. xxxii. 19: Moses saw the calf and the dancing. They danced nearly naked around the calf, which they called their god. I think all dancers' intellectual faculties are in their heels and toes, below the calves of their limbs. 10: The Lord said unto Moses, Let me alone (intercede not by prayer petitions, sowing to me, for God had promised to be a prayer-hearing and a prayer-answering God to his spirit born holy obedient children), that my wrath (displeasure with mocking insults of the Jews, that called a golden calf their god in mockery of almighty Jehovah God, the sovereign creator, and sustainer and ruler of the universe, and their lust vile dances) may wax hot (to consume them in a moment) against them, and that I may consume them. Job xxi. 7: Wherefore do the wicked live? 11: They send forth their little ones like a flock. And their children dance (Isa. v. 12, 24; xiv. 11; Amos vi. 5).

7.] *Ask.*—Herod's vile sin lusts were pleased at his step-daughter's lascivious dancing.

8.] *Give me.*—Thus clearly showing vile inner feelings of the demon in the lascivious dancer. *John Baptist's head in a charger.*—The forerunner and baptizer of our Lord Jesus Christ, his head dancing cost. Let every one tempted by animal lusts, the wicked world's unclean spirits, and the devil, to spend his emblem darkness night for evil cover in dancing, reflect that all its antecedents and surroundings are cursed of God, and leads down hell's broad grogshop ballroom lust way to hell.

9.] *Oath's sake.*—Having made a rash promise, he would cover his obstinacy with pretense of his oath, as if he that feared not incest and murder would fear violating of an oath made when under false evil influence of Satanic hallucination.

11.] *She brought it.*—The inhumanity of this act of the horrid dancer appears the more, in that the head of this holy man after his death is thus showed about in scorn and mockery, as a triumph of lascivious dancing. Every night dancer should blush with shame and repent in tears, ere too late.

12.] *The body.*—Which was cast there in derision of righteousness. *Buried it.*—That the flesh body tabernacle should not be left as dung upon the earth or food for dogs, as if in derision of their old habitation; but thereby fulfilling the return to dust. *Told Jesus.*—All spirit born of Christ's seed tell Jesus of their sorrows, and ask his guidance; John the Baptist had so instructed his disciples.

13.] *Apart.*—To strengthen and comfort his disciples, which were yet weak and amazed at John's death.

14.] *Healed.*—Jesus ever showed that God his Father, as himself, was love.

15.] *The time.*—To be abroad in the fields, out of the wood's darkness, on their way home.

16.] *Need not.*—To show us that he will not suffer them to be destitute of bodily food, who come to seek for spiritual.

19.] *He blessed.*—He asked his Father to bless with expansion the five loaves and two fishes; whether he used any vocal words or not is not stated. A mental prayer secretly to God is commanded by our Lord, and voids all vain hypocrisy of vocal reading, or studied words, and forms of prayers to be heard of men, which Christ strictly forbids his disciples to do. To praise God mentally before and after eating for all his kindness in bestowal of

food and health, to partake thereof, and freedom from foes, and peace of mind (Deut. viii. 10).

20.] *Filled*.—Abundance, and a surplus over greater than when distributed. The same increase is shown miraculously to-day in every grain sown on good ground.

22.] *Constrained*.—For they parted from him very reluctantly, especially to go upon the water, so late without him, in whom was all their confidence.

23.] *Apart to pray*.—To show us an example of the doctrine he formerly taught, Matt. vi. 6. Secret mental prayer. Not as some orthodox preachers read prayers to be heard by men's ears, and vocally, with flowery words studied, and ceremonial telling what God knows better than they do. All such so-called prayers are vain delusions, void of faith. Matt. viii. 10; xvii. 20; xxiii. 23; Mark iv. 40; xi. 22; Luke xvii. 5, 6; xviii. 8: When the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth? Heb. xi. 1: Faith is the substance of things hoped for (when we pray desiring those things we are in need of), the evidence of things not seen (or heard). 6: But without faith it is impossible to please God. For he that cometh to God (in secret fervent faith heart desire prayers) must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

24.] *Of the sea*.—Of the lake (called sea) of Gennesaret.

25.] *Watch*.—The night being divided into four equal parts (being three hours each; this then was some three hours before daylight), in which the watches of cities were relieved (Mark xiii. 35).

26.] *Cried out*.—It is a spirit, for no mere human being could thus walk on the water.

27.] *It is I*.—Christ's presence makes his children confident of help, even in blood life's death. They are sure of his protection from the devil and unclean spirits.

28.] *Bid me come*.—Peter's zeal here is great, but he is not provident enough in measuring and examining his faith.

30.] *Lord, save*.—Peter's prayer was earnest; it was not words to be heard of men, falsely called prayers, when read or spoken vocally: Be merciful to me a sinner.

31.] *Little faith*.—Christ is in such a manner his assistant, as yet notwithstanding he checks him for his fault. *Doubt*.—Wavered in the confidence which thou shouldst have in my words of truth eternal, which had also been the cause of his sinking, as not hold-

ing himself firmly by faith love, to him that held him up, James i. 6.

33.] *Worshiped him.*—With great reverence, being astonished at the miracle. *Son of God.*—They had as yet no true knowledge of the godhead of Christ, but they acknowledged in him only a divine power, which was a preparation to true faith.

36.] *That they might.*—Through great faith and humility, or by some mixture of faith and superstitious thought that Christ's power did communicate itself to his garments, which inference they drew from the miracle set down, Matt. ix. 20, and was tolerated by the Lord. The Saviour is the spirit battery power; faith puts forth in sacred prayer all the heart blood life desires; the touch, the intellect spirit egg mind believing power of the soul and will door opens, being persuaded thereto by the withdrawal of the superstitious unbelief darkness bar to truth lights entrance within the soul's dormant spirit intellect mind; spirit life's immortal unseen by mortal eyes light, impregnates the intellect mind egg with quickening resurrecting life immortal, and lights up with God's eternal love pulsations the new creature in Christ Jesus. Love that ever after, while abiding in God's favor sunshine obedience to his commands; light life pulsates love, and enjoys heavenly peace of mind *ad infinitum*. Like the touch of the hand of the woman with an issue of blood, the truthful faith that worketh by love, truth, obedience to God's spirit law require ments, adoration, love, gratitude, and praise, light bursts forth from the new spirit born creature, which the good spirit life immortal faith receiving telegram wire by way of the spirit seed of immortal life love, that impregnates the soul's spirit egg intellect mind, and lights up with immortal life the soul's intellectual spirit egg mind with a ray of God's eternal spirit light.

CHAPTER XV.

1.] *Of Jerusalem.*—Which were there present, or had come from Jerusalem, and were then of greatest esteem, and had most authority among the people.

2.] *The tradition.*—This word, with the addition your, or of

men, or of the elders, or the like, signifieth a doctrine, creed, or order of observance touching God's service instituted by men, and kept from father to son, men tradition creeds, as now received by the various Babel sectarians on the earth ; but not out of God's express words and statute Scripture laws, of which Jewish traditions some were laudable, concerning the order and decency of the Jewish church, in things indifferent ; others as now regarding eternal hell fire torture, resurrection of rotten bodies, etc., were superstitious, and otherwise wicked and vile mockeries of God. *Of the elders.*—Prelates of the Jewish church (Matt. v. 21), or whether he means those of former times, who made those laws (Mark vii. 3).

3.] *Why do ye.*—The Lord is content to reprove the Pharisees' hypocrisy by a just recrimination, without giving them any instruction upon their questions, which he doth nevertheless to his apostles. *Of God.*—Christ maintains his Father's glory and honor against men's tradition creeds.

4.] *Honor.*—That is, love as your own life and comforts for thy body, thy father and mother's comforts, and sacrifice thy worldly aspirations, and cheer them while they live.

5.] *Ye say.*—By a false interpretation in a matter of vows. *It is a.*—Matt. xxiii. 18: See of these oaths. *By whatsoever.*—It appears, by the Jews' writings, words pronounced in manner of an oath by an irreverent child, that is angry with father or mother. The meaning is, I swear that I will never do thee any good, service, or assistance ; no more than it is lawful for me to present unto thee, nor thee to take any consecrated things which are offered to God, in which rank even at this present by an express vow I do put all such things as thou mightest ever expect from me, or which I might be minded to do for thee. And this vain rash wicked oath and vow was allowed of by those doctors of divinity, who were themselves devils, damned ; and their divinity the devil as an angel of light. By reason of the respect they had for offerings (which they made use of in their most strict and inviolable oaths, Matt. xxiii. 16, 18), more than to God's law written on Mount Sinai, commanding them to honor their father and mother, which comprehends all the duties of children to their parents, and against the law of doing them no wrong, whereof this execration was of the vilest kind of disobedience to God's commands, and ought to have been annulled and punished, rather than to have been approved of and held to be firm and irrevocable, as by D. D.'s to-day, regarding the mockery of God with rotten body

resurrections, and the eternal fire tortures of the incorrigible sin-begotten atoms of animate dust (Isa. xl. 6, 7, 15, 17; v. 24). Nothing on earth, rotten, is raised to life, God's book of nature truth condemns traditions false creeds. Reason revolts, and nature proves utterly false, rotten body life.

6.] *And honor not.*—God the spiritual Father of all spirit born of Christ's spirit love seed of spirit life immortal. 1 Tim. vi. 16: God who only hath immortality; and Mark vii. 12, by honoring their father and mother, is meant to serve and relieve with all manner of respect. *Of none effect.*—Ye are the cause that the commandment is broken, by your men tradition false creed doctrine, which teaches men's consciences to have more respect to these vicious oaths or pledges to sectarian creeds, than to the express laws of God, as taught in his Scriptures of divine truths, and all by the reason of the superstitious esteem in which you hold these ceremonies, above true and real piety by way of spirit birth, and the duties thereof.

7.] *Saying.*—What Isaiah saith of the hypocrites of his time may properly be applied to you, which do the same things, and misconstrue parables, and discard God's statute laws.

8.] *Mouth.*—Make loud, long prayers, with studied words to please the ears of mortals, or read them.

9.] *But in vain.*—God will not be served according to men's fancies, for such service is before him burdensome mockery, and accursed; they in doing so place their own before God's wisdom; D.D.'s teach that their church officials, commissioned to preach the gospel, are exclusive to all others to preach in their churches, thereby setting at naught the commissions of the Lord Jesus Christ, unless those commissioned by him have their commissions vised by sectarian preachers, with traditions of men false creed, that like the Jewish corban, wholly contradicts God's statute laws, and others are treated as heretics to their pagan Roman Catholic creeds of men's wisdom of the world's collegiate self-esteem wisdom, by way of heathen philosophers of Greece and Rome, now taught therein. 1 Cor. i. 17 to 21: The world by wisdom knew not God (2 Cor. iii. 17).

11.] *Not that.*—Your corporal uncleanness, for which the Pharisees have appointed so many washings before meals, for fear lest the food should be made unclean, and defile the man that should use it, cannot stain the soul, nor the conscience (1 Cor. vi. 13; Col. ii. 22; Titus i. 15); but your vices and sins, which proceed from your heart's blood life lusts, and evil sinful nature by evil words

of blasphemy, nicknames, lies, and false mockeries of God, by way of false men tradition creeds, and deeds of evil. Now he especially insisteth upon the words, to make good the opposition between that which cometh in and that which goeth out of the mouth (Exod. xxiii. 8; Matt. xxvi. 44). John vi. 68: Thou hast the words of eternal life. Jer. xxiii. 36: For every man's word shall be his burden: for ye (by false men tradition creeds as preached to-day, that it takes God forever with his justice fire to destroy the incorrigibly wicked; when he told Moses and Aaron that if they would stop their words of intercession he would destroy the Jewish nation in a moment, Numb. xvi. 21; Deut. iv. 24) have perverted the words of the living God (Matt. xii. 36). Mark iv. 14: the sower soweth the word. Matt. xii. 37: By the words thou shall be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned, and consumed in a moment, annihilated. There is no resurrection of the rotten body, nor roasting it in pagan Roman Catholic purgatorial myth fires of their guilty crazed brains, that adjudged God's saints to inquisition tortures, too horrid to even read about in the history of the devil deeds of Roman Catholic popes, and their devil army of tares, unclean devil spirits; they burned God's children as heretics, because they would not believe popish lies, creeds of devils, with human forms, that condemned to torture fires, and their myth god they still teach is like the popish inquisitions of the dark devil's tare children ruling.

12.] *Were offended.*—They were dissatisfied and alienated from Christ by his truth words.

13.] *Every plant.*—Evil plants, false creeds, perversions of God's parable reproofs of the Jews; all creeds contrary to God's statute plain laws of soul and body life and death, plainly stated, that by false myth pagan superstition traditions of men grow up as mortal creeds on earth, that contradict God's plain statute laws, and have not received from him the root of true and lively faith that worketh by love (not hate), do wither away soon or late, and are cut off from having any communion at all with God (Matt. xiii. 21; 1 John ii. 19; Jude 12).

14.] *Let them alone.*—They are not worthy to be regarded, or keep away from them, or they will lead you with their blind myth men manufactured creeds to ruin.

15.] *This parable.*—Peter speaks thus by mistake, and Christ reproves him for it, being not able yet to persuade himself that he as an apostle was favored above the priest deluded rebels against

God's Scripture laws, that they had perverted by false men tradition creeds, and that Christ should speak to his apostles in a proper sense, and without a figure. The Jews had been favored with God's pure law, without a parable veil, and having perverted that, Christ would not again give them pure spiritual intellectual mind egg quickening food words of immortal life, to be perverted to their flesh blood life mockery of his spirit God Father, who alone had immortal life words for the spirit egg minds quickening to immortal life, not human blood life sin lust bodies, that he had already cursed and adjudged in Eden to death's rottenness and earthy elements with a dust refuse: because it would have seemed that he did abolish the distinction between clean and unclean meats, which was so strictly commanded by Moses. And holding, peradventure, some gross opinion touching that which Christ had said about proceeding out of the mouth, the same delusions are had to-day by those who judge the body that they would resurrect from rottenness to judge and burn if wicked.

16.] *Without understanding.*—Spirit birth wisdom light knowledge to discern God's truths. Are these plain statements of mine so difficult that your soul's mind cannot conceive them?

19.] *Of the heart.*—All vices proceed from the blood life lusts, appetites, and desires, and the heart is the chit germ of the blood life, therefore the nature chit of evil.

20.] *Defileth.*—To eat without washing the body hands doth not affect the soul's spirit egg mind; that is, the spirit life immortal chit germ of intellectual life eternal, which can only be defiled by the devil's tare weeds and heart blood life contaminations.

21.] *The coasts.*—Into those parts of Judea near Tyre and Sidon, which were cities of Phœnicia, situate upon the Mediterranean Sea, not far from high Galilee of the Gentiles.

22.] *Of Canaan.*—St. Mark calleth her a Grecian of Syrophœnicia, which was in the confines of Palestine and Syria, and was inhabited mostly by ancient Canaanites, who in those days spoke the Greek language and adopted the Greek faith, and were brought into the country by Alexander, and his successor kings of Syria.

23.] *Answered her not.*—To try and sharpen her faith the more. *Send her away.*—Granting her request.

24.] *I am not sent.*—My Father's offer of mercy grace life immortal by my word's spirit power I must first offer to the nature seed of Abraham, which if they reject, then the Gentiles, conditional with compliance reception of my truth words of promise they have.

25.] *Lord, help me.*—That is direct prayer to God for help through Christ, if of faith they are healed.

26.] *Meet.*—Good to take spirit born children's spiritual intellectual immortal life food, and give it to mere blood life mortal pagan false creeds of wicked men's manufacture, they in their human nature unspirit born state are but as dogs in their false religions and customs, in respect to the people of God spirit born of truth's spirit word life immortal, who alone can feed on spirit life intellectual food.

27.] *Truth, Lord.*—A confession of her unworthiness, not to be quite put off without any hope, as the incorrigibly wicked are, but to draw on the consequence of a more fervent invocation, joined with a deep humility and reverential petition.

28.] *Great is thy faith.*—Christ heard this woman for her faith's sake, and not for the saying of the apostles, who would have sent her away; thus every penitent must not rely wholly on the prayers of the righteous, but each must earnestly plead for themselves.

29.] *Unto the sea.*—Or the lake Gennesaret, called by the name sea at that time.

31.] *Glorified the God.*—It being the spontaneous praise of well doing to nature life.

32.] *Three days.*—In which time it is likely they had spent all the provision which they had brought with them, and then they had lingered still until they were in great want of nature food.

33.] *To fill.*—The disciples not long before had seen the miracle of the five loaves and two fishes, yet notwithstanding they thought no more of it. For this vice is so rooted in human nature corruption, that the remembrance of benefits God bestows upon us doth soon vanish as smoke.

34.] *How many loaves.*—Christ would have his disciples know and confess, that what they had was not sufficient for the people, except his expansion power was showed in it, to increase greatly the quantity.

36.] *Gave thanks.*—By this word is meant the same act of piety before a meal, that is called blessing; it is not improved by asking with vocal words, instead of mental soul mind desire for God's blessing on the temporal nature food, nor for spiritual intellectual food, for the new creature life immortal food; Matt. xiv. 19. Both nature and spiritual food come from God, the source of all life.

37.] *And were filled.*—The goodness and bounty of God sheweth itself in Christ, which bestoweth more upon men than they either

expect or hope for when they have received spirit birth, and abide holy in the ark.

39.] *Magdala*.—It is situate upon the shore of the lake of Gennesaret.

CHAPTER XVI.

1.] *Pharisees*.—Although the Pharisees and Sadducees differed in doctrines, or men creeds, yet agreed as to-day in various Babel creeds of men: agree well enough in opposing gospel truths of God; and because the masses, or a large majority of all Adam's race, who embrace any kind of creed form the large masses of civilization and religious truthful and absurd irrational creeds wholly void of truth, therefore they argue they must be right, because they all agree in the false doctrines of Babel creed builders. Thus they argued against our Lord and his disciples that they were warring against the creeds of men, held sacred by all God's chosen people, therefore the Lord must be wrong, and their false way right. *Tempting*.—Not with any upright intention to be instructed and confirmed, but to make a temporary essay of Christ's power; whose ordinary miracles they did vilify as much inferior to the ancient miracles of Moses, Joshua, Elijah, and other prophets. *A sign*.—They could neither disparage his life nor doctrine, therefore they will give him out for an impostor if he did not prove himself to be the Messiah by some extraordinary sign.

2.] *When it is evening*.—He concludeth by this similitude that they ought to acknowledge the time of their visitation was come; the kingdom of Christ being pointed out unto them clearly by many clear and evident tokens.

3.] *Ye can*.—Though the conjecture of the future temper of the air be of itself very uncertain, yet men by long experience have observed certain natural signs, which do seldom fail. Why do you not then use the same industry to gather the signs of the Messiah coming, given by the prophets, by the succession and termination of the times, in John the Baptist's preaching, in the properties and circumstances of my coming, and of my works and doctrines of truth; if so be you desire to be cleared of it? But all that you do is nothing but hypocrisy and malice.

5.] *They had.*—They found out then that they had forgotten.

6.] *Leaven.*—Corruption.

7.] *They reasoned.*—As wondering; or, they argued, as laying the blame upon one another, doubly erring: First, because they thought Christ had forbidden them to make use of the same bread as the Pharisees did. Secondly, in mistrusting Christ's power.

8.] *Why reason ye.*—Why are you careful for nature blood life bread, and forget my miracles?

12.] *Doctrine.*—Men must be careful to avoid all false and wicked doctrines of men manufactured creeds, contradicting plain statute laws of God's Scriptures.

13.] *Philippi.*—This is set down Cesarea Philippi, to distinguish it from Philippi near the Mediterranean Sea.

14.] *John.*—Risen again from the dead (Luke ix. 7, 8).

17.] *For flesh.*—No human light, understanding or virtue, which is in thee or any other mortal, and even all the prayers of all the inhabitants on earth, could not impart spirit birth to one mortal; nor immortal life spirit revelations. Thus oftentimes it is called in Scripture all that is in man by corporal generation (unspirit born of God). And that proceedeth from him through his own pure natural beginnings and strength; which without the work of regeneration of God's spirit are in regard to spiritual and heavenly things like unto a body without a soul light, understanding, and motion. Flesh with its blood life is full of sin lusts and appetites, and is unholy, and is sentenced by the Sovereign of the universe to utter annihilation death, void of all life germs, and doomed to rottenness. A resurrection of rottenness stench is all that can possibly rise from a mortal sin lust begotten grass body (Isa. xl. 7).

18.] *I say also.*—I declare unto thee that as I have given thee this surname of Peter (John i. 42: Cephas, a stone by interpretation, or Peter, from *petros*, a stone), for a sign of the steadfastness of faith which I will grant thee. Luke xxii. 31: Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat. 32: But I have prayed for thee that thy faith fail not; and when thou art converted (spirit born of Christ's spirit seed), strengthen thy brethren. I will cause this doctrine, that I am Christ the Son of God, this self same faith preached by thee, or declared as your views and your associate disciples', in answer to my question, Whom say ye that I am? to be the foundation of my church, the authentic truth, worthy to be believed as truth, and it must be believed

that I am Christ the spirit word, and only begotten Son of God, in order to be converted. Upon this rock Christ Jesus, the Son of the living God, I will build my church; and the gates of hell death's grave shall not prevail against it. Now, as Peter had spoken in the name of all the apostles, 15: he saith unto them, all the disciples, as a class at school learning of Christ the Master (xxiii. 10), one answering also as foreman of a jury what their verdict was, it is a most wilful villainous perversion of the Scriptures for the adherents of popery humbug to say fraudulently that Peter was the rock on which Christ would build his church. Christ's answer belongeth to them all, in regard to their common doctrine and equal apostleship. Rom. xv. 20; Eph. ii. 20: And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone. Thus plainly showing all who falsely say that on Peter Christ was to build his church are wilful liars, and antichrist tare seed children of the devil (Rev. xxi. 14). *The gates.*—According to the phrase of Scripture, the devil's kingdom, and, as it were, his city of darkness and lies delusion; opposing the city of God's eternal truth, holiness, and love; which is his church on earth. All the power, rage, and malice liars, blasphemers, nicknamers evil nature are of the army of darkness, the devil exerciseth his empire as prince thereof. Popery is a Peter man manufactured church.

19.] *I will give unto thee.*—That is, I will make thee the stewards of my gospel, and of the spiritual goods of my house; an office signified by carrying the keys (Isa. xxii. 22). Rev. iii. 7: So is the doctrine of faith called the key of the kingdom of heaven. Luke xi. 52: And the ministers of the gospel the stewards (Luke xii. 42; 1 Cor. iv. 1; Titus i. 7; 1 Pet. iv. 10). *Bind.*—Similitude taken from overseers of great houses: Matt. xviii. 17; John xx. 23. Over the members of the churches to whom they preached; but not as in any way appointing popes or any other church and state official, or any other preacher a judge to sentence any other persons on earth, nor even their church members, beyond expelling such members from their church association; while blood life remained in them, their probations of repentance remained open to them. Ezek. xviii. 27: When the wicked man turneth away from his wickedness that he hath committed, and does that which is lawful and right, he shall save his soul alive. But if blood life death occurs before he repents, for the iniquity that he hath done, his soul shall die. 27: Although previously a right-

eous man, a preacher, pope, or any other mortal fares the same. A reasonable discipline over church members is all the power Christ gave to his disciples, Peter, or any other righteous holy preacher of the gospel called to the ministry by the Lord. Not to tie and captivate their conscience by censures and denunciations of God's judgments, and exclude them from the external communion of their church by excommunication for their errors; contrariwise, to restore and absolve them upon their conversion repentance; and all this ministerially and declaratively, not by a full power and absolutely, but by virtue of the commission which they have from God, and the rules which are prescribed unto them by the Scriptures, God's statute laws; besides which all actions of the minister is void before God, and can neither bind nor free the conscience of a man who is well instructed. One may also take the word binding for forbidding of a thing as unlawful; the word loosing, for permitting a thing as lawful; the conscience being tied by the interdiction, and loosed by permission. And in these two senses shall be jointly comprehended all the ministry of the gospel, which consisteth in doctrine and in discipline; and if not wholly in accordance with the Scriptures, then their souls, or blood, will be required at the judgment of such preachers who wilfully misconstrued God's statute laws, and taught false men creeds, mocking God.

20.] *Charged he.*—It is certain he did it because he would remain unknown for that little space of time which passed from the time that he spake these things until the crucifixion sacrifice of the spirit begotten woman's nature egg seed blood life body on the cross; and to make as it were a pause of manifesting himself as to his spirit word creation power being, which spirit life immortal being was manifest in his word promise spoken in Eden, that the woman's seed should bruise the serpent's head (the devil, Heb. ii. 14). And to give place to the execution of God's prophets revelation concerning his rejection and suffering by the Jews, which prophecy they wilfully rejected in Christ Jesus; and would thus treat another revelation if Christ had condescended to have suffered his apostles to proclaim his spirit Christ spirit word creation powers as spirit Son of God, that governed the acts of the only spirit word begotten body since his creation of Adam and Eve in Eden.

21.] *And suffer.*—Hereby confuting the opinion they had of his temporal kingdom.

22.] *To rebuke him.*—Driven thereto by his love to Jesus, more carnal than spiritual. And through his ordinary fervency, which savored of rashness and presumption, and the false hope he conceived of Christ's worldly kingdom, and the horror of the cross.

23.] *Satan.*—A proverbial word used among the Jews, when one would reject an evil and pernicious counsellor, who either willingly or ignorantly made himself an instrument of the devil (2 Chron. xi. 15). *An offense.*—A disturber and obstructor (as far as in thee lieth) of the course of my vocation. *Thou savorest not.*—Peter was a mere mortal then, and a broad way worldly server of the devil; not the rock on which Christ would build his church; Satan, as well as Peter, Jesus called Simon. Luke xxii. 31: And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold Satan hath desired to have you. 60: And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. Immediately the cock crew. Thus on Peter's mortal fallible evil nature, before his spirit birth, Romish popes found their church, being founded on the devil; they preach the same doctrine, Gen. iii. 4: Ye shall not surely die; therefore they make the incorrigibly wicked immortal in hell. Peter's judgment and affections were then but carnal; groveling as yet with both upon the earth and earthly things, and not yet enlightened, nor raised up by spirit birth to discern God's spirit truth ways in divine and heavenly immortal spirit life.

24.] *Deny.*—Let him lay aside all manner of presuming upon his own sense and understanding, and forsake all his own desires and affections of fallen nature lusts and appetites, and without having any regard for himself, should subject himself wholly to God's will, and prepare and dispose himself to all manner of earthly insults and sufferings for Christ's sake. Thus he reproved Peter for his two vices, presumption and fear of afflictions. Deut. xxxii. 4: God is the Rock. 15: Jeshurun (Peter) waxed fat, and kicked. Then he forsook God which made him, and lightly esteemed the rock of his salvation. 31: Their (the popish Peter stone), is not as our Christ Jesus the Son of God rock; even our enemies themselves being judges. 1 Sam. ii. 2; and 2 Sam. xxii. 2, 32, 47; Ps. xviii. 2, 31, 46; xcii. 15; lxii. 2: God is my rock. Ps. lxxxix. 26: rock of salvation: not Peter or a stone rock, called also Satan.

25.] *Lose it.*—Blood life is soon lost in death and rottenness. *Lose his life.*—Like a soldier in earthly hell wars: join the spirit army of light and love and peril, and, if required, sacrifice blood

life in warring against Satan's army of evil falsehood darkness unclean tare seed children of the devil's army. Then in such loss of blood life periled for God's Scripture truths, which I here battle for, then all such find eternal spirit life unending, in exchange for the periled blood life that soon would have died.

26.] *For what.*—What benefits can possibly accrue to a mortal from all the gold of earth if he owned and possessed it, one minute after brief blood life's probation ends? or if the wealthy mortal had the power after blood life death was past, to again make the choice, he would quickly give all the gold for soul spirit mind egg spirit life immortal seed, or spirit of Christ (Rom. viii. 9).

27.] *Shall come.*—Shall appear in his essential glory of the everlasting spirit word Son of God, which he hath from his Father, by eternal generation; and also in the majesty of king of his church spirit born of his spirit life immortal seed of his Father, given him through grace word conditional promise, to sow in all spirit egg minds, when the she soul (Ps. xxxiv. 2) will door to the mind intellect egg was unbarred from within by the heart's blood life's concession, and judge of the world, bestowed upon him by his Father as he is mediator. *According to.*—His works of faith which worketh by love. Gal. v. 6, and vi. 7: Be not deceived (by men tradition false creeds that worship their own bodies, instead of the pagan wooden image worship, but with greater mockery of God by making him a god of their rotten body grass matter (Isa. xl. 6, 7) and a resurrector of them after they had utterly returned to earth's elements as it was before it was formed into grass that formed the bodies of cattle, and other animals eaten, and grass seeds of wheat, etc. Eccles. xii. 7: Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was; and the spirit to God who gave it, the same as God gives us the sunlight; but the light is not ours; it returns or abides with the sun when earth intervenes; and also mocking God (who declares himself love. 1 John iv. 16: God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him), by declaring him the resurrector of the dead rotten bodies of the incorrigibly wicked, for the purpose of torturing them eternally, in a lake or furnace of fire and brimstone, when he clearly states the reverse in all his statute Scripture laws; and his prophet Ezekiel clearly states, xviii. 4, The soul that sinneth, it shall die. 27: When the wicked repent and do right before blood life dies, while probation life lasts, he shall save his soul alive. 32: I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth, saith the Lord God; wherefore turn yourselves, and live

ye. Gal. vi. 7: Be not deceived; God is not mocked, for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. 8: For he that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption (rottenness is his crop). Isa. v. 24: Their root shall be as rottenness. Dan. xii. 2: Shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to a resurrection of rottenness (in the original Hebrew, translated shame and contempt. Rottenness (Isa. v. 24) is similar, for rottenness is as shame and contempt). Mal. iv. 1: For behold the day cometh (the close of time) that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble (those wicked alive on earth); and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch. If Noah and his family had been destroyed with the other inhabitants of earth, no root nor branch would have been left to propagate Adam's seed on earth; thus, in the fire flood it will be an utter extinction of Adam's race forever. 2 Pet. iii. 10: The earth also, and the works that are therein, shall be burned up. Rev. xx. 11; From whose face the earth and the heaven (earth's atmosphere) fled away, and there was no place found for them (in lighted space; they are swept by the judge into outer darkness). Gal. vi. 8: But he that soweth to the spirit (by constant silent prayer faith in God) shall of the spirit reap life everlasting. 15: For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature (spirit born of Christ's seed).

CHAPTER XVII.

2.] *Transfigured*.—The spirit word of God Son appeared to the apostles, Peter, James, and John, three witnesses being all that was necessary to verify to the truth thereof. John i. 13: Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. 14: The word (spoken). Gen. iii. 15: The seed of the woman shall bruise the serpent's head. Heb. ii. 14: He took part (woman's nature egg, not man's seed milt) of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is the devil. The spirit begot body was made flesh, and dwelt among us, and we beheld his glory, the

glory as of (the appearance of the absence of Jesus' body, and the spirit word of God, creation Son of God occupying its place, or the soul mind of Christ was begotten by the Father of spirits. Heb. xii. 9: And the Holy Ghost, the spirit body of the Lord, appeared to John, Peter, and James, as if the flesh body had been abandoned and the spirit body glorified with light beatific like his Father's) the only begotten of the Father. No other body in human form had been begotten of God's spirit word Son's power, nor ever will be thus begotten of woman's nature egg seed. All others spirit begotten are by way of that one spirit germ, and by way of the intellectual impregnation of immortality through the soul's will of blood life, into the spirit egg mind, that receiving of God's gospel spirit words of truth, gospel spirit milt, of intellectual mind belief, and reception of God's immortal spirit life seed, by way of Christ Jesus, the only medium and mediator,—such are the children of God by way of Christ Jesus. Transfigured, changed from the blood life woman's seed body of nature to the reunion of the infinite, in the nature woman's seed blood life body soul mind love, with the spirit word spirit Son of Jehovah, God Almighty, sovereign supreme of the universe, Christ Jesus our Lord and Saviour, who occupied a human body he had made like Adam's, into which, and through which, he talked with Abraham, Gideon, and others, on various occasions. *Transfigured before them.*—The same word used for God's form (Scott's Com.). Phil. ii. 6, 8 (Christ Jesus): Who, being in the form of God (a spirit; John iv. 24), thought it not robbery to be equal with God (in love life endless), but made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men. Christ's spirit begotten will occupy a spirit body after blood life nature body death; in a moment the change will take place, so that death of their blood life is but as a shadow darkness of death which occurs in the moment of separation of spirit born new creature spirit life from nature blood life.

3.] *Moses.*—To signify the consent and concordancy of the law and the prophets to Christ. It was known to the apostles who these were, either by inward revelation, or by Christ's words, or some words of their own hearing, from the conversation of Moses and Elijah. There is no question but Moses was there in a spirit body. Deut. xxxiv. 5: So Moses the servant of the Lord died there in the land of Moab, according to the word of the Lord. And Elijah was there in a spirit body no doubt, and Christ was

with them in his spirit word spirit power creation body, or soul mind spirit begotten of the Father of spirits (Heb. xii. 9), the Holy Ghost, and his blood life body through which the impartation of his infinite spirit love power was demonstrated, and through which he proclaimed his parables and sermon on the mount, and all his words and acts, was left for the transfiguration obscure from the apostles' sight, by way of the spirit glory light. John x. 17, 18, clearly states the two natures of Christ and Jesus under one ruling, superior power. Christ, the spirit Son of God and creation power unlimited, and the spirit begotten blood life of woman's seed to demonstrate that Adam might have obeyed God in Eden, and placing all souls spirit born in spirit Eden life probation trial, while blood life lasts, and to atone as a sacrifice to redeem from nature taint from Adam and Eve's fall and death sentence irrevocable as to nature body death, for the sins of all true Holy Spirit born believers of truth from God, as the closing and ending eternally all sacrificial offerings on earth, which had been typified for some four thousand years in lamb sacrifices. John x. 17, 18: I lay down my life (blood life. Matt. x. 37-39: He that loseth blood life shall find soul mind spirit life by spirit birth holiness), no man taketh it from me (viz., if I use my spirit word power I could destroy all Adam's sin lust race in a moment), but I lay it down of myself (a free-will offering sacrifice for all who are spirit born holy, and obedient to his commands of love). I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again, from death, and to raise up the flesh and bones with my spirit life spirit body power.

4.] *It is good.*—Words of a man in rapture, not knowing what he said (Luke ix. 33), quite dazzled with the majesty of this beatific spirit life glory, and transported with present joy, which he desired to continue in; as do all who are permitted to view the spirit life glories, and to avoid the terror of the death of the blood life, woman's seed body occupied by infinite love, expanded from his spirit word in Eden. Gen. iii. 15: The seed of woman should bruise the serpent's head; that word of the Lord begot of the nature egg, or woman seed in the Virgin Mary, the body of Jesus, thus (John i. 14), The word (spoken in Eden, Gen. iii. 15) was made flesh, and dwelt among us, and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the spirit word of God creation power o'ershadowed and protected, and was in unison with the word spirit of God, and Son of the spirit God, flesh spirit begotten body of Jesus,

thereby making it possible that Adam's sin lust begotten race, by way of spirit birth from Jesus' spirit begotten body sacrifice in their behalf, begets of the she soul spirit egg mind, or intellect, the product of the spirit creation breath of lives given Adam, in his first breath that pulsed his blood life, a new creature, or new spirit life immortal beings allied to God's immortal self existent spirit life, that only had immortality through his spirit word spirit Son of creation power, and by way of his word promise that the seed of woman should bruise, destroy, slay, annihilate, at the close of time, the devil and all his seed. Luke ix. 30: And behold, there talked with Jesus two men, which were Moses and Elias. Clearly showing that they were then resurrected by the spirit word spirit creation power Son, whose power was and is ever the same, and ever in the present tense: I am the resurrection and the life (John xi. 25). Moses and Elias talked in their spirit bodies.

5.] *Overshadowed.*—Moses and Elias in their spirit bodies; Peter, James and John clearly testify, and also Luke ix. 30, that Moses and Elias or John the Baptist was really there, and talked with the Lord. Now that truth is as fully stated as any other truth in the Scriptures, yet blind guides like politicians with party creeds, fearing to be called a heretic, cling to their sect party, with sinful denials of truths that overthrow their rotten body resurrection wholly. 1 Cor. xv. 44: It is sown a nature body, it is raised a spiritual body. The same it, that was sown a nature body, is raised a spirit body. Phil. iii. 21: who shall change, the same as a grain of wheat is changed by God's spirit word, into the grass form emblem of the spirit change from the rotten wheat grain emblem of the rotten flesh body, and is formed in the head chaff cell life chit, where a body is again drawn from nature earth. In the same way the spirit born life germ of the soul spirit egg intellect mind seed of immortality is at body death of blood life formed in the spirit head Christ, its living vine. John xv. 1: I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. 4: Abide in me, and I in you. 5: Without me ye can do nothing. Phil. iii. 21: Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious (spirit word of God creation power) body. 1 Cor. xv. 37: Thou sowest not that body that shall be.

9.] *Tell the vision.*—After, not before, the blood life sacrifice.

10.] *Why then.*—Seeing Elias, who appeared unto us to-day, hath again withdrawn himself without showing himself unto the

world, how can this agree with the common opinion of the Jewish doctors, or D.D.'s, grounded upon the prophecy of Mal. iv. 5? (Though falsely construed as many Scripture truths by such to-day, 1871, that he must come to preach to the world before the coming of the Messias: shall he come another time or in another manner? or seeing thou art come already, and hast been revealed in glory, why do they say that Elias ought to come before thee?)

11.] *And restore.*—He shall serve to convert God's people from their evil ways and corruptions both in doctrine and manner of living, and shall prepare them to receive Jesus Christ, and thus shall establish the spiritual state of the church (Luke i. 16, 17).

12.] *I say.*—Christ Jesus here plainly tells his disciples that John the Baptist, whom they had seen with Moses that day in his glorified spirit body, and whose blood life body head Herod's dancing fiend daughter had caused to be severed from its mortal body he had come as a forerunner of Christ and baptized unto repentance. Matt. iii. 1–13: And proclaimed Christ Jesus, who should baptize with the Holy Ghost and with fire. And gather his spirit born children as wheat into his heavenly garner; and will burn up the chaff, the incorrigibly wicked, with unquenchable spirit fire of his word curse, Depart from life, or me. Acts xvii. 28: In God we live, etc. Deut. iv. 24; Heb. xii. 29: Our God is a consuming fire, and nothing can quench him. In God is life; out of God is death. The same as, out of sun's life light rays soon all earth life would die.

13.] *Then.*—The disciples then comprehended that they had seen the spirit of John the Baptist, his new creature spirit born immortality, in his glorified resurrected spirit born new creature, or spirit life, in his glorified spirit body, and that they had heard him and Moses talk with Christ.

15.] *Lumatic.*—By the mere operation of the devil; or by a natural disease accompanied with, and aggravated by, the devil possessing the soul mind with his unclean tare seed, or spirit of evil.

17.] *O faithless.*—It appears by Mark ix. 14 that he doth hereby reprove the Jews who contended with the disciples, and contradicted their doctrines, as if they could not verify it by this miracle. It might also be a general reproof to the father of the child, and to the Jews, for their incredulity; and to the disciples also, because that for want of faith in Christ's special promise (Matt. x. 1) they had made themselves incapable of doing this miracle.

20.] *If ye have faith.*—Seeing that the command of working

miracles, and the promise of God's assistance to the working of them, was not common to all believers, some commentators think ; yet the promises of God are not restricted to any one, save that a full faith, and in accordance with the declared will of God as plainly taught in the Scriptures. *Ye shall say.*—If you are a spirit born child of God, and have God's command and promise for it, as Moses had when he wrought his miracles. Or by secret holy inspiration it is revealed to your spirit born holy new creature in Christ Jesus life, that it is for God's glory, for the salvation of his, and for the confirmation of the gospel, as it was to Joshua, or Gideon, or Abraham, or the prophets and disciples, then it will be done.

21.] *This kind.*—It seems from this, and Matt. xii. 45, it may be gathered that there are some devils, or unclean spirits of evil soul miasma assailants, are more malicious and obstinate than others. And others believe that the difference consists only in the more or less faith power that God doth grant them. *By prayer.*—Not by a transitory act of faith ; but by a long and persevering exercise of secret faith prayers, and holiness previously, then instantaneous God gives victory over the most powerful rebellious enemy. Faith desiring God's power by prayer, and prayer being inflamed and purged by fasting, feeding the soul instead of the body with power food from the spirit vine Christ, and his Father's vineyard of spirit wine ever new and fresh ; and souls spirit born new creature in Christ Jesus holy invigorator. Faith prayers work with God if holy and pure, and not contaminated with blood life heart desires for self glory ; but ever as a little child that all such are in this world. The meaning of fasting is that those seeking by secret prayers favors of God should pay no regards to body blood life food, and cravings for earthly luxuries, but above them desire the spirit power invigorating immortal life spirit food through Christ from God.

23.] *Exceeding.*—The flesh blood life heart by nature filled with earthly vain glory desires ; unwillingly hearing any exhortation to bear the cross of blood life sorrows.

24.] *They that.*—The Roman tithe gatherers under the Emperor Augustus, who took what should have been gathered for the church as previously for the state. *Tribute money.*—A coin worth four drachms. *Doth not.*—Is not your Master one of those willing Jews that of their own accord pay this duty to the temple?

25.] *Children.*—Christ does not free his children from earthly obligations.

26.] *The children*.—According to this common reason, I who am the Son of God and Lord of the temple should be free of this tribute. But seeing I am not yet known as such, I will pay it in order that this people shall not misjudge me.

27.] *Offend*.—Give occasion to go back or decline from the truth. *A piece of money*.—A Greek name for a coin of the value of four drachms. *For me and thee*.—The other disciples were perhaps absent or had previously paid, or because the collector had spoken only to Peter.

CHAPTER XVIII.

1.] *The greatest*.—The disciples, through spiritual ignorance, imagined there would be official titles of nobility in heaven, as on this vain earth in church and state.

3.] *As little children*.—By way of the soul's spirit egg mind womb's new creature in Christ, birth of his quickening life immortal spirit word seed of spirit love, in humility, simplicity, fear, innocency, docility, helplessness without Christ's aid, etc. (Matt. vii. 25.) Ps. xiii. 1, 2: nor in ambition of worldly titles, or other vain worldly bubble honors of mortals, desiring not to excel one another therein. Except ye be converted, and become as little children (not big children popes, cardinals, bishops, D.D.'s, professors, etc.). But spirit born holy of the spirit seed of immortal life, which Christ Jesus alone can sow in the soul mind spirit egg of the believer of his eternal truths, and the faith reception thereof by the spirit egg in the she soul mind, as truths, and life eternal from God; such alone are immortal new creature children of God in Christ their spirit vine maturing: 2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15. None others from earth enter heaven.

4.] *Humble*.—Not proud D.D.'s, nor other titled nobility, salaried by church and state, and college-bred professors of note, but such as humble themselves like the little child; helpless by nature, and cries for help to the nature parent, and for daily nature food, and is wholly helpless as in its own strength to obtain nature food. Thus dependent on God, in Christ, is the new creature spirit born child of God in Christ, the spirit vine in maturing, and utterly helpless to obtain immortal spirit life food. 1 Tim. vi. 16: God

who only hath immortality; dwelling in the light which no man (only spirit born holy children of God in Christ) can approach unto.

5.] *One such.*—Spirit born (John iii. 5, 6; Matt. xiii. 37, 38), a true Christian child of God, that shall have laid aside all worldly pride, and its tinsel or titled adornings of vain nature pride vanity; for mortals by nature have nothing to be proud of; the earth and all things thereon or therein are the Lord's, for he made them, and is the lawful owner thereof. And for this righteousness cause the spirit born holy humble child of God in Christ Jesus is become abject in the sight of the wicked.

6.] *Offend.*—In despising, hating, or slandering, nicknaming, or wronging them, for their simplicity of childlike humility, and shall thereby have disturbed him in the course of his heavenly vocation and holy disposition, and caused him either to take evil counsel and forsake Christ, or be discouraged in the heavenly narrow way of holiness. *A millstone.*—That would sink his body and end his blood life of sin.

7.] *Woe.*—Infinite evils shall come upon the world because of offenses, as well upon offenders as those who are offended by their vile ways of sin. It must needs be. They are inevitable by reason of the malice, weakness, inconstancy, and other vices of mortals. And by reason of God's providence, which suffereth them either for judgment or trial. And yet mortals' errors shall not hereby be excusable, seeing they wilfully commit the evils with delight, and voluntarily.

8.] *Cut them off.*—There is nothing earthly so precious to blood life, to which God's spirit life righteousness ought not to be preferred, when the soul's new creature spirit life is endangered thereby. Blood life was sentenced to death on the first judgment day in Eden.

9.] *Hell fire.*—Gehenna fire: a Hebrew word which signifieth the valley of Hinnom, which was a place near Jerusalem where idolaters did burn their children to their myth god Moloch, whereupon by reason of the cruelty of this idolatry the same name was attributed to hell (2 Kings xxiii. 10). Isa. xxx. 33: Tophet is ordained of old; yea, for the king it is prepared; he hath made it deep and large; the pile thereof is fire and much wood. The breath of the Lord (curse) like a stream of brimstone doth kindle it. Jer. vii. 31: They have built the high places of Tophet, which is the valley of the son of Hinnom, to burn their sons and daughters in the fire; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my heart. 33: And the carcasses of this people shall be

meat for the fowls of heaven, and for the beasts of the earth; and none shall fray them away. Isa. lxvi. 24: And they shall go forth and look upon the carcasses of the men that have transgressed against me. For their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched. And they shall be an abhorring unto all flesh. 23: From one new moon to another (Mal. iv. 1; Isa. v. 24; Dan. xii. 2; Gen. iii. 19; Eccles. xii. 7; Obad. 16).

10.] *Take heed.*—He urgeth the cause of offenses, self pride and contempt of inferiors, taking glory to themselves as titled officials, to lord it over the lay members, whom they would lay under taxation to support their lording it over God's heritage, instead of, as clearly stated in Rev. xxii. 17: And whosoever will let them partake or take the water of life freely. 1 Pet. v. 3: Neither as being lords over God's heritage, but being ensamples to the flock; feeding them, not fleecing them. *Little ones.*—Vile and abject in the sight of the world, in their condition or profession. *Their angels.*—The meaning is that men ought not to condemn poor believers, seeing God hath so far honored them as to give them his own angels to be their guardians and ministers (Heb. i. 14). Who assist in God's presence, and are as it were his household and ordinary servants, which is signified by seeing the face of a king (1 Kings i. 8, 9-49).

11.] *For the.*—Another reason why those poor believers ought to be honored, namely, because God hath made them partakers of his glorious salvation (James ii. 5). *To save.*—We must not then by our offense destroy what is so dear unto him.

12.] *How think ye?*—He sheweth another cause of the contempt, especially the pharisaical, because that the believers are poor converted sinners. Now, saith he, that ought not to make them to be less esteemed, seeing that Christ came expressly for such, and that God's glory and the joy of angels is the greater for it.

14.] *Should perish.*—It is not God's lack of protection to all who obey his commands, and abide in the spirit vine provision sustenance, or spiritual food; he never leaves nor forsakes them, but they can leave and forsake him (Ezek. xviii. 24, 27).

15.] *Shall trespass.*—By personal offense, nicknames, or by giving of scandal secretly, betwixt him and thee (Luke xvii. 3). *Hear thee.*—Thy just complaints, to confess his fault and amend it, or to give glory to God, and promise repentance and conversion. *Gained.*—Thou hast brought him again to his duty, and hast won him to be a good brother to thee (James v. 20).

16.] *Take with thee.*—That the reproof may be greater, these men seconding it; and also because that if the offender be stubborn, the relation which thou shalt make thereof to the church may be the better verified. But no license is given for preachers to cry heresy, because they held to the Lord instead of false church creeds.

17.] *Unto the church.*—With which such persons are recorded as members (1 Cor. v. 3, 4; 2 Cor. ii. 6), according to the Jewish custom in their synagogues. *As an heathen.*—Hold him as a profane man, not worthy to commune with the pure in heart, as publicans and heathens were among the Jews (Matt. v. 46; Luke xv. 2). If all the church associations were on the narrow way to heaven, with the Bible as their only confession of faith, discipline and guide, and all who would not obey its laws and precepts were excluded from communion with them, priest or lay member, and all on a level, and the Lord God only exalted, then they would sweetly rejoice in love and peace and harmony.

18.] *Ye shall.*—You ministers and governors of the church, proceeding in love, knowledge, uprightness, holiness, and wisdom according to the Scripture laws referring to the duty of your office. Matt. xvi. 19: Founded wholly upon Christ, the Son of the living God.

19.] *If two.*—The meaning seems to be, that in those ecclesiastical judicatures God being called upon in conjunction of spirit, without passion or partiality, though his ministers spirit born holy be but few in number, and are really and truthfully called and commissioned by him, though of little or no authority in worldly power, or esteemed by the wicked in power, yet he will assist them by his spirit to do such things as shall be in accordance with God's will and revealed Scripture laws, as shall be ratified in heaven. And this likewise may be understood generally of the concord and love and charity necessarily required in all those that pray unto God concerning one and the self-same thing (Matt. v. 23, 24; 1 Pet. iii. 7). *Any thing.*—According to God's will, in accordance as well in the thing itself, as touching the manner of asking it (1 John iii. 22, and v. 14).

20.] *In my name.*—By my authority and commission, spirit born new creatures in Christ Jesus (2 Cor. v. 17). Gal. vi. 15: Such children of God in Christ calling upon me through faith holy with a resolved purpose to do me honor as their spirit Father, in accordance with my revealed will and statute Scripture laws. *Am I.*—By my grace and spirit word life rays that ever beam

forth in all God's children, who alone have the spirit of Christ (Rom. viii. 9), and the promise of resurrection at body death.

22.] *Seventy*.—Without any limitation, that we may always be ready to forgive as God is ready to forgive us, when truly penitent, and blood life probation pulsates.

23.] *The kingdom*.—God's spiritual government in his church re-established by the Messias. *Take account*.—He declares by this similitude the result of what he had formerly said, touching mutual reconciliation, that we must forgive if we expect to be forgiven.

24.] *Ten thousand talents*.—This great sum is put as an example of a debt that can never be paid by the poor and destitute race of Adam; only by death of blood life, called the debt of nature, that life alone cancels, and the second or soul intellectual mind death. Gen. iii. 19: Dust thou art, and to dust thou shalt return, ends the sentence of blood life death pronounced on our first parents, and their sin lust begotten rebel race on the first judgment day in Eden. The second death, or soul death. Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27: The soul that sinneth it shall die. Rev. xx. 14: And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. xxi. 8: Which is the second death. First, blood life body death. Second, soul death, which pays the debt of nature and grace.

28.] *An hundred pence*.—A small sum in comparison to what he owed his master. *By the throat*.—As if he meant to strangle him to death, to frighten him to pay him. In like manner, the endless hell fire torture preachers would have meted.

32.] *Desiredst*.—The bounty and goodness of God is here clearly seen, that he is as ready to forgive as we to ask forgiveness of him. And the natural mortal unspirit born selfishness.

34.] *Till he should pay*.—This is spoken plainly to show that he should pay the soul life forfeit death, the same as the nature first blood life forfeit death penalty; and all God's statute laws thus clearly state as aforesaid, and by Eccles. xii. 7: Then shall the dust return to earth as it was; and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it. Rom. viii. 9: But ye (spirit born of Christ's seed holy righteous) are not in the flesh (blood life), but in the spirit, if so be that the spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the spirit of Christ, he is none of his. Obad. 16: They shall be as though they had not been. Mal. iv. 1: For behold the day cometh that shall burn as an oven; and all the

proud (I fear for many of the titled nobility of church and state), yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble. And the day that cometh shall burn them up, said the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch. Matt. iii. 12: But will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire (Deut. iv. 24). Heb. xii. 29: For our God is a consuming fire (unquenchable). Isa. v. 24: Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble (Mal. iv. 1) and the flame consumeth the chaff (Matt. iii. 12), so their root shall be rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust; because they have cast away the law of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel. (Hear the word of the Lord, O mortals that send your children to a Moloch god fire, and a heathen myth god that resurrects rotten bodies.)

35.] *From your hearts.*—The heart is the chit life pulsating blood life, that is, by a cheerful free motion proceeding from the nature life powers of will. God being a spirit and searcher of the heart's truthful desires will not be satisfied with words only. After your sins (ten thousand talents are forgiven you, 28–30) you condemn and doom your fellow-mortal to endless hell fire's tortures: you want the one hundred pence and lose all.

CHAPTER XIX.

2.] *Healed them.*—Those that were sick in nature flesh blood life bodies, and impotent.

3.] *Tempting him.*—Trying to tempt Jesus, but none, not even the devil prince and father of unclean spirit tare seed children, ever succeeded in doing it, to catch or calumniate, misrepresent what he said, either for being contrary to Moses' law of God, if he reproved divorcees, or for favoring and authorizing lasciviousness, disloyalty and inconstancy of man, if he had approved of them. *For every.*—Indifferently at the husband's pleasure.

4.] *Have ye not read.*—To rectify the abuse he quotes them God's ordinance, according to which all things ought to be regulated and reformed. *Made them.*—He created but one man and but one woman, which condemns polygamy, and ordained that they should be one and the self-same flesh, which reproves divorcees (Mal. ii. 15).

5.] *And said.*—He inspired Adam, or in after times Moses, to give this instruction and law. *Leave.*—Gen. ii. 24: This commandment, nevertheless, not unbinding children from their obedience to their father and mother.

8.] *Moses.*—The law of this indissoluble bond of matrimony was the first everlasting and inviolable law, and God altered nothing therein by Moses; only seeing your Jewish nation's rebellion in the liberty they took in divorcing themselves, he did set down a rule for a time in regard to some civil order. But I, who am the supreme lawgiver, will now, in the days of grace and of the spirit, bring things unto their first state. *Beginning.*—According to God's institution.

9.] *Committeth adultery.*—He continues ever bound unto the first, for this bond must not be broken at a man's pleasure, but from a dancing, drunken, unvirtuous woman or man.

10.] *If the case.*—If matrimony beareth so strict a bond, it is better to abstain from it than to come into such a case of necessity to suffer so many things in a woman as may cause a man to repent that he was ever married to her. Spirit born holy persons must marry those only that are spirit born and holy, or they are like light attempting to mingle and associate with darkness; one or the other prevails, and the carnal lusts of nature are most likely to ruin both, and like Herod's daughter dance to gratify evil lust nature, and the righteous, like the holy Baptist John, are endangered by the devil's dancers. Divorces are but a partial relief from the sorrows and disgrace of a dancing wife; a dancing wife divorced will still follow after the husband's rich relations for plunder.

11.] *Cannot receive.*—They have not the gift of continency by God's special grace, that they can be without the use and remedy of matrimony. 1 Cor. vii. 2, 7: For I would that all men were even as I myself (a bachelor). 9: But if they cannot contain let them marry, for it is better to marry than to burn, the curse disease, 16.

12.] *Have made.*—Who have made a firm resolution, grounded upon the feeling and firm persuasion of God's gift, to abstain from all knowledge of women; unless the offspring is vastly better than the masses of impudent children now germinating into human form, the sooner the rebel sin lust begotten race is ended the better; were it not for the very few, that of the vast multitude shun the broad way of hell dances, and divorce hell fire un govern-

able lusts, full of sin and evil nature lusts gratifications, that like drinking increases the desire for more, for to keep an undefiled holiness, and from the use of matrimony to employ himself freely in God's service, either in a public or private calling. 1 Cor. vii. 32: He that is unmarried careth for things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord. *That is able.*—Let every one examine himself what gift he hath from God, and let him carry himself accordingly. 1 Cor. vii. 7, 9: Seeing this gift is not common to every particular man, therefore marriage is not rashly to be denied a man's self.

13.] *Put his hands.*—Blessed and commended them to God by his prayer. *Rebuked them.*—As importunate and disrespectful people, requiring of Christ a thing which seemed too base and mean in the apostles' false judgment.

14.] *For of such.*—That seek God through Christ before sin's vile bundle of evil habits are formed; so far are you deceived in thinking that children, by reason of their weakness, and other contemptible qualities, are unworthy to be presented unto me, that contrariwise nobody is capable of my heavenly kingdom, unless they be first by the spirit of regeneration brought into a spiritual state like unto that of a child in the order of nature. Matt. xiii. 37, 38: The spirit birth truth impregnating immortal life seed Christ alone can sow from spirit life of God, who only hath immortality, and dwelleth in life eternal light, which none of Adam's sin lust begotten seed can approach unto; it is all irrevocably sentenced to death and annihilation as to life. John iii. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit (God in Christ, spirit life holy seed of immortal spirit life child of God) is spirit. Like begets its like, is God's law of his universe. 5: Jesus said, Except a man be born of water (repentance tears) and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. 7: You must be born again; the young child at years of discretion choice has a spirit soul egg mind intellect, and much more readily conceives the immortal life gospel word of God truth, spirit life seed, than the old and vicious, with a diseased mind, that first has to be restored to a healthy belief, and freed from its false men tradition creeds of pagan popery and evil habits, and through much hard seeking humility, and striving with all their soul heart mind blood life strength, then by grace of God they become spirit born new creatures in Christ Jesus; but the young have the Lord's promise, Prov. viii. 17: I love them that love me; and those

that seek me early shall find me. None can with Babel men creeds, or rotten Babel slime bodies, reach heaven. Spirit born and spirit resurrected at blood life death only reach heaven.

15.] *Laid his hands.*—As a token of his blessing, whereby it appears that the children of spirit born new creatures in Christ Jesus (2 Cor. v. 17) ought not to be excluded from the Lord's covenant. Water baptism.

16.] *What good thing.*—He thought by some benevolent act perhaps he might obtain eternal spirit life of the Lord, and continue the sensual blood life recreations and gratifications of appetites, lusts, and desires. Spirit birth new creature spirit life immortal he had no knowledge of.

17.] *Why callest thou.*—The sense wherein thou qualifiest me to be good is not that in which I ought to be acknowledged and honored in the blood life woman's seed body nature; human and moral goodness cannot make me a lawgiver to men's soul spirit intellect egg minds, unquickened by immortal spirit life, which the supreme Sovereign of the universe alone can bestow, for he alone is the self existent fount of all life source, and he alone hath immortal life to bestow. *If thou wilt.*—The Lord speaketh not this to remit him again to his own works, by which no man can be justified nor saved. Good works are the fruits of the spirit birth holy pure children begotten of God (Rom. iii. 20; Eph. ii. 8, 9; 1 Tim. i. 9. Titus iii. 5), but to draw him again to the service of God from those traditions of men false Babel creeds, that seek to build a Babel tower to heaven in their peculiar self righteous way, which pervades all the churches on earth this day in varied degrees of soul mind darkness, and false myth delusive God mocking creeds; as the pagan, Roman Catholic, reformation preachers, Calvin, Luther, and their compeers, who were all Roman Catholic preachers, and believers taught by popish priests and trained in childhood's second nature by Roman Catholic parents and surroundings of the dark ages of inquisition fires, previous to the reformation in part only, for much of their doctrinal men tradition creeds are Roman Catholic pagan creeds to-day; as regards eternal fire tortures, and resurrection of rotten bodies, etc. Rom. x. 4: Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth; and if they truthfully believe, they will obey him, and not grab their neighbor by the throat who owes them one hundred pence, and if they could roast him in endless torture.

20.] *All these*.—Words of a lying arrogant hypocrite, and one that was ignorant of the true spiritual sense of the law which requireth of man not only the external discipline of manners and actions, but purity and righteousness in all his thoughts, internal motions and affections of the heart, soul, mind, and strength, which can only be consummated by spirit birth of Christ's spirit seed, sown in the soul's spirit egg mind intellect, and the brooding baptism of the Holy Spirit dove, and the fire spirit baptism that consumes all the previous false creeds of men, and then in new creature life birth, with the spirit of Christ can they truthfully believe and comprehend the Scripture truths of God (Rom. vii. 7-10).

21.] *If thou*.—An answer fitted to this man's vain boast. The meaning is, if what thou sayest of thy perfect observing each commandment be true, show it in thine obedience to the summary of the law, which is, love God above all things and thy neighbor as thyself. Perform the first in following of me who am the true Immanuel, as he had signified. And the second, in giving thy goods to the poor; and if thou wilt do neither, thou showest thyself to be a hypocrite in all the rest,—a pharisaic outside moralist.

23.] *That a rich man*.—Whose affection for riches occupies his heart blood life time wholly, and impregnates his soul's spirit egg mind intellects, and produces a worldly spirit creature that makes a god of wealth, and worships and clings to it with a miserly grasp, for they that love silver shall not be satisfied with silver, nor he that loveth abundance with increase. Give such men as Astor, Stewart, Vanderbilt, and others of their absorbed mind love for millions, with which they burden themselves, and soon have to leave every farthing for which they toil, and reap only a rotten body. Gal. vi. 7, 8: Be not deceived. God is not mocked; for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to the flesh (blood life's earthly aspirations) shall of the flesh (blood life treasures) reap corruption (rottenness). And all their root adhesion is rotten. Isa. v. 24: Their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom (earthly glory, praise of poor earth worms, Job xxv. 6) shall go up as dust, not as spirit; but he that soweth to the spirit shall of the spirit reap life everlasting. I hope all those named will, before blood life dies, sow to the spirit.

24.] *For a rich man*.—Neither can be done, but by miracle, that is beyond the order of nature; the other by a superabundant

and singular power in the order of grace, to preserve or heal the rich man of those vices or follies which a superabundance of worldly goods brings forth or accompanieth,—great cares, and anxieties, and avaricious desires, that grasp the property of their fellow mortals, when they by their fallible laws do so safely, to add to their millions. How devil like the desire to grasp the means of sustenance from the poor and needy, instead of bestowing from their abundance upon them! Their superior talents seduce their neighbor to part with his small savings to their gains by well laid traps, sales of land, and large payment, soon after they paid all they have, and then foreclose and drive their helpless families into the streets to seek a home, or the poorhouse; and the sharp practiced swindling trickster, the devil's tare children of this world, applauds.

25.] *Who then.*—The disciples had perhaps heard that their national Jewish ancestor, Abraham, was wealthy, and Job, David, Solomon, and many other noted, and previously by them, counted holy men of God; and if they were to be excluded from heaven, who then can be saved?

26.] *With men.*—Looking only upon the outer man as mortals can only do, this would seem a paradox. *But with God.*—Who sees the blood life heart desires within, and the state of the soul's spirit egg mind intellectual desires and aspirations, with him it is possible and easily comprehended. Without God's special grace no man can be saved. Eph. ii. 5: By grace ye are saved: even when we were dead in sins God in Christ's spirit life seed quickened, by impregnating our soul's spirit mind egg with God's immortal spirit life in Christ, and thus together with Christ, we become of God who only is self-existent and immortal spirit life unending immortal, by way of spirit birth. Thus Abraham, Job, David, and others above referred to, placed their riches under the control of God to whom they all belonged, for the earth and all its treasures of gold and silver are his, for he created or made them for a purpose known to himself, and to mortal rebel men he hath not to render account. With God's grace spirit birth, rich men may become immortal; but riches that occupy their soul spirit egg mind intellects, as ordinarily being full of worldly love cares not, feeling the necessity of God's grace and assistance; enemies to the cross, proud, insolent, and made drunk with their temporal happiness, and idolaters to their gods, etc., rooting their hearts' blood life desires in them, and grounding their love thereon

through confidence; vices which are incompatible with those holy meek love dispositions which are essentially necessary to obtain spirit birth's eternal life. *Are possible.*—God can so dispose the heart of a rich man, that he shall not set his affections upon riches. Riches held without the affections being placed thereon are held in store only against the attacks of adversity, and for the purpose of doing good to those who need aid like Joseph's grain in the famine in Egypt, which saved the lives of his father and brothers and the Egyptians. All Adam's race are by nature carnal, their affections are supremely selfish, and full of lust desires and sins of various earthly natural tare seed growths of evil.

27.] *We have.*—We have done that which this young man would not do. Here appeareth the ordinary defect of all mortals unspirit born, also of the apostles in these beginnings, to have always respect to worldly rewards. *Shall we have.*—It was great indiscretion to demand the triumph before the warfare is performed.

28.] *In the regeneration.*—Your soul mind intellect spirit egg is now being impregnated by spirit truth words of heavenly wisdom seed of spirit life immortal, from the Sovereign of the universe, and Father of all spirit born holy immortal spirit beings; and in the spirit life immortal, upon which you will fully enter at blood life death, when all things appertaining to your heavenly estate shall develop all things new; or in a new spirit life untrammelled by the warring blood life's opposition carnal appetites, and earthly animal lusts, that war against the spirit life, and settled in everlasting state, as it was and will be to you, new heavens and new earth. 2 Pet. iii. 13: Wherein dwelleth righteousness; not the wicked and wickedness of the old carnal earthy flesh blood life beings, but spirit bodies like the angels of God. Luke-xx. 36: Thereby correcting his apostles for their coveting worldly greatness. *Judging.*—According to your measure, and under me you shall be made partakers of the glory of my kingdom, and raised up in a degree of glory above the common sort of my church, signified by the twelve tribes (Dan. i. 3; Luke xxii. 28, 29; 1 Cor. vi. 2; Rev. ii. 26).

29.] *An hundred fold.*—In spiritual goods infinitely more excellent than temporal ones, in true and full contentment of spirit, as it were in full abundance, and also in the charitable communion of believers in the church. Although this be not according to the worldly value of goods, yet notwithstanding your peace of

mind, and sure prospects of everlasting life, and love obedience to God, whom you love, and are of a hundred fold more value to you here than a brief life of unsatisfying anxieties with no hope beyond the grave; seeing with it they have God's blessings and peace of conscience.

30.] *But many.*—Take no advantage because you are first called to follow me, and have begun well; you must persevere unto the end, otherwise you shall fall from your prerogatives (Gal. iii. 4; Rev. iii. 11).

CHAPTER XX.

1.] *The kingdom.*—God's calling and distribution of his grace in the spiritual regeneration and calling, and the distribution of his grace in the spiritual state of his church, is such that he often makes equal, and prefers to give rewards to those that were called last (the Gentiles). To the first (the Jews), whether it be out of his absolute free will, or from the reason of their rejection of Jesus as their spiritual high priest king and mediator, or for some other reason unknown to mortals. And also regardeth not so much the beginning as the ending and accomplishment, whereby all human glory and contradiction against God is beaten down, and all are bound to persevere. By this similitude he confirms that sentence set down in the last verse of the preceding chapter.

2.] *A penny.*—Which was worth a drachm, weighing the eighth part of an ounce.

3.] *The third hour.*—After the sun was risen, for the Jews divided the day into twelve hours: three were the first fourth part of a day, or nine o'clock; the sixth was noon; ninth, three in the afternoon; eleventh, an hour before sunset.

7.] *Go ye.*—The Lord calls into his vineyard some sooner, and some later; Jews first called, then Gentiles.

11.] *They murmured.*—Not that there be any murmuring at the last day, for this similitude is not to be applied so literally; but that there shall be no cause to murmur, God's free bounty being not subject to man's calumny for doing good to such as have not deserved it. If God only rewarded the righteous, no sinners could be saved; priests, popes, bishops, and D.D.'s would surely perish.

15.] *Envil.*—Envious. He takes the eye for the judgment or understanding, as if he had said, Art thou envious because I am liberal to such as are not worthy of it (Deut. xv. 9; Prov. xxiii. 6)?

16.] *Last.*—The conclusion is, that every one, though sooner called than another, ought more cheerfully to labor and peaceably deport themselves, whereby to obtain the reward proposed unto them all. *For many.*—Besides the first reason, that every reward dependeth upon God's free will, there is this reason also, that it is not the external calling and profession of the gospel which causeth one to be preferred before the other, but God's eternal election may have had to do therewith (1 Cor. iv. 7). Matt. x. 22: But he that endureth (labors hard, strives for immortal life) shall be saved.

18.] *We go up.*—With this notice he arms the disciples against temptations which might have seized upon them when they saw their master's woman's seed, although spirit begotten body, delivered up to the last sacrifice for sin, being holy pure spotless Lamb of God blood life sacrifice, that had been typified for thousands of years previous.

19.] *To the Gentiles.*—Here the Lord clearly states that the Jewish priests and titled men tradition creed officials, instead of offering the most holy sacrifice themselves, delivered up the Lamb of God to the Gentiles to sacrifice; and the bloody war soldiers of Rome there were emblemizing the popish Roman Catholic inquisition tortures of the saints of the Most High, as for centuries followed, and with devil malice was perpetrated under the sheep's clothing triplicate crown of wolves. *Third day.*—But on the third day morning after blood life sacrifice, my spirit word spirit son of God creation power will with spirit power thereof take from the tomb the lifeless flesh and bones, which shall not rot and see corruption, as all other earthly blood life bodies do that end their existence forever, and return to the elements of nature as they were before they were formed into inanimate life seeds of grass and other animal grass made flesh, and animate life dead bodies, which were eaten, and formed the flesh body of mortals. Ps. xvi. 10: Neither suffer thy Holy One to see corruption. Acts ii. 27; xiii. 35, 36, 37: he should live and not see corruption. The flesh and bones taken from the tomb was void of blood life. Luke xxiv. 39: A spirit hath not flesh and bones (clearly proving that spirit life only is immortal). 1 Cor.

xv. 44: It (the Adamic blood life sin lust begotten bodies, Ps. li. 5) is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. Luke xxiv. 36, 37: the disciples, with secret door locked meeting, were affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit; clearly showing that the body of the Lord was used by his spirit life power to convince their mortal eyes and reasonings of his spirit life triumph over the devil, that had the power of death (Heb. ii. 14).

21.] *May sit.*—Let them have the first degrees of honor in thy temporal kingdom, which they apprehend and conceive (Matt. xviii. 1).

22.] *Are ye able.*—That is, to arrive to the glory of my kingdom, you must pass through many combats and troubles, following my example. Therefore before you seek after the reward and official titled stations, you should examine yourselves how you are disposed towards the combat. *To drink.*—An ordinary Scripture term, to signify the afflictions and calamities distributed to each one as it were for their portions. *Baptized.*—This kind of figure is taken from the ancient manner of baptizing, Ps. lxxix. 2. And it perhaps had a relation to the two sacraments of the Christian church, which are a sign and token of grace from God, and on man's side covenant binding him to imitate Christ; Jesus was baptized in earth's sorrows for mortals, that should seek God through him unto salvation, and immortal spirit life after blood life's close, as he emblemized in his spirit resurrection of the blood drained of life body. Each spirit born child of God is baptized with sorrows, persecutions. 2 Tim. iii. 12.: All that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution. Pharaoh was immersed for his sins, and therein died, and all his hosts. Acts xix. 5: And when they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. 6: And when Paul had laid his hands upon them (not like Pharaoh immersed in water, but hands dipped in a bowl of clean water), the Holy Ghost came upon them; and they spake with tongues and prophesied. 1 Cor. x. 2: And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea (dry bottom). 3: And did all eat the same spiritual meat. 4: And did all drink the same spiritual drink, for they drank of that spiritual rock that followed them. And that rock was Christ, not Peter. *We are able.*—An ignorant and presumptuous answer; like D.D.'s of this day.

23.] *Ye shall drink.*—Not truly by your own strength and power, as you presume at this present time, but by the help and special grace of my spirit. *Is not mine.*—In the quality of medi-

ator, in which I do converse here in the world, in a partly nature blood life embryo state of sacrifice. I have no charge to give degrees in spirit life glory to come; but only to gain my spirit born of my spirit word of my Father's seed children of immortal spirit life's salvation. *It is prepared.*—The honor to sit in God's kingdom with Christ is not given for kindred's sake, or any other by respect of persons or titles, but out of pure grace and favor to all who comply with God's spirit life immortal proclamation gospel conditions. Eph. i. 4: That we should be holy, and without blame in love.

25.] *Dominion.*—The domineering desire to lord it over others is a sure proof that such self aspirations in church or state are tare seeds of the devil, developed into unclean spirit devils; all such seek official positions in church or state; good preachers or office-holders are those that do not seek for the title; Christ forbids the heart's blood life ambition, especially amongst the ministers of the gospel. True holiness love piety spurns unholy aspirants.

26.] *Whosoever.*—Christ speaks to his apostles (Peter included, notwithstanding the pope's triplicate clown cap), as to his ministers, telling them that they ought to set all their chief dignity and honor not in commanding, as it is in worldly lordships; but in humility, and humbly and faithfully serving by diligent search of the Scriptures the Lord's narrow way, and discarding wholly all theology and men tradition creeds, that do not accord wholly therewith; and better still to have no other than the Scriptures for their creed, confession of faith, discipline, doctrine, etc. If they cannot say thus saith the Lord in his Bible laws and testimony, then be assured the Lord hath not called him to preach, and he is but a selfish domineering politician, seeking official station for the loaves and fishes, not to distribute their own food, as the apostles did to feed the needy hungry blood life bodies; soul food all comes from God, and each must ask for themselves. Preachers, like doctors and lawyers, are all but poor helps; and the high officials of church and state are but wolves in sheep's clothing, that feed on their flock. Though against will and desire, if the Lord calls, go.

27.] *Your servant.*—The highest title the Lord God confers on any of his church rulers on earth is servant; Mr., D.D.'s, or any other fuss and feathers church and state popes, cardinals, arch, or starched as in the English Episcopal London archbishop, with a many thousand dollar call to eat loaves and fishes as a trade.

28.] *To be ministered unto.*—As a king or prince in this world

during his abode on earth. *His life.*—His blood life, spirit begotten of woman's seed nature life egg, that soon would have been rotten as all others soon are, that monthly are developed, if not quickened into life by Spirit of God power or by way of male life milt seed, which Job illustrates. Job xxv. 5: The stars are not pure in God's sight. 4: How then can man be justified with God; or how can he be clean that is born of a woman (they cannot in flesh birth, John iii. 5)? 6: How much less man, that is a worm, and the son of man which is a worm, which dieth not, nor is his fire consuming power quenched. *For many.*—All, whosoever will let him take the water of life freely, Rev. xxii. 17. All who are spirit born from Christ's seed, and have his spirit (Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5). Rom. viii. 9: If you have not the spirit of Christ, you are none of his.

31.] *Rebuked them.*—Disdaining their condition; or in regard to Christ to whom they imagined them to be troublesome; or being offended; or being offended at the exalted name of Lord, which they gave him, and as honorable in descent from David in woman's seed nature egg blood life development. *Have mercy on us.*—Praying in earnest.

34.] *Followed him.*—They became followers of Christ Jesus by way of belief spirit birth, and worshipers of God.

CHAPTER XXI.

1.] *When they drew.*—In this approach Christ Jesus would show by a solemn manner the nature and condition of his kingdom, which is far different from the hell weapons of war noise, and the buffoon bubble pomp and pride of this world's rulers of self aggrandizement and exaltation; when each moment of life they are poor dependent rebels by nature against the God of the universe, on whose miraculously produced expanded spirit word food they live. The earth he created, and sustains in its rapid flight of over three-score thousand miles an hour in lighted space, lit up by his word, Let there be light, and there was light (Gen. i. 3). *Bethphage.*—A borough near to Jerusalem. *Of Olives.*—A little hill on the east side of Jerusalem, planted with olive trees (Zech. xiv. 4).

2.] *Straightway*.—At the first coming into the borough, without going or seeking far.

3.] *The Lord*.—I the sovereign Lord and Creator of all things, and the source of all nature animate and inanimate life things, by way of my spirit word creation spirit life Son of God power given me of my Father, the direct and only self-existent from eternity past, eternal immortal life imparting sovereign supreme of the universe, that for a wise purpose sanctioned in mercy goodness love the veiling of infinite love in this woman's seed spirit of God begotten body, that now is seen by mortal nature eyes, where-with God's infinite justice is to be retained in its purity untarnished in the salvation of all who are spirit born of faith, in the atonement I shall soon make, and to show that if I sought earthly power aggrandizement I could readily obtain worshipers, and above this to fulfil the Scripture prophecy, I will impart sufficient knowledge of all this to the owner of the ass. Zech. ix. 9: Thy king cometh unto thee; he is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass.

7.] *They set him*.—Jesus got up: upon the clothes, which was at that time a sign of honor, and acknowledgment of a new king. 2 Kings ix. 13: Then they hasted, and took every man his garment, and put it under him on the top of the stairs, and blew with trumpets, saying, Jehu is king.

8.] *Strewed them*.—A sign of public rejoicing and honor formerly used in those days.

9.] *Hosanna*.—A Hebrew word, which signifies, "Save, I pray thee;" and is taken from Ps. cxviii. 25. Now because the Jews in the feast of tabernacles, bearing branches according to the law, Lev. xxiii. 40: Ye shall take on the first day the boughs of goodly trees; and ye shall rejoice before the Lord your God seven days. They used this word Hosanna for an acclamation of joyful prayer to God, for the people's safety and prosperity: they did at the last call the branches themselves Hosanna. And as it was the custom to carry green boughs at the joyful entrances of princes, and other public rejoicings. *Is he*.—Ps. cxviii. 26: Blessed be he that cometh in the name of the Lord. In these acclamations Christ was by some acknowledged to be the true Messiah sent by God, and accompanied by his power, by others as a great prophet. *In the highest*.—May this happiness which we wish thee come unto thee from heaven, and from God (Eph. i. 3), or may you enjoy it in heaven.

12.] *That sold.*—Things necessary for offerings and sacrifices : as beasts, incense, salt, flour, oil, wine, etc., to have them there ready for sacrificial purposes according to the Jewish law. There were also money changers that exchanged current Roman money (Matt. xxii. 19) into Jewish shekels and half shekels appointed by law for amercements (Lev. v. 15) for the tribute of each head (Exod. xxx. 12), for the redeeming of vows (Lev. xxvii. 3), and for other uses. All this was done in the first court called by the Gentiles, and the first introduction of those money changers was for accommodating the people who worshiped, only for worship business; but afterwards it degenerated into a profane speculating merchandizing and avarice (Zech. xiv. 21). *Doves.*—For offerings, most common for poor people (Lev. v. 7, 11; xiv. 22; Luke ii. 24).

13.] *Of prayer.*—So long as the ceremonies according to God's institution endured.

14.] *Healed them.*—Christ Jesus maintains and defends by miracles the power and authority which he had received from God his father. No church should be desecrated.

16.] *Hearest thou.*—They obliquely tax Christ Jesus as if he was ambitious to be praised by the children. *Perfected.*—Against all the oppositions and contradictions of college bred worldly wise philosophers of the world, who choose their nature blood life dark way, instead of spirit birth truths light and right and only truthful way to heavenly immortal life wisdom, eternal in knowledge and truthful understanding. Thou hast appointed an assured praise for thyself, by the mouth of those that believe in thee; who are like unto, and are little spirit children of God, new creatures in Christ Jesus (2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 15; Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5). Matt. xi. 25: At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the (earthly college bred worldly) wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto (spirit born new creature spirit) babes. 26: Even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy sight. Such praised Jesus.

17.] *Bethany.*—A borough near Jerusalem, eastward, and near the Mount of Olives, where he had raised up Lazarus from the dead (John ii. 18).

19.] *When he saw.*—Christ knew there was no fruit on the fig tree, the same as he also knows there are but few good spiritual, spirit born, bearing spiritual fruits on the earth, Christians that are sowing to their spirit born soul spirit egg mind thoughts of

obedience, and pure holy love to God, and to all that love him, alone reap life everlasting. The holy in blood life heart desires are ever ready to defend the right, and war against the wrong; they will ever utter their voice for the spirit birth, clearly stated in the Scriptures, and discard all ways of evil, unfruitful in spirit, that sow to their fleshly lusts and appetites, at blood life's sudden close reap only rottenness.

21.] *I say unto you.*—The apostles were astounded with the sudden withering of the nature products inanimate life, in silent obedience to Christ's command. While they were contemplating his vast word power over nature life, he told them how they through Christ's, which strengtheneth me (Phil. iv. 13). 1 Cor. iv. 4: For I know nothing by myself. Matt. xxi. 21: If ye have faith and doubt not, vast mountains of seeming impossibilities God's spirit born children, through Christ's spirit within them in power, will readily remove into the sea of oblivion.

23.] *The elders.*—Magistrates and senators. *What authority.*—They conceived that no man ought to take upon him the office of a teacher, only by their authority and sufferance; the same pharisaism is practiced in most churches now.

24.] *One thing.*—The chief priests and elders of the Jewish church, as to-day in most churches, would stop any person, or prevent them, or refuse to open their church doors for any person to proclaim the message of the Lord, if only commissioned spiritually; and with orthodox pretended righteousness put on the regalia of saints, over supreme selfish, self-willed, self-commissioned to preach sectarian Babel God mocking creeds, made by pagan Roman Catholic popery inquisition murderers of as hell's foes, the real saints of the most holy God of heaven. Thus the Jewish tradition priests sought Jesus to entrap him cunningly with devil malice pretense. He answers the fools according to their folly (Prov. xxvi. 5), by propounding a question that would entrap them with the people, and by which his answer might be plainly inferred and understood.

25.] *The baptism.*—John's whole ministry, by the counter question the Lord says, Do you believe John was a truthful prophet sent by God? If you do believe it, why do you not believe the witness he bare of me (John i. 15, 27; v. 33)? If not, declare yourselves openly, as you desire of me. But seeing that through base fear of being called a heretic, or not orthodox, while you are but hypocrites, believing traditions of men like yourselves,

and it would be useless to give you truthful instruction, for from your childhood you have been taught false creeds of men, that contradict the Scriptures, and mock God's righteousness, goodness, love, and mercy, purity, and holiness. *From heaven.*—From God, according to the Jewish manner of speaking (Dan. iv. 26; Luke xv. 18). *Of men.*—Men creeds, false traditions, and without calling or power from God (2 Pet. i. 21).

26.] *Fear the people.*—Hypocrites look more upon men than upon God or his truth Scriptures.

27.] *We cannot tell.*—They clearly told a falsehood equivocation; they could have told their belief.

28.] *A certain man.*—Christ shows by this similitude their great hypocrisy, who with their words feign a great zeal towards God, comparing them, the Jews, to that son that boasted of doing his father's will and did nothing.

31.] *The publicans.*—Of which many, after an evil life and an open rebellion against God, have been converted at John's preaching; whereas you that profess perfect obedience are hypocrites, and have withstood John's voice who called you to repentance (Luke vii. 29, 30). *Go into.*—In the spiritual state of the church restored by me, they have an advantage superior to you, by virtue of their true humility, faith, and repentance, in the participation of God's grace, and held in esteem by the church.

32.] *In the way.*—John's life, examples, doctrines, and adhesion to the Scriptures were so holy and irreprehensible that you have had nothing to say against him.

33.] *Parable.*—The householder is God, the vine the church of Israel, the husbandmen the priests and governors of that church, the servants the prophets, the son Jesus Christ; the meaning is, that God had given into the care of the priests his church on earth, that the priests had, as many now have, false doctrines and creeds of men traditions, that they preached instead of the plain gospel truths of God's guidance; they thereby made themselves as now lords of men's consciences, and drawing everything to their own profit and glory, acknowledge God no longer, nor their king, not giving him any account, abusing and slaying his prophets; and at last Jesus (himself), whom God had sent unto them from his vast throne of beatific spirit glory power, that ruled the boundless numberless to mortals millions of superior worlds, and high exalted spirit children, numberless also, and through millions upon millions of towering miles, likewise incomprehensible in vastness, and com-

municated with mortals through a medium nature body spirit begotten, for the express purpose of destroying the devil that led them astray and had the power of death to inflict in serpent poison fangs upon blood life bodies and souls (Heb. ii. 14; Ezek. xviii. 4, 24, 27). *Digged.*—In the earth a solid foundation. *And went.*—This voyage is a figure of Christ's ascent and abode in heaven, truly a far country, to mortals innumerable millions of miles away, through portals of beatific light.

41.] *He will.*—Luke xx. 16: He at the destruction of Jerusalem destroyed them as a nation, and at the close of time when he comes and sits in the heavens on his glory white throne, all then living on the earth, and all tare seed unclean devils spirit's children of the devil (Matt. xiii. 38–40), perhaps most of Adam's race then alive, and the devils and fallen angels of all ages past, including Jews unrepentant, shall then be utterly destroyed, consumed, and reduced to annihilation utter as to life in any form.

42.] *Rejected.*—As useless or unfit for a corner foundation stone. *The head.*—Of the corner foundation and capstone. This stone is Christ Jesus, the foundation and capstone of his spiritual temple; Acts iv. 11, 12: Neither is there salvation in any other, for there is no other name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved. The builders, scribes, Pharisees, and princes of the people, from among the publicans, Sadducees, and sinners. The five sects or brothers of Dives, but all those builders were dismissed; and the stone they rejected became as he ever was the living stone, that expanded into a living spiritual temple, and is still expanding and not wholly completed, nor can it be until the last saint spirit born of Christ's seed drops his blood life body, and in spirit body soars to meet the then fully and wholly matured head-and spirit church of life immortal structure. May the Lord God soon unite all orthodox churches, and all on earth of his spirit seed in or out of any and all churches! He knows all his immortal spirit born of soul spirit egg minds; as one let all unite soon, O Lord, with thy holy Bible as their only creed. Then Bible rejectors will remain outside to perish.

43.] *The kingdom.*—The spiritual spirit born of God in Christ's kingdom have the Lord God for their eternal king. The Jewish types and ceremonial sacrifices closed forever, and all natural religion. Gentiles receive spiritual regeneration by way of faith in the promises word of God, through our Lord Jesus Christ.

44.] *Shall fall.*—As I shall be the sound foundation of my

church, so will I likewise be an occasion of ruin to all mine adversaries (1 Pet. ii. 7), whom I will destroy. *Powder*.—Reduce by omnipotent power to utter annihilation; for without God's aid no life can exist. Acts xvii. 28: In God we live, move, and have our being.

45.] *He spake of them*.—Hypocrites, though they reject the fruit of the doctrine, yet they are inwardly sensible, and pricked with what concerns them in it; but it makes them more fierce against it.

46.] *The multitude*.—It is but reason that they which walk without the fear of God should always live in fear of men. *Prophet*.—The common people of the poorer class were better affected towards Christ than the aristocracy, most esteemed by men of the world.

CHAPTER XXII.

1.] *By parables*.—The Lord Christ had given the Jews plainly God's laws, as on Mount Sinai; but they rejected God's Scripture laws plain, for priestly officials false creeds of men's theology, vised by Pharisee D.D.'s. And, therefore, Christ's love attribute in the spirit word begotten body, by way of woman's seed holy, held its alliance with the spirit word Son of creation power, and would not again give anew the gospel truths previously given, and discarded for D.D.'s false creeds of vain unspirit born mortals, but in parables Jesus talked with them.

2.] *The kingdom*.—The meaning is, God the Father, when he would establish his Son's kingdom in the world, and make his Son head of his spiritual church, joined unto him by an everlasting covenant, would first call the Jews to the participation of the spiritual treasures, eternal immortality, of which their nature, sacrifices, oblations and ceremonies were but parabolic visions, while the spirit birth immortal life goods in Christ Jesus, as those for whom they seemed to be prepared, by reason of their ancient prerogative; but because they have refused them, he shall punish them with total destruction; annihilation as to life in any form, blood life, spirit life, or inanimate nature life, pure or impure. And shall receive the Gentile believers of Scripture truths, who accept eternal life upon the gospel terms of spirit birth.

3.] *Would not come.*—The previously favored Jews would not receive spirit birth from Christ Jesus, nor Holy Ghost baptism; all rejecters perish in rottenness.

4.] *Other servants.*—To show that God punishes not the contempt of his grace and word suddenly, but prolongeth in patient mercy their life to their appointed probation end of existence; that they may repent if they will, while probation life blood pulsates. Ezek. xviii. 27: Save his soul alive. *Are ready.*—The Lord omits nothing that infinite love could provide, or that belongs to the good and salvation of his people.

5.] *To his farm.*—He shows that they had preferred the goods and comforts of the sensual blood life, rather than heavenly spiritual life immortal, by way of spirit birth.

7.] *His armies.*—The same soldiers perhaps that were the murderers of Jesus were with the Roman army the executioners of God's just punishment of the Jewish nation and city Jerusalem; that delivered Jesus through their office-holders of church and state sufferance by the same Roman power; and the same evil nature devil tare seed spirit that murdered the Saviour pervaded the Romish church and state powers, that was in the Jewish officials, as fully developed in the murder of the Gentiles' apostle Paul, and for centuries after by their church and state pope Neroes, they murdered as heretics all true spirit born holy children of God; but now their state power is gone, and soon their vicious pope power will be utterly destroyed. Dan. ix. 26: And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself. And the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary. *Destroyed those murderers.*—Who killed his servants? For God severely punishes those that despise and mock his benefits. But how horridly do men tradition creeds mock God to-day with their endless hell fire tortures of the wicked! when here, Christ God's truth spirit life eternal word declares how God would punish the vilest murderers, the vilest sinners earth ever sustained, as afore stated.

8.] *Not worthy.*—The Jews were first of all Adam's race bidden, chosen, and given God's law.

9.] *Go.*—He foretells the second call of the Lord, the calling of the Gentiles, who were to be put in place of the Jews. *Bid to.*—Bid to the wedding, the spiritual union of Christ's spirit life immortal from his Father, with all spirit born of his spirit word of God, spirit love life intellectual the soul spirit egg mind impreg-

nating seed. Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul shall make her boast in the Lord; thus clearly showing the union with the souls of those who, like the female bride, will to receive the man as a husband; and the soul's spirit intellect egg, in the womb mind, is after that impregnated with Christ's life immortal seed, from his father, in him spirit and spirit love, pulsating life immortal. John vi. 57: As the father hath sent me, and I live by the father, so he that eateth (receives by faith belief his gospel truths, and the soul egg mind is quickened and impregnated thereby, thus spirit eating) me (love) even he shall live by me: clearly showing it to be a matter of life and death, alike of all saints. Such as seek God through Christ with all the heart (blood life) receive life immortal; all others receive nothing after blood life's close (Ezek. xviii. 4, 24, 27). If they repent and seek is the condition, then they save their souls alive; it is a matter of life and death of souls. All bodies die on earth.

10.] *Servants went.*—The unthankfulness of them that are bidden cannot frustrate the use of that holy spirit life eternal food, which God hath set before us. *Both bad and good.*—Indifferently worthy and unworthy, as well by reason of their condition, base or honorable, as in regard to their goodness or badness: to signify that in the assembly of those that are called, which is the external church, many hypocrites and wicked men are gathered together to hear the gospel preached, with the good and true spirit born believers, at the gospel intellectual feast of reason. Christ makes a distinction of them, separating from the mystical and internal spiritual born holy believers of his church, and from communion of his spiritual love feast, those that are unspirit born of his spirit love word of God seed, that have not the truth character, and spiritual love life immortal love pulsations, as declared hereafter (Matt. xiii. 38, 47).

11.] *Had not on.*—Had not spirit birth new creature spirit life love garments. A frequent figure for the gift of regeneration by Christ his spirit, without which no mortal can be Christ's. Rom. viii. 9: But ye (spirit born holy) are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be the Spirit of God dwell in you. (A new creature, 2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 15; Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his: 2 Cor. v. 3, 17; Rev. xix. 8.)

12.] *How camest thou?*—Though God bear patiently with hypocrites for a time in his church, yet he knows well how to distinguish them, not by their outward dress. Lev. x. 6; xiii. 58;

Joel ii. 13: Rend your heart, not your garments. Ps. cxxxviii. 6: The proud he knoweth afar off. All the race of Adam by nature are self proud, and love approbation of their fellow sinners; one takes pride in titles, as D.D.'s, professors, pope, cardinal, bishop, elder, Rev., etc., another in rich appendages of clothing, robes, etc. Others take pride and claim superior holiness for plain dress, as if clothing was godliness. The beggar may be proud of his infidelity. All pride in mortals is sin, not outside of the flesh body; each has to decide for themselves.

13.] *Outer darkness*.—Outside of lighted space, the last judgment day at the close of time, those alive on the earth at the close of time in flesh blood life bodies gnash with anguish despair, and with blasphemy, being of the devil's army of darkness, and then sure of defeat and death; being of the earth earthy: 1 Cor. xv. 48; Rom. viii. 7. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. 8: So then they that are in the flesh (at the close of time) cannot please God. Matt. viii. 12: Outer darkness. Isa. xxxviii. 18: They that go down to the pit cannot hope for thy truth. Rev. ix. 1: Bottomless pit. Beneath all lighted space, into inane darkness, chaotic darkness of eternal death, that knows no life ray of light.

14.] *For many*.—Because many that are called do not answer to God's call, and that even among those also who do in some sort answer, some are rejected because their spirit egg mind is full of the unclean spirit of darkness and worldly aspirations, and evil natures gross lusts spirits and desires full of envy, malice, hatred, and inclined wholly to the broad way life of evil death, it clearly appeareth that but few of all of Adam's sin lust seed are recipients of immortal spirit life seed from the Saviour, and therefrom spirit born, John iii. 5. Without which it is impossible that they can be immortal in life. 1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality. *Are called*.—With an outward calling common, as by ministers of the gospel; but there is another, which is spiritual calling, which calls upon the heart governor of blood life to surrender to God nature affections and desires and aspirations, and to surrender to the soul spirit egg mind intellectual quickening spirit life, love seed's spirit blood life, that will pulsate by way of the love spirit heart life immortal; by the spirit of adoption and faith, and spirit birth new creatures in Christ Jesus, such alone are chosen and saved.

16.] *Herodians*.—Who mixed, as do all mere creeds of men-pagan superstitions, and idolatries of human blood life body wor, ship, and mock their pagan myth god with their preaching that he is a resurrecter of rotten corruption bodies, most of which he puts off his immortal life into to punish his own life; for surely the dead rotten matter could not be tortured by fire, or otherwise; absurd mockery myths, with Judaism; and favored the dominion of the Romans, to the oppression of the people; and were of the leaven of Herod (Mark viii. 15). *The way*.—God's law and doctrine, according to which every one ought to proceed and be guided. *The person*.—Whether they be mean or great ones, and princes, because that the captious question which they came to ask him had a relation to the commanding Romans.

17.] *Is it lawful?*—They referred to the half shekel which was by the Mosaic law imposed upon every Jew yearly (Exod. xxx. 13), which the Romans had transferred to their capital, to the great offense and indignation of the Jews, as well as because it was a sign of slavery, ill becoming professed free people of the sovereign of the universe. John viii. 33: We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man. As also because they held this imposition to be a profane sacrilege. Matt. xvii. 24: The deceits which lay hidden under this question were this, that if Christ had answered that it was not lawful to pay it, they would have accused him and delivered him into the hands of the Roman governor for a seditious man (Luke xx. 20). And, on the other side, if he had said that it was lawful, they would have disgraced him among the people as one that consented to the Romans' tyranny and impiety.

19.] *Show me*.—The meaning is, seeing that God hath subjected you to the Romans, as it appeareth by the stamp of your current coin, which is a sign of supreme power, bear it patiently; that doth not any way hinder the service which you owe to God, as you profess to be his people (1 Cor. vii. 21); and besides, it is an easy matter to be obedient to God's commands and Cæsar's in this payment, which consists in a little sum of money.

21.] *The things that are*.—This may have a relation as well to the half shekel, which they may pay to God, though they paid as much to the Romans; but chiefly it had reference most assuredly to the service of the heart's blood life governor, and true spirit birth holiness which God requireth (John iv. 24).

22.] *Went their way*.—Wholly overcome and ashamed.

23.] *Sadducees*.—They were one of the five sects of the Jews,

or one of the five brethren that Dives the Jew desired Lazarus the Gentile to visit; but the circumcision gulf did not allow a communion of Jews and Gentiles in common. The Sadducees did not believe in the resurrection to life again of dead rotten bodies, that had returned to nature's elements, as it was previous to being formed into food for mortals by the command of God to earth and water. Eccl. xii. 7: Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was, and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it. *Say that there is no resurrection.*—There they greatly erred, for Christ is the resurrection and the immortal life from God, his spirit word power father; and the new creatures spirit born of Christ's spirit love infinite life seed from God he resurrects from their dead bodies when blood life dies. 1 Cor. xv. 44: It is raised a spirit body, by Christ its spirit vine life immortal. 37: Thou sowest not that body that shall be. 44: It is sown a natural (or nature) body. Matt. v. 20: Except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven. Matt. xxiii. 13: Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Woes to them continue to verse 29. Acts xxiii. 8: Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither angel nor spirit; but the Pharisees confess both. 6: Paul joined the Pharisees in the hope of the resurrection of the dead, for which he was then called in question. Paul suffered greatly for that belief, and shows by his after writings a full conviction and repentance, for he says, 1 Cor. xv., as before stated. And Christ pronounced no woe unto the Sadducees; showing clearly the resurrection of dead bodies was untrue, as the Lord here plainly teaches also. Bad and backslidden as were all five of the sectarian Jews, the scribes and Pharisees were the worst. In all Babel creeds now extant on the earth, who struggle to build a spirit tower of rotten bodies resurrected to life, part to torture eternally and part to enjoy eternal happiness, etc., all have some truths in their creeds, as did the scribes and Pharisees and others of old; but they all mix in men tradition false creeds, counter, and many utterly contradicting God's statute laws. The Lord has opened but one narrow spirit birth way to heaven. John iii. 5: Except a man be born of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

24.] *Master.*—Moses said, now what do you say to the following?

25.] *Seven brethren.*—They propose an example consonant to

the Mosaic law, which among them might come to pass, or one that had actually taken place.

28.] *In the resurrection.*—If their dead bodies are all raised, with their animal lusts as they were here on earth, they will require wives; and how can one woman be the satisfactory wife of seven? and each will claim her, and most likely if they have the same body and souls they had on earth, they will quite likely fight each other, but if they refer the matter to you as judge, whose wife should she be, of the seven who legally married her here on earth according to Scripture law?

29.] *Ye do err.*—All your ideas of the resurrection of rotten sin lust begotten bodies, made of vegetation and animal matter and animal lust blood life beyond the grave is absurd, as your other sectarians, the scribes and Pharisees, falsely teach; and you are also ignorant of the teachings of the Scriptures, which you should carefully read, and search diligently for the truth of their meaning; and ask in secret God's aid. Gen. ii. 7: You are plainly told God formed man of the dust of the ground. Gen. iii. 19: Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. Eccles. xii. 7: Then shall the dust return to earth as it was. Ps. xxxvii. 10: For yet a little while, and the wicked shall not be. 20: But the wicked shall perish, and the enemies of the Lord shall be as the fat of lambs (it would not take forever to burn the lambs' fat with a good fire); they shall consume into smoke, they shall consume away. 38: The transgressors shall be destroyed (annihilated as to life of any kind whatever). Isa. v. 24: Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff, so their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust: because they have cast away the law of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel. Isa. xl. 6: All flesh is grass, and all the goodliness thereof is as the flower of the field. 7: The grass withereth, the flower fadeth, because the Spirit of the Lord bloweth upon it; surely the people is grass. 15: Behold, the nations are as the drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance. 17: All nations before God are as nothing, and they are counted to him less than nothing and vanity (considering the cost purchase of the spirit born saved, whose whole value also is in their Redeemer's purchase blood life sacrifice). 23: God bringeth (earth's) princes to nothing; he maketh the judges of earth as vanity. 24: The whirlwind shall take them away as stubble. 22: It is the Lord that sitteth upon the circle of

the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers. Obad. 16: They (the wicked) shall be as though they had not been. Dan. xii. 2: And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to a resurrection of contemptible stench of rottenness (says the original Hebrew). Mal. iv. 1: For behold the day cometh that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble; and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch.

30.] *As the angels.*—Luke xx. 35: They which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that word (spirit life), and the resurrection from the dead (blood life dead at the time of such death, not resurrection from the grave, dust, elements, etc.). 36. Neither can they die any more, for they are equal unto the angels (Ps. civ. 4). And are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection. John iv. 24: God is a spirit, and like begetting its like, his omnipotent statute law of the universe, his spirit born of spirit seed, he imparted to his spirit word Son, produces a spiritual new creature in Christ Jesus, its spirit head and vine. 2 Cor. v. 17: By the natural or essential attributes of God we understand such perfections as his eternity, omnipresence, infinite knowledge, infinite wisdom, omnipotence, and boundless beneficence, that God is a spirit, love, goodness, mercy, and that he only hath immortality, and dwelleth in light that no mortal man can approach unto, and that none but spirit born of his immortal spirit life word seed in Christ Jesus, of all Adam's race, can become immortal in existence, in any form or place. 1 Cor. xv. 23 (Rom. viii. 9), 36, 37, 44 to 51. *Of God.*—Angels have not flesh bodies of Adam's seed.

32.] *God is not.*—A resurrecter of dead bodies, after nor before they rot, and return to nature elements, of which they are wholly composed. Gen. iii. 19, 22, 24; Eccles. xii. 7. *But of.*—God is a God, and father of all spirit born immortal spirit beings, who are like the angels of God, as plainly stated by our Lord, who certainly knew, and forever should have stopped the false teachers, who, like the pagans, worshipped their blood life nature sin lust bodies that God had sentenced to death in Eden, and to native dust.

33.] *His doctrine.*—Of spirit angelic life only beyond the grave, as heavenly, and full of truth eternal and majesty.

35.] *A lawyer.*—Or D.D. of the law. Mark xii. 28: He is called a scribe, which was the common name for all the expounders

of the law ; but by Luke xi. 44, 45, it appears that there is some difference between the name of scribe, strictly taken, and doctor. The scribe taught all the people in the synagogues as a public preacher ; and a doctor in the schools as a reader. *Tempting him.*—To see if he agreed with the Pharisee doctrine, who determined the degrees of commandments and of sins ; or to take occasion to extol their false creeds.

39.] *Is like.*—Of equal authority. *As thyself.*—Doing him all manner of good, as thou wouldst have done to thyself, not meting out for him an endless hell fire torture, and for thyself an eternal home in heaven of perfect happiness, without an alloy thought regarding thy neighbors, and perchance thy children, father, mother, brothers, and sisters, uncles, aunts, nephews, and nieces, and cousins and friends, in endless torment existence ; all counter to God's laws holy, and myths and mockeries of God's goodness, love, and mercy, that endureth forever, and wholly different from what you would desire to have meted out to thyself by thy neighbor, and for what purpose that endless torture of those God consigns to dust ; their myth horrid God-mocking creeds of those horrid inquisition murderers of the dark ages of popery, who, after they had burned the body of saints of God as heretics from their dark bloodthirsty gangrene evil nature hearts and devil-possessed souls, meted out to their tortured and burned to death neighbors a myth god devil like themselves, that would resurrect to life again their dead bodies, to continue their horrid devil fiend demon torture eternally, for no purpose whatever, not to reform, or for purgation, but merely for revenge on dead bodies they had tortured to death ; when Christ had commanded of God, that blessed are the merciful for they should obtain mercy, and that as they desired to have meted to them they should in like manner mete out to others (Matt. vii. 12 ; Luke vi. 37).

40.] *All the law.*—Love is God's essence, and none but those that are spirit born of God in Christ Jesus, who pulsate spirit love holy that thinketh no evil, are immortal.

42.] *Whose son.*—From whom doth his spirit life immortal come, and the woman's seed blood life sacrifice according to the Scriptures.

43.] *In spirit.*—Rom. viii. 9 : But ye (spirit born holy new creatures in Christ Jesus, 2 Cor. v. 17) are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. 8 : So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. (Yet still some

preach, yea all orthodox, that they like the Egyptian mummy souls return from heaven at the rotten body resurrection, and enter again their flesh bodies, in which they are plainly told they cannot please God.) By divine prophetic revelation David in spirit (not blood life nature flesh lusts and aspirations for worldly things) called Jesus Lord. Ps. cx. 1: The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand until I make thine enemies thy footstool.

44.] *Right hand.*—By God's right hand is signified the authority and power which he hath given his Son, as ruler over all earth's spirit born immortal beings. *Till I make.*—Not that his kingdom after that shall end, but be invincible, and having destroyed his enemies shall reign eternally.

45.] *If David then.*—This name Lord, which David attributes unto one of his lineage, contrary to the order of the degree of parents upon the children, sheweth that the Messiah must be something more than the son of David, viz. the eternal spirit word power creation Lord God, son of Jehovah, God almighty, the sovereign supreme of the universe.

46.] *Answer him.*—For the truth uttered by Jesus remains invincible against all opposition.

CHAPTER XXIII.

1.] *Then spake.*—Christ spake to his disciples as well as to the wicked masses; for the wicked lives of pastors will not have the laws of God to be despised. How awfully the abominable traditions of men doctrines, as still preached in most of the churches on earth, mock God and God's Scripture teachings, plainly declared statute laws of God, that the prophet Isaiah declares, xxxv. 8,—the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err therein, the way of holiness love.

2.] *Sit.*—They hold the degree and place of doctors, and ordinary expositors of Moses' law, for want of priests and Levites, to whom God had given the office.

3.] *Whatsoever they.*—Whatsoever is according to the law which they teach (Deut. xvii. 11). Isa. viii. 20: For otherwise Christ had warned them to beware of their false doctrines. Matt. xvi. 6, 12; 1 Thess. v. 21; 1 John iv. 1: the same as now.

4.] *They bind.*—They misconstrue parables into mockeries of God's love, goodness, justice, and mercies that endure forever the same as now, they gather up together many commands, and most strict rules of living and plain dressing, which they most rigorously impose upon others to observe, and the man of property must dress as if he was in poverty; and yet they boldly free themselves from the observance thereof, often by the finest clothing.

5.] *Seen of men.*—Whereby that outward studied appearance they have made of virtue is vain and unprofitable, as plainly made clothing of stand up instead of turned down collars, broad brimmed hats, single breasted coats, and large scoop bonnets, and high necked dresses, etc. They are all good; but to glory in being better than those that dress otherwise is pharisaic hypocrisy.

Phylacteries.—Preservatives, so the Greeks called certain writings which they did wear about them against witchcrafts and sorceries; to the resemblance of which, though to a diverse use, were framed certain borders or writings upon skins or other stuff. The Jews, some of them, wrote portions of the law and wore them upon their gowns (Deut. vi. 8) for a present remembrance (Prov. iii. 3; vi. 21; vii. 3). To make a show of greater holiness, the Pharisees did wear those borders broader than the ordinary sort of people. *The borders.*—See the law (Num. xv. 38; Deut. xxii. 12).

6.] *Uppermost rooms.*—Chief seats also are often taken by the wolves in sheeps clothing, titled officials and vile lust-hearted demons; Christ condemns the ambition and thirst for bubble honor of mortals which was in them and in thousands of proud aspirants and official hypocrites still.

7.] *Rabbi.*—D.D., blasphemy; it must be rotten body gods they doctor, and eternal hell fire torturers of all who are heretics to their false pagan creeds, church and state titles, from pope down to reverend, or rabbi, master, our master.

8.] *Be not ye.*—The highest official, instead of feeling proud, should feel humble as a servant of the Lord, to whom all glory belongs; and that he is only a servant of the members of the church, and not its master, who is the Lord alone of his spiritual sanctified spirit born holy church master; all others are his and his children's servants. The devil or evil is the master of unclean tare seed children officials of the world. This is not to be rashly understood for a total rejection of civil and respectful titles for public offices, which are marks of officers of order; but the meaning is, not in the church to imitate Uzza, 1 Chron. xiii. 9. Nor as

Korah, Dathan, and Abiram and their adherents: Num. xvi. 20, 21: The Lord spake unto Moses and unto Aaron, saying, Separate yourselves from among this congregation, that I may consume them in a moment. (Not forever to be kept alive in the justice flame of God's displeasure, but to be consumed in a moment, that nothing remains of life from God to continue through infinite mercy, probation, or any other life rays from God. Avoid the vain glory which the antichrist church and state and all other doctor devils annex unto these titles, and do not attribute unto yourselves the authority of masters of my church, but refer all the glory to me only, and teach nothing but that which you have learned of me, for the Scriptures are the only truth guide (2 Cor. i. 24; 1 Pet. v. 3.) And whomsoever Christ calls receive as commissioned of me, if he adheres to the Scriptures only for all his creeds; do not send him to your Dagon or Diana or the pope's Virgin Mary worshipers, nor their vain worldly wisdom colleges that know not God (1 Cor. i. 21). To be learned by infidels wise in their own vain conceits that know not God, nor to be commissioned by their fellow-men's assumed visorship over those God commissions to proclaim his messages.

9.] *Call no man father.*—Clearly showing forth Christ's spiritual church, composed of those only spirit begotten of God, in Christ Jesus spirit seed, gospel word truth spirit life, intellectual milt, which fills the whole soul with eternal life light from God, who only hath immortality, spirit life holy to impart, 1 Tim. vi. 16. And the soul spirit egg mind, by way of the soul's will door eyes and ears, receives, when it fully believes, the impregnating spirit word of God's spirit life immortal seed, sown by the word of God spirit life (Matt. xiii. 37, 38). John iii. 5: Except a man be born of water and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh. (And on the mount God commanded honor to be given by all to the fathers and mothers of our flesh bodies. Exod. xx. 12: Honor thy father and thy mother, that thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee.) And that which is born of the spirit is spirit. And the command of God is by his spirit word, and by his only spirit begotten of woman's egg seed, in unison proclaim God's command; call no man pope or priest or father of his spirit children; who only like God can be immortal in life, in spirit bodies. 2 Cor. v. 17: Therefore, if any man be in Christ he is a new creature. Gal. vi. 15: For in Christ Jesus

neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature. Therefore Christ says call no man your father (or pope) on the earth. For you, spirit born of God, are begotten of God; and you all have but one common spirit father. 1 John v. 18: We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not. This teacheth also believers who are spirit born of love, holy, not to yield reverence nor power over their consciences to any living man, pope, cardinal, or any other nonsensical clown mummeries, or triplicate or red caps of imposters, wholly antichrist, and in strict contradiction to Christ, in this verse, clearly stated, call no one pope or father, which are the same in meaning. All honor and homage is withheld from any earthly beings, and belongs wholly to God. Heb. xii. 9: We have had fathers of our flesh, which corrected us; and we gave them reverence. That had reference to the nature life blood flesh that ends its existence, and returns its substance to the earthy elements of which they are formed. Gen. iii. 19: Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return, of the earth earthy, which God will not resurrect to heaven, but will consume (2 Pet. iii. 10); the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burnt up. Rev. xx. 11: No place (in lighted space) found for it. Heb. xii. 9: Shall we (spirit begotten of God holy) not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? (Not father and resurrector of rotten bodies.) You have had millions of fathers that quickened to life nature life seed egg, that formed and developed your nature blood life flesh bodies. But of the soul spirit egg mind quickening to spirit life immortal, one is your (spirit) Father, which is in heaven. Ignorant unspirit born have antichrist popes or fathers of their Babel bogus, mockery church creeds, of men towers, that will soon like Dagon fall, with their triplicate mockery of God crowns. Jesus used to honor the Pharisees for laying these abuses aside, these titles of mortal bubble honor may be used in a good sense (1 Cor. iv. 15; Phil. ii. 22; 1 Thess. ii. 11). Receive the Scriptures alone as your only safe guide and foundation, which are plain and clearly stated to all who seek first spirit birth.

10.] *Neither be ye.*—Christ strictly forbids any of his children's receiving the title of master, for at best we are but poor helps to each other, and that should ever be in the felt capacity of a servant of Christ. He is the only spirit truth master, and in his spiritual school alone can we learn spiritual life immortal wisdom.

11.] *Greatest.*—The would-be pope and other titled official fuss-and-feathers and triplicate and red-capped self-crowned and sworn to each other as secret emissaries of their unclean spirit tare seed father the devil; they are his servants and antichrist. The highest dignity in the church is not in domination and lordship, but in ministry servitude. All God's spirit begotten children are on a level, they are equals, and are like the angels that obey God, not men creeds, all are free to speak and proclaim the messages they have of their master; not myth false creeds of men.

12.] *Shall humble.*—By virtue of a true and sincere humility. View themselves wholly dependent on their spirit life immortal vine, Christ in God, without whose aid they are utterly helpless (John xv. 5). And at greatest earthly estate I am but a spirit babe in Christ, the vine of spirit life eternal.

13.] *Ye shut up.*—Ye hinder, as much as in you lieth, by your false men creed tradition doctrines, wholly perverting, as do men tradition creeds to-day, God's law and his prophet's; and by your authority earthly, and by your earthly examples you hinder mortals from participating in spirit life's immortal life birth, by faith in that salvation and redemption which I bring to the world, and the spiritual re-establishment of my spiritual church on earth, of which the Jewish was but a shadowing nature life type; by way of spirit birth grace of God's bestowment, on condition of compliance with his gospel proclamation. *That are.*—That are directed by gospel truths, the way of spirit birth holiness to the spirit Father; but them that are searching for truth you lead away from gospel truth, to believe your Babel creeds of falsehood, started by the father of liars the devil in Eden, when he told Eve she should not die; but that she would be an immortal being: the men creed traditions of men hold the devil's lie still sacred, regarding the immortality of Eve's race and Adam's; but finding that all die as God said they should then they manufactured another worse lie, with villainous mockery of God of the most impious kind. They manufactured an imaginary myth deity of the vulture order of gods that delve in dead rotting carcasses, and by magic the rotten bodies are to be all resurrected after they had returned to vegetation life of which they were made, and re-eaten perhaps a thousand times, or by cannibals, sharks, wolves, tigers, lions, etc., yet worse than the Arabian Nights Entertainments of utterly depraved falsehoods if possible, this mysterious inconsistent with the least spark of commonest sense myth god lets these mor-

tal sin lust begotten rotten bodies all receive life from him immortal, and thereby be resurrected to immortal life of happiness; even the worst murderers, and liars, and villains, and devils, in human form; and the same parties he had cursed with death for their sins; he immortalizes what he had cursed and sentenced to death; and makes at once saints immortal out of devils wholly depraved; making darkness into light; instead of consuming darkness with light, Deut. iv. 24; Heb. xii. 29: For our God is a consuming fire; but other Babel creeds of men to back up the devil's creed proclaimed to Eve that she should not die, but become by sin immortal; have a division of corruption bodies resurrected to life, in which their devil myth god, to stick to the lie told Eve, rather than have the immortality life part of his lie wavering in lies, pagan myth insanity lies; they place about nine-tenths of all Adam and Eve's sin lust, mortal manufactured immortal tare seed devils, incorrigibly wicked, into resurrected rotten bodies; and then claim that the immortal spirit God, pure and holy sovereign of the universe, will do all this; well knowing that nothing can live of all earth life beyond its brief probation. The devil creeds of men then have the only immortal holy, pure love, goodness, and merciful spirit God of all life. Impart to those resurrected earth, hog and hominy, and grass bodies, that had passed through death's corruption, immortal life, which God only in spirit hath, and thereby those mortals become immortals, in resurrected bodies from annihilation's chaos of gases, and matter and earth elements; one-tenth are taken into the family of spirits, in flesh grass made bodies. And nine-tenths are cast into an eternal lake, or ocean of fire and brimstone, to torture the resurrected body, or the immortal spirit impartation of the holy sovereign of the universe: to torture in fire his own spirit immortal life, by which power the flesh resurrected body is kept in pain, from being consumed in a moment, if it were possible to place it there. What mockery, O my Lord, the devil liars have made of thy holy benefactions to our lost doomed rebel race! how devil like, and evil sin lust nature revenge malice like, are all those devil begotten false men creed tradition doctrines of pagan and inquisition popery, Roman Catholic fire torturers' creeds, who made a god like themselves. the worst kind of love mocking demons. The Scriptures teach no such doctrines whatever. They plainly teach that the wages of sin is death of body blood life, and of their soul's spirit egg mind intellect life, as clearly stated. Gen. ii. 7: And the Lord

God formed man of the dust of the ground. 17: But of the tree of knowledge of good and evil thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day (prophetic day one thousand years, 2 Pet. iii. 8; Ps. xc. 4) that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die. Gen. iii. 4: And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die (immortal). And unto Adam God said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the (lust exciting) tree of which I commanded thee, saying, thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life: their offspring is like them, and all die when their brief repentance day closes. 19: Out of the ground wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. 22: Lest Adam put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever; therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So he drove out the man (Adam and Eve). And he placed at the east of the garden of Eden cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way to keep the way of the tree of life. Gen. vi. 3: And the Lord God said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh. 6: And it repented the Lord that he had made man on earth (does that look like making him over again?). 7: And the Lord said, I will destroy (annihilate his life) man. Gen. vii. 23: And every living substance was destroyed, both man and cattle, etc. And Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark. Thus all will perish by God's justice fire on the last judgment day at the close of time that are in flesh bodies. They alone will be saved alive who are in the spirit life immortal ark, Christ Jesus. Eccles. xii. 7: Then shall the dust return unto God who gave it. Isa. v. 24: Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff, so their root shall be rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust; because they have cast away the law of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel. Ezek. xviii. 4: The soul that sinneth it shall die. 20: The soul that sinneth it shall die, 24, 27. Dan. xii. 2: Some to everlasting life, and some to a resurrection of rottenness (says the original Hebrew). Obad. 16: They shall be as if they had not been. Mal. iv. 1: For behold the day cometh that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble. And the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith

the Lord of hosts (the best authority), that it shall leave them neither root nor branch. Matt. iii. 12: And gather Christ's wheat (spirit born of his spirit wheat, seed of love) into the garner (heaven); but will burn up the chaff (the incorrigibly wicked and tare-devil and his unclean spirit children and associate rebels against God's truth laws) with unquenchable fire (Deut. iv. 24). Heb. xii. 9: Our God is a consuming fire. Num. xvi. 21: That I may consume them in a moment. Rom. viii. 8: So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. 9: But ye (spirit born, John iii. 5, 6, holy) are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the spirit of Christ, he is none of his (1 Cor. xv. 23, 44, 51.).

14.] *For a pretence.*—I have seen the confessions of several ministers that they had done thus after they became truly spirit born holy. An orthodox minister told the Sunday-school last sabbath that he had committed many sins that sabbath day. 1 John iii. 8: He that committeth sin is of the devil; 9, v. 18.

15.] *Ye make him.*—With your false men creed traditions, that mock God's Scriptures and his love, goodness, and justice and mercy, with endless hell fire tortures, taught by popish inquisitions, and your other Babel creeds of resurrecting rotten bodies, etc. 1 Cor. xv. 36, 37: Thou sowest not that body that shall be. 44: It is raised a spiritual body.

16.] *Gold.*—They make superior to God's law. Rev. xxii. 17: Let him that heareth say come, viz., all spirit born that believe God's truths in the gospel, proclaimed in their ears. Whosoever will, let him take the water of life (spiritual love) freely, without gold, or other money value whatever.

20.] *Whoso.*—All your distinctions are frivolous and false, for the altar and the gift have an inseparable relation one to the other; the altar being only appointed for gifts, and the gifts being not holy without the altar.

21.] *Shall swear by.*—The temple itself hath no divinity by which one ought to swear. Wherefore all such oaths are blasphemous and vicious. If swearing by the temple man hath relation to God, who is present in spirit life light in it, and to whom it is consecrated, they cannot be held as vain.

23.] *Pay tithe.*—You pay tithe (tribute or church and state tax for preachers) of the smallest herbs, which is not commanded by God's law. And you affect great devotion (Luke xviii. 12).

24.] *Strain at a gnat.*—A proverbial speech, as to say, You are

very scrupulous in small and indifferent things, and very licentious in principal and all important and necessary ones; as at this day they strain out the gnats, and swallow water devils and hell fire myths. While on earth, and at blood life death, they are unclean spirits seeking rest and find none. Isa. lvii. 20, 21: The wicked are like the troubled sea, when it cannot rest, whose waters cast up mire and dirt. There is no peace, saith my God, to the wicked. Matt. xii. 43: When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man (Satan's tare seed, xiii. 39, 40), he walketh through dry places seeking rest, and findeth none. What encouragement hath the sinner in God's plain truthful Scripture way of imperative justice law; I find none. And the great mass of human beings now on earth, and all the millions innumerable that have lived and heard preached an endless torture life existence in an endless hell fire and brimstone. Such teachings still are preached, without any being benefited thereby beyond the grave. And the most cruel bloodthirsty devils hell torture wars have been and are still perpetrated on earth by pretended believers of, and preachers of endless hell fire torture life to all the incorrigible wicked; who God's Scripture truths inform us shall be consumed, destroyed, annihilated, as to life.

All the works of God speak of their author in silent but emphatic language, and declare the glory of his perfections to all the inhabitants of the earth.

But although "there is no speech nor language" where the voice of Deity is not heard, how gross are the conceptions generally entertained of the character of him in whom we live, and move, and have our being (Acts xvii. 28); seeing he giveth to all life and breath, and all things, and by whose superintending providence all events are directed! Among the greater number of pagan nations, the most absurd and groveling notions are entertained respecting the supreme intelligence, and the nature of that worship which his perfections demand. They have formed the most foolish and degrading representations of this August Being (Rom. i. 23). And changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like unto corruptible (rotten bodies) man, and to birds, and four footed beasts, and creeping things. 25: Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshiped and served the creature more than the Creator (worshiping their bodies, that after they are rotted back to earth elements, they desire God to resurrect, forgetting Rom. viii. 8: So they that are in the flesh cannot please God), who is blessed forever, amen. Temples in vast num-

bers have been erected and filled with idols, the most hideous and obscene; bulls and crocodiles, dogs and serpents, goats and lions, have been exhibited to adumbrate the character of the Ruler of the universe. The most cruel and unhallowed rites have been performed to procure his favor, and human victims sacrificed to appease his indignation. But eternal life in torture roastings in a hell fire, and a rotten body resurrection of rottenness god still extant, in men traditions from pagan Roman popish Babel creeds, that each are disposed to build like the tower of Babel, to escape above the earth's element fire flood, that at the close of time will wipe out and cleanse the lighted space now occupied by the filthy and thoughtless free thinkers of evil, and nature worshippers.

All such groveling conceptions and vile abominations have their origin in the darkness which overspreads the human understanding, and the depraved passions which ignorance has a tendency to produce. The Chinese, to frighten away the British cannon, beat loudly on their Chinese gongs. Thus immortal life beyond the grave in eternal torture agonies is the pagan and Roman inquisition gongs that are still in being, with vulture resurrections of putrid corruption dead bodies. But the Spirit of the Lord's Scripture thoughts of truths plainly stated I humbly trust will sweep away all the Babel creeds of falsehood, and mockeries of the supreme sovereign of the universe, and source of all immortal life, that he alone imparts on earth by way of his spirit word truth immortal.

Even in those countries where revelation sheds its influence, and the knowledge of the true God is promulgated, how mean and contracted are the conceptions which the great bulk of the population entertain of the attributes of that incomprehensible Being whose life light ray presence pervades immensity of lighted space; who rules as supreme sovereign over innumerable suns and systems of worlds, that sweep around his lowest heaven throne in millions of years. And his towering eternal spirit life immortal children's spirit life eternal homes, that he hath formed in his heavenly wisdom through millions of millions of boundless ages of eternity past, that no mortal mind hath in its utmost stretch of thoughts soared to even catch one ray of God's eternal beatific immortal spirit life eternal glory. 1 Cor. ii. 9: Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. The views which many have acquired of the perfections of the Deity, do not arise much higher than those which we ought to entertain of the powers of an arch-

angel, or of the seraphim. Even the more intelligent classes of the community fall far short of the ideas they ought to form of the God of heaven, owing to the limited views they have been accustomed to take of the displays of his wisdom and benevolence, and the boundless range of his operations; we can acquire a knowledge of the Deity only by the visible effects he has produced on all truly spirit born holy new creatures, which is only known truthfully by each individual recipient of the Spirit of Christ, God's commissioned spirit word creation power Son. For the divine essence of the source of all life, and the begetters by his word spirit impartations of all immortal life holy and pure, must remain forever inscrutable to finite minds. These manifestations are made in the revelations contained in the Bible, and in the scene of the material universe around us.

The moral perfections of God, such as love, goodness, and mercy, and justice, and faithfulness, and power, are more particularly delineated in his word; but his book of nature, though silent, in truth proclaims his Scriptures truth, and all as footprints and guideboards point to their creator God, and proclaim his immensity, omnipotence, wisdom, and goodness; and to this source of information the inspired writers uniformly direct our attention. Lift up your eyes on high and behold! Who hath created these orbs? Who bringeth forth their hosts in countless numbers, in their boundless lighted space? The everlasting living God, and Sovereign supreme of the universe, by the greatness of his omnipotent infinite almighty power.

Isa. xl. 15, 17: All nations before him are as nothing; and they are counted (in value, considering the cost of the redemption grace mercy love provision, conditional with obedience thereto) to him less than nothing, and vanity; with all their boasted collegiate worldly wisdom that knows not God. In order to acquire a just and comprehensive conception of the perfections of Deity, we must contemplate his character as displayed both in the system of revelation and in the system of nature, both understood agree they are in unison truth; otherwise we can acquire only a partial and distorted view of the attributes of Jehovah. The Scriptures alone, without the medium of his works, cannot convey to us the most sublime conceptions of the magnificence of his empire, and his eternal power and Godhead; and the works of nature, without the Scriptures, leave us in profound darkness with regard to the most interesting parts of his character,—the plan of his moral gov-

ernment, and the ultimate destination of mortals; and as the worldly-wise philosophers of Greece and Rome, we should still, like them and infidels, be groping to find the unknown God (Acts xvii. 23, 28). And since the sacred writers direct our views to the operations of the Almighty in the visible universe, in what manner are we to contemplate these operations? Are we, like the unspirit born savage, to gaze on the heavenly revolving suns, and systems of revolving worlds, in their mysterious rapid flight of silent obedience to fixed laws, that govern to a hair's breadth their ponderous vast bodies, in their lightning flight through the ages of their appointed time; or with the penetrating eye of a Christian spirit born holy philosopher?

The Scriptures declare, that as the works of Jehovah are great, they must be sought out, or thoroughly investigated, by all those who love the Lord, and all his works, and words, and way of holiness. Those ancient popes and their church and state officials who with inquisition fires would exterminate as heretics all opposers to their demoniac mocking creeds of endless torture to all who opposed their devil creed of rotten body resurrection, and immortal life in hell fire torture, or eternal heaven of resurrected dead bodies; they also taught the ignorant as grasshoppers, Isa. xl. 22: It is God that sitteth upon the circle of the earth (the milky way), and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; such were the priesthood of inquisition dark ages; they taught that the earth was a fixed mass of land and water in the midst of creation, and one of the largest bodies in nature, and consequently, that the sun, moon, and stars, and the whole material universe revolved around it, every twenty-four hours. Such a conception gave great power to the Deity, like their endless life torture of the wicked. But it would give us a most strange and distorted idea of his intelligence. While it tended to magnify his omnipotence, it would in effect deprive him of the attribute of wisdom. Thus to resurrect to immortal life the dead rotten and dust remains of sin lust begotten grass bodies of mortals (Isa. xl. 7: Surely the people is grass), and put them in endless hell fire tortures, for no imaginable rational purpose, after they were once dead, reason would say let them ever remain dead, and they can harm no one. Such a conception would represent the Almighty as having in either case devised a system of means altogether superfluous and preposterous, in order to accomplish the end intended, for it is the characteristic of wisdom to proportionate the means to the nature of the design which is to be accomplished.

According to the conception to which we are now adverting, the incorrigibly wicked dead must be made immortal (when before, in probation state, they were mortal, blood life sin lust, manufacture), and that it would take God eternally to destroy them; and for what object they were thus to be made immortal in torture life; their myth deranged evil inquisition (creeds) never yet revealed one reasonable cause for such a proceeding: when God's law (Ezek. xviii. 4, 20) plainly states the soul that sinneth it shall die; and their bodies all die and rot as an apple or potato; and all alike it would be as rational to believe would be resurrected. It is the same reasoning that made the whole material creation daily revolve around this comparatively little globe of earth, an idea like the rotten body resurrections, altogether extravagant and absurd; and inconsistent with every notion we ought reverentially to entertain of infinite wisdom. All such mockeries of the infinitely good, merciful, and source of all true wisdom, God, conveyed by myth god creeds of men, give a distorted idea of the only immortal life God.

25.] *Make clean.*—You desire to appear glorious before men.

Within.—God, who is a spirit, is not satisfied with men's outward service, but, hating all hypocrisy, desires right affections and pure conscience, and spirit birth holy new creatures. *Extortion.*—He points out the two chief vices belonging to worldly goods, namely, the getting and using of them.

26.] *Cleanse.*—Cause the use of the goods to be clean from sin, and sanctify it by prayer, thanksgiving, and faith (1 Tim. iv. 5). Titus i. 15: And then thou shalt not need to fear that the uncleanness of the vessel should defile thy conscience.

27.] *Beautiful outward.*—Such strain and misinterpret parables, to plainly flatly contradict plain statute laws imperative and infallible of God: Gen. iii. 19; Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27). *Whited sepulchres.*—Promise all mortals that they are immortals, that they mortals beget. 1 Tim. vi. 16: God who only hath immortality (they contradict), and it sounds beautiful to the pride selfish desires of mortals, to be told that their flesh, bones and blood life are of such vast importance to the glory of the sovereign of the universe, that he will be a God of dead rotten bodies, and bring them to a resurrection life immortal; but the compliment stops at the grave; but after or before we hear from the same eulogist of poor mortals' value, that about nine-tenths of them are to be immortal in endless hell fire tortures, after they have been resurrected to the honor of immortal life, while previous to blood life death

they were only mortals. *But are.*—Our Redeemer here beautifully portrays the preachers of the resurrection of rotten dead bodies, instead of Spirit of Christ new creature resurrection from a blood life dead body at its death (1 Cor. xv. 44; 2 Cor. v. 17; Rom. viii. 9). *Within.*—In their heart and mind soul thoughts full of dead men's bones, and of all their rotten flesh uncleanness that they would mock Christ as the resurrection and life of.

28.] *Outwardly appear.*—Christ sets out here the scribes and Pharisees in their proper colors, to show the people they ought not to imitate them, because they serve not God as was befitting, but only in pretence; gesture, countenance, and outward appearance, which profiteth nothing.

29.] *Ye build.*—He condemns them, in that they build monuments in memory of the prophets, yet they have their doctrine in no esteem; such now love politicians of their faith, far more than church members of opposite political affinities.

31.] *Of them.*—As your tradition creeds of men officials formerly did to the prophets of God, ye will do.

32.] *Fill ye up.*—You confess yourselves to be descendants of those that slew the servants of God; and having hitherto imitated them, there remains nothing but that you should accumulate your rage upon me, and upon my servants, to cause the full deluge of God's judgments to fall upon you; seeing that, according to the order of his justice, the wicked children of the wicked parents do oftentimes bear the punishment of both, as heaped up all together (Gen. xvi. 15; Ps. lxxix. 28).

33.] *Generation of vipers.*—The devil occupied the viper that seduced Eve, and of that viper sin lust begotten race are all rebel sinners. You will see lust vipers in church and parlor, and cottage and log cabin, alike protrude their snaky tongues of lust poison viper fire between their lust lips. Poor mortals in natures unspirit of Christ begotten are soon forever dead. They are serpent viper evil nature liars, nicknamers even of Jesus, and blasphemers.

34.] *Wherefore, behold.*—Because I know that you are wicked and cruel, as your fathers were, I do foretell you that you will persecute my servants to the uttermost, whereupon shall follow your utter ruin as a nation, favored heretofore above all others of God. *Prophets.*—By these names are meant all the ministers of the gospel, spirit born holy commissioned when they receive the Spirit of Christ (Rom. viii. 9). Some were then inspired imme-

diately of God, as apostles, evangelists, and prophets, pastors, meant by the name of wise men and teachers, set down by the name of scribes (Eph. iv. 11). This was spoken to remind them of ingratitude.

35.] *Upon you.*—He comprehends their whole generation in one body, similar to other condemnation spoken of when all nations alive on earth at the close of time only are referred to on the last day of earth's probation time; they are the ones that gnash, and they are all that are or ever will thereafter be again in their flesh blood life bodies, and they constitute all flesh, for there is no other but that then at the last judgment-day are alive on earth, and poureth forth into the bosom of the children the iniquities of their fathers, whom they resembled in wicked maliciousness. *All the.*—The punishment for all my servants' innocent blood. *Abel.*—He mentions the first and last martyr, comprehending in them two all the other that intervened. *Zacharias.*—It is the same man that is called the son of Jehoiada (2 Chron. xxiv. 20, 21). And we must imagine that the father had two names, according to the Jewish custom. Christ makes mention of him because he is the last of them that are mentioned in the books of the Old Testament. *Whom ye.*—Your fathers, whose wicked ways and false Babel creeds ye imitate and hold to. All of which culminated in the crucifixion of Jesus, the only spirit begotten of woman's seed, for the express purpose of destroying the devil, evil, and death (Heb. ii. 14).

36.] *All these things.*—The accumulated murders, punishment which had been formerly committed centred in the murder of the holy Jesus of Nazareth. All these things shall come upon this generation. How different the Lord's truth is from Babel creeds eternal torture.

37.] *How often.*—Seeing that God's will cannot be an imperfect will of desire only, which is a token of infirmity (Ps. cxv. 3), and that his decree is immutable, and will suffer no opposition (Isa. xlvi. 10; Rom. ix. 19), we must of necessity understand all this to be meant of the dispensation of outward means by the word, exhortations, commandments, etc., which are the rules and the object of men's obedience, and the argument of condemnation of their rebellion (Deut. xxix. 29; Luke ii. 34, 35.)

38.] *Your house.*—God will shortly forsake your city and your temple, withdrawing his protection and presence from thence, whereby all things therein will fall into utter ruin.

39.] *I say unto you.*—That is, my corporeal presence shall shortly leave you, and soon after that I will take away from you the spiritual presence of my grace and virtue, until the fullness of the Gentiles be come in (Rom. xi. 25; 2 Cor. iii. 16). When it shall turn to the Lord, the veil shall be taken away (Ps. cxviii. 26). Paul's belief of flesh bodies resurrection was his Pharisee belief before conversion, and, like Luther and Calvin, the reformers, he still had as second nature belief habits, like them many tradition errors. John Wesley had been an Episcopal preacher for years, with no saving faith until enlightened by a Moravian missionary from Bethlehem, Pa., Hussites.

CHAPTER XXIV.

1.] *To show him.*—It seems that this discourse was occasioned by the Lord's remarks previous (Matt. xxiii. 38), concerning the desolation of the temple, whose greatness, and soundness of the building, seemed to make his prediction to be very incredible.

2.] *Not be left.*—Christ foretelleth the destruction of Jerusalem, and the condition of the people under Vespasian the Roman emperor:

3.] *Of thy coming.*—Whereof he had spoken. They perhaps thought he was to be a temporal king, and that the destruction of the temple would not occur until the end of the world.

4.] *Take heed.*—He answered them not as they anticipated; he told them what was necessary for them.

5.] *In my name.*—Usurping, as do popes, authority wholly belonging to Christ. And he forearmed his disciples, and the whole truly holy Christian spirit born church of the Messiah, against the deceits of false Christs and antichrist, telling them of the false coming of Christ, and tells them concerning his last coming in glory. *Deceive many.*—The vast multitude of Babel men tradition creeds of impostors and seducers should not pervert us from the right way of the gospel, the only holy spirit born narrow truth way to heaven.

7.] *Shall rise.*—Many and great wars followed afterwards, among the Gentiles, for their despising and disregarding God's proffered mercy.

9.] *Ye shall be hated.*—As if ye were the causes of these disturbances.

10.] *Hate one another.*—Sectarian Babel creeds, Roman Catholic inquisition fires, consumed in tortures for centuries all who opposed their vicegerency and false God-mocking blasphemous creeds of the pope, man of sin, with his Latin litany (Rev. xiii. 18).

11.] *False prophets.*—Every preacher on earth that teaches anything contradicting God's statute laws, as clearly stated in the Scriptures, is a false prophet. When the Bible is acknowledged to be the infallible foundation, why will mortals teach contrary to it?

12.] *Iniquity.*—Many seeing the malice against Scripture teachers, and ingratitude of men, will withdraw themselves from doing good, when believing the Bible to be true. Men creed worshippers call them heretics.

13.] *Endure.*—He would warn those that were his against these temptations to evil. Ezek. xviii. 4, 18, 24: When the righteous turneth away from his righteousness, and committeth iniquity, and dieth (blood life body death without repentance) in them, for his iniquity that he hath done shall he die. 27: (If he repent and doeth right before blood life dies) he shall save his soul alive.

14.] *Of the kingdom.*—Matt. iv. 23, and ix. 35: The meaning is, You ask me concerning the end of the world, and of the temple together, as if the one could not happen without the other. But I tell you that the ruin of the temple shall happen first; and after that my gospel shall be preached in all the nations of the world, and by means of it I will enter into possession of my spiritual kingdom, gathering together mine elect, all spirit born of God that have kept the truth gospel faith to blood life's end; I will consume all mine enemies, and then the end of the world shall come, or occur at the same time, for all shall consume together (Mal. iv. 1). *In all.*—Generally to all nations without any difference, even to the Jews (Rom. x. 18; Col. i. 6, 23). *For a witness.*—For instruction and persuasion of the repentant, and for the conviction and condemnation of the wicked. *And then.*—After my gospel hath been proclaimed to all nations, and my spirit born children are all removed from their blood life probation bodies by my angels to my great white throne in the lower second heaven, safe from earth's atmosphere (Rev. xx. 11). *The end.*—The end of the world will not occur before God has exercised his church with many

trials of their patience and faith; he that endureth to the end shall be saved (2 Pet. iii. 10).

15.] *When ye.*—He gives an answer to the apostle's question concerning the time of the desolation of the temple. By this abomination it seems is meant the military Roman ensigns, or eagles, they being a profane nation, and held their said eagles for gods, and worshiped them as they who are Catholics still do their man of sin pope; and did swear by them; and wheresoever they came they brought desolation along with them, especially to the Jews. *Stand.*—This may be understood either of the Roman eagles which were placed by the Roman governors upon the porch of the temple for a token of dominion, which caused the Jews to rise, upon which the last war resulted that destroyed them as a nation; or of the same eagles set upon the temple for trophies after the total conquest of the nation.

16.] *Then let them.*—After the city is taken, and the temple profaned, then shall the desolation of the whole nation come, therefore let him that can save himself, and shows that destruction shall fall upon them so suddenly that they shall not have time to provide for themselves.

17.] *To take.*—To try to carry away his goods of household stuff, but to fly, and study only how to preserve only his own person. He uses divers reasons, all tending to the same ends.

20.] *On the sabbath day.*—Because that the travel which was permitted on that day was limited to a short distance, Acts i. 12. And the day being kept holy, it would be difficult to provide for a flight.

22.] *Those days.*—The time of the Roman invasion for conquest, which, if not restrained by the Lord, the utter destruction of the Jews would have taken place, and Abraham's nature seed of blood life would have become extinct; but like sparing Noah in the deluge, some would be spared.

23.] *Is Christ.*—Many such imposters rose against the Jews after Christ's ascension, as the pope of Rome.

24.] *If it were possible.*—Rom. viii. 9; 2 Thess. ii. 13; Rev. ix. 4: All truly spirit born holy have the spirit life blood love pulsating the new spirit creature in Christ Jesus (2 Cor. v. 17). Such are not so easily deceived by false creeds of men and false popes, as soon as they see a lack of love, purity, and holiness, and it is not possible for such false usurpers to drive Christ's protection away from them while they remain faithful in love and obedience to Christ, even by inquisition body death.

27.] *As the lightning.*—Refuse ye all those that would give you false impressions of the Messiah his coming, for I will come no more in human form to converse openly with the people of earth; and as for my coming to judgment, it shall be with so much glory and universal splendor, that my spirit born holy children need not look for it in secret places, by the direction of mortals who assume to be wise above what is revealed.

28.] *For wheresoever.*—This is not a reason for things spoken in the preceding verse, but a confirmation of the exhortation which he had made to them; to avoid the deceit the unspirit born unholy who shall again look for Christ to come in human form as ruler of earth in church and state, whereas true spirit born new creature holy believers, free from sin by the drawings of Christ spirit within them to the fountain of spirit love life immortal food, ought to, and do, look for Christ by faith prayers in secret in heaven, whither he is gone to feed his spirit begotten of soul spirit mind eggs, intellectual spirit life immortal expanding wisdom delights pure and holy. As eagles, and such like birds, do by a natural instinct, or faculty of smelling, fly a great distance to find food.

29.] *Immediately.*—After the fulfillment of probation life scenes, wars, and troubles, sorrows, and daily death devastations, and sin's pestilence scourges, and with God immediately, to whom a thousand years are but as one day (Ps. xc. 4; 2 Pet. iii. 8, 9). Or under the afflictions of the Jews aforesaid we must also comprehend all the afflictions of Christ's spirit born children on earth, from the tare seed children of Satan, who are as pestilence scourges to the blood life flesh bodies to the pure of heart, with their impure thoughts and words of false teachings, and will be until Christ's last coming. *The sun.*—The prophets often thus by a figure describe the horror of God's judgments (Isa. xiii. 10; Ezek. xxxii. 7; Joel ii. 31; iii. 15). But here it seems all ought to be understood literally in its proper signification (Rev. vi. 12). *The powers.*—The whole frame of heaven, most strong and immutable in its being and motion, the mighty bodies thereof most mighty in their substance and lastingness, and in the swiftness of their motion.

30.] *The sign.*—There is no particular sign specified here. It may be the glory of divine light, which shall be made visible to mortal eyes, or the sound of the trumpet and voice of the angels (1 Cor. xv. 25; 1 Thess. iv. 16), or the appearance of some

preceding sign of him who is coming in his glorified spirit word creation sonship, then crowned the only spirit judge, to close up time's creation, and open in eternal spirit life immortal glory. *Tribes of the earth.*—All unspirit born of God, which are enemies and rebels to Christ's holy law of spirit birth life immortal love pulsations. *Mourn.*—Sorrow for God's present judgment of war of elements, and for despair (Rev. i. 7; vi. 15, 16); and this is a different kind of mourning from that of Zech. xii. 10.

31.] *His elect.*—Spirit born holy will be taken by the angels of God from their blood life bodies, in a moment, and clothed with spirit bodies, and borne to meet their Lord and all the spirit born holy who had been previously resurrected when their blood life probation had closed, from creation until that closing last momentous day of judgment. 1 Cor. xv. 49, 50, 52: God is a spirit. His children bear his image. Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God. Neither doth corruption (rotten bodies) inherit incorruption. We spirit born holy shall not all close blood life's probation until the last day of time dawns; then in a moment all shall be changed, who then live in blood life bodies, that are spirit born holy, to spirit immortal life glorified bodies that require no nature food. 1 Cor. xii. 27: Now ye (saints) are the body of Christ (spirit begotten of Christ in God). Phil. iii. 31: Who shall change our vile (sin lust begotten blood life body, Ps. li. 5) body. That it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body.

33.] *That it.*—Christ coming to judgment is near, and the close of time.

34.] *This generation.*—The generation living on the earth, when signs and wonders here spoken of shall be developed in whole. 33: When ye shall see all these things here spoken of. False prophets shall arise, religion shall be confused after the Lord left the earth, and his apostles; Babel confusion of tongues, spiritual in pretence, each false preacher, prophet, under various headed creeds; and mingled with state, God and mammon, popes and self titled officials; who as to day swear allegiance to their pope, and his Babel, Latin, Greek, English, or other litany, and their several popes; and all the various Babel creeds on earth, each worshiping men tradition creeds, instead of God. All different unclean spirit Babel creed worshipers of false doctrines contradicting God's Bible truths are like the worshipers of the goddess Diana. Great is our church. The church, etc., when God's

spirit light reveals his Scriptures as the only heaven way creed, all Babel creeds will end.

35.] *Heaven and earth.*—The atmosphere air surrounding earth, in which the birds fly, and clouds, was then called the lower heaven air. 2 Pet. iii. 10: But the day of the Lord will come as the thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away (that would seem to be all belonging to our sun's sphere, including all from the sun to Uranus, or still vaster sweeping away; God only knows, and enough for mortals to know is that which follows) with a great noise (now all move without noise in their swift flight). And the elements (earth's atmosphere) shall melt with fervent heat; and the earth also, and the works that are therein shall be burnt up. Rev. xx. 11: And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it (Christ the spirit judge of all the earth) from whose face (beatific glory justice flame of Jehovah God) the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was no place (in lighted space) found for them. Their refuse, with all unclean spirit life, will be cast into outer death's eternal sleep, inane darkness, the bottomless chaos pit.

36.] *My Father.*—Mark xiii. 32: The spirit begotten Son excludes himself, as son of man, from this knowledge; but not his spirit word spirit life in God. John xvii. 11; x. 30: I and my Father are one. In spirit love, goodness, holiness, mercy, and in all spiritual wisdom, and other infinite holy attributes, we are agreed in unison as one. Not that Christ wanteth in his spirit word sonship any divine perfections, either of knowledge, or any other, John v. 20; i. 1, 2: The same in the beginning was with God. John i. 12, 13: Which were born of God, not of sin lust mortal seed. His office of doctor of the church (D.C., not D.D.) would not bear the declaring of it.

37.] *The coming.*—That is, their thoughts who are unspirit born unholy shall be evil continually (Gen. vi. 5); evil judging the righteous; evil imaginations, lies, blasphemies, nicknamers, thefts, and Babel creeds, wars and strife, when least expected.

38.] *Drinking.*—Similar to the mortals on earth to-day. No doubt they had the same devil to aid their evil imaginations and evil faculties to invent modes of turning God's blessings for food to preserve blood life reason and love and gratitude to him for them, into a curse of poison to soul mind intellect, and filling it with blasphemy and evil lust, and other vile and murderous imaginations wholly evil, and also to wholly dethrone reason, and

destroy both soul and body life and happiness, gratifying evil sinful nature brute lusts and appetites.

39.] *Knew not.*—Being blinded with unbelief of God's truths proclaimed by his servant.

40.] *Then shall.*—There shall be this difference between these and Noah's days, as to those saved and those that perish body and soul. Those saved shall not be by families, as in the cases of Noah and Lot; but wholly by individuals. All that are saved are saved by their own faith belief of God's truths, and spirit birth new creature spirit life immortal in Christ their spiritual ark of safety, that the fire flood that envelops earth at the close of time cannot harm; or shall perish in their own filthy unclean spirit evil imaginations, void of faith belief in gospel truth, and outside of the ark of safety (Heb. ii. 4; Matt. xxv. 9).

Be taken.—All in blood life bodies on the earth at the last judgment day who have by way of spirit birth the new creature life (2 Cor. v. 17). The angels commissioned by the Lord, as were those who removed Lot in body and soul life out of Sodom, to remain still upon the earth, but different from Lot, they will be changed from mortal blood life body habitations in a moment, into spirit bodies immortal, wherein their new spirit born creature spirit life immortal shall pulsate spirit love's immortal spirit love life, and shall escort them in glorious triumph to meet their Saviour, and all the saints whom he had previously resurrected in spirit bodies immortal at their individual blood life death; all of whom he had brought with him as jurors, to award the last judgment on the living wicked on earth in blood life flesh nature sin lust begotten bodies, and all tare seed, unclean spirit beings, children of the devil or evil, or of the viper serpent of Eden stock, and fallen angels who kept not their first estate, and the devil—death the last enemy.

41.] *Be grinding.*—According to the custom of these days, two grinding their food with hand mills; and also clearly showing that then as now, and at the close of time, the Lord's coming means not only his spirit body's personal coming to judge the inhabitants then alive in blood life bodies on earth, but that every blood life death was as the coming of the Lord by his representative angels, whom he commissions to escort all spirit born children begotten spiritually of the soul's spirit egg mind, by the spirit word seed of God in Christ Jesus his spirit word creation power, and only spirit begotten of woman's seed son; whom he commissioned and

empowered thus to beget new spirit born creatures by way of his spirit love faith belief truth immortal spirit life word seed.

42.] *Watch.*—Be in a perpetual actual exercise of faith, which is ever trusting in and relying upon God in Christ for salvation and spiritual food, and fittingly to be prepared always to receive your Saviour, who came then, as now, in power to save all his spirit born new creature children at blood life death. And as death of blood life may occur any moment of nature life, be always ready with your spiritual immortal life trunk packed with love, goodness, mercy, holiness, truths of the gospel promises, faith, and all Christian immortal life graces, gratitude to God, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, for the eternal life journey.

43.] *The good man.*—By this similitude he shows clearly that all sanctified holy spirit born of, and begotten of, God's immortal love spirit life immortal, by way of Christ Jesus, his spirit word, and spirit begotten of woman's seed mediator Saviour Son, who is (not has been, or will be) the resurrection and spirit life of all new spirit love begotten creatures, who abide in his light life spirit rays of immortal eternal sunshine from God's spirit life glory sunlight that ever beams through Christ's glory rays, and imparts life to the soul's spirit egg mind of all who open their soul's will door to admit the immortal love light life. Such spirit born new creatures in Christ their spirit vine are subject to his call and elevation or resurrection from the blood life flesh body at any moment; then the blood life body dies, and is soon rotted back to nature elements. Therefore mortals should be ready with love's pure virtuous wedding garment of righteousness always.

44.] *Ready.*—It is only those who are ready with their wedding garment and intellect spirit begotten of God lamps of love, gratitude, adoration, thanksgiving, and praise to God, soul lamps filled with spirit love odors, and lighted with Christ's spirit life rays from his Father's ineffable beatific eternal life light rays which no mortal can approach unto.

45.] *Hath made.*—These words are directed to the pastors of the church and teachers of God's word and ministry of his grace (Matt. xvi. 19). Whereof the two principal virtues are also pointed at; viz., adhesion to the Lord and his way of gospel truths, and wholly discarding all men tradition Babel creeds; faithfulness in love and holiness to the Lord, the substance of the ministry and prudence in the manner of exercising it to edifying salvation.

46.] *That servant.*—All faithful children of God and ministers

are not loved and esteemed by the world which they reprove. Yet their peace and joy always is they are loved in their heaven spirit homes.

47.] *Shall make him.*—By the figure of the custom of merchants doing a large trade, who select faithful servants trustworthy. 1 Pet. v. 5: And when the chief shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away, as doth all earthly evanescent fleeting bubble glory.

48.] *If that evil.*—The Lord seems to point at some particular person that should usurp a tyranny over the church, and change the spirit birth spiritual service into a church and state temporal dominion, and carnal delights at vain pontifical triplicate pride, and evil nations worldly crown, as the Babel church popes of Rome, popes of Greece, or now Emperor of Russia, who is the head of the Greek Babel church and state; and pope of the Turkish Mahomet Babel church and state; and the pope Henry VIII. and the king and queen popes of the church and state of England (Rev. xviii. 7).

49.] *Smite.*—Thus each of those popish church and state have done and still continue to do, but in a restricted way. All those church and state officials are drunk with self-Babel delusion.

50.] *For him.*—All their vain church and state official pride, in the sudden blood and soul life disease pangs and death that quickly comes to all mortals. Unexpected it comes upon them.

51.] *Out him asunder.*—From all spiritual communion in prayers to God, through Christ the closed door to all mammon state Babel false creeds of vile aspiring domineering pope devils in human form and from God's favor (Deut. xxix. 21). *With the hypocrites.*—Who have previous to their backsliding been associated in church membership with Christians, or have been hidden under the cloak of being Christ's minister, with the parchment of his associates, to the exclusive promulgation of false Babel creeds of men; each church and state or self-styled reformer official claims his the only true road to heaven, and all the other Babel creed roads branch into hell's broad way to eternal death, so say they all. Each is the church; and the only way to heaven they all falsely, with Babel creed slime of rotten body resurrection and endless hell tortures, say. Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27: The soul that sinneth it shall die, like the man hung, never to return to life.

CHAPTER XXV.

1.] *The kingdom.*—The state of the church, wherein God reigneth spiritually in the person of the Messias. To start in the heavenly way, and not persevere diligently, hath no bounty life immortal. *Ten virgins.*—A similitude taken from the fashion used at weddings; at which anciently the maidens which were the bride's kinswomen and acquaintances went forth from the bride's house with lamps to meet the bridegroom, while on his entrance to the bride's house to take her away to his own house, which was commonly done in the night time. Thus Christ's bride's spirit born new heavenly creatures, at blood life death, he takes them from their blood life flesh body house of dust, to his Father's many mansioned spirit house, clothed with a spirit glorified body like the angels of God, who all have eternal life lamps lighted by the Father of all immortal spirit life's eternal life light, beatific glory of God. The virgins are they that make profession of having received regenerating spirit birth from God. The wise virgins are the truly spirit born of Christ's spirit life immortal seed, holy, pure, and righteous, that pulsate in their soul's new spirit born creature immortal life spirit love, Christ's spirit oil that never diminishes, but eternally burns in spirit life, expanding the spirit intellectual mind. Rom. viii. 9: Those that have the Spirit of Christ, and are his. The foolish ones are they who have Babel creeds of men, lip service; but no love, nor spirit of Christ oil that lives and burns in intellectual spirit wisdom love light life, that ever expands *ad infinitum*.

8.] *Give us.*—Many when blood life's taper glow-worm light of dust flickers, and is about to expire, when the holy spirit born call upon them, they cry give us of your spirit love of Christ, when none but Christ, the mediator, whose Scripture narrow way they have discarded and held to the shorter cross cut from death's broad way to heaven; the Babel spirit tower, creeds of men; but there is no spirit birth new creature spirit of Christ saving oil in their souls, and it dies (Ezek. xviii. 4).

9.] *Not so.*—It is clearly impossible to be benefited by another's faith and spirit birth in the closing moments of blood life's proba-

tion (Heb. ii. 3, 4). *Go ye.*—Provide some yet, if you can, from him who alone can impregnate your soul spirit egg mind with God's spirit love life immortal, Christ Jesus the mediator Saviour; for no one receiveth spirit birth for another (John iii. 5), and it is not communicable to others. Not that this last minute of time will permit of any new acquisition of grace from God. *And buy.*—Without money or price, as the thief on the cross did, but that one case of all Adam's race of unnumbered millions is given, that none might despair of seeking for regenerating spirit life immortal; and none should presume to delay until the flickering last moments of blood life probation what should have been their business of life.

12.] *I know you not.*—Gen. iv. 1: And Adam knew Eve his wife. Thus the she soul spirit egg minds of those referred to, Christ had not known them by spirit life immortal spirit love belief, impregnations, quickening resurrection life eternal. I disclaim you as any of my spirit born of my seed (Matt. xiii. 38, 39; John iii. 5). Your probation blood life of volition has been spent in vain, and you would not seek of me life, in my Scripture narrow way to immortality by way of spirit birth; but you followed the Babel spirit tower way, that leaves all the mere men creed believers, all on the earth, which soon will be burned up, and their refuse with it shall be cast out of lighted space.

13.] *Watch.*—Do not be led away from the way of holiness, which alone leads to heaven.

14.] *Traveling into.*—This voyage is a figure of Christ's ascent and abode in heaven (Matt. xxi. 33). The vast millions of millions of miles' travel of Christ to his heavenly Father's throne of beatific holiness glory did not probably occupy the Messiah any great length of time to go to his Father's right hand spirit love mediatorial throne. For he no doubt gave the woman's seed flesh and bones of human form clothing, to earth's elements, when he had passed beyond his disciples' mortal vision. For our Lord had often previously clothed in human form a communicable attribute of his spirit love, to communicate with mortals, to make known to them his spirit life narrow way of spirit birth holiness, new creature spirit life immortal. Job x. 11: Thou hast clothed me with skin and flesh, and hast fenced me with bones and sinews (Isa. lxi. 10). Josh. i. 1: The Lord spake unto Joshua, in a human body form, or clothing, or medium, used only by him. Num. xvi. 20: And the Lord spake unto Moses and Aaron. Exod. xl. 1:

And the Lord spake unto Moses saying (Exod. xx. 1-26). Gen. xxxii. 30 : Jacob saw the Lord face to face in human form, and (24) a man in appearance, to Jacob, who changed Jacob's name to Israel. 1 : The angels met him. Gen. xviii. 1 : Three men. 13. And the Lord spake unto Abraham. Jud. vi. 16 : And the Lord spake unto Gideon often, and to various ones the Lord used the human form medium clothing of a portion of his spirit.

15.] *Talents*.—Each talent was commonly worth six hundred crowns. *According to*.—Proportionably according to his calling, which is always accompanied with some special gift for to manage it.

16.] *Traded with*.—Those men traffic in the church, who employ those gifts that they have received from God to the profit and advantage of the whole church of the spirit children of God.

18.] *Hid his lord's*.—By this is meant such as employ not those gifts they have received from God, to that use and end for which they received them.

19.] *Cometh*.—At blood life death, which may occur at any moment when their probation ends.

21.] *Into the joy*.—Into everlasting happiness, at blood life death, if spirit born holy pulsating love.

24.] *That thou art*.—The Babel creeds of men, upon which sectarian theologians often labor hard to lead their adherent church members to believe God a hard master, if he does not save them in their sins. Other Babel men creeds preachers of traditions of men creeds, that mock God's narrow spirit born love way of gospel truths, and hew out pagan myth god cisterns, with no bottom of truth, that mock God with making him a vulture mythology god, to resurrect to life vile sin lust begotten bodies. Ps. li. 5 : Behold, I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me. Phil. iii. 21 : Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto Christ's glorious body. Gen. i. 31 : And God saw everything that he had made, and behold it was very good. Thus Adam's body from earth dust was good. Why not, O Babel creed mortal, use reason, and not mock God who can make good (not vile sin lust bodies rottenness refuse) bodies if any such are needed, of which need I find no Scripture to sustain. Rom. viii. 8 : So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God ; such think God a hard master ; others have a pagan myth god in their Babel traditions of men creeds, that are brought down from the popish Roman Catholic inquisition tortures of God's children as

heretics, and their myth God was, like themselves, a god of torture, that would resurrect the ashes and smoke of the good Christians they had burned, and torture them eternally; such vile mockers of the God of heaven, whose essence is love, goodness, mercy, and righteous holiness, purity justice, will also at their utter exclusion from heaven think God a hard master, because he is not a devil like them full of revenge and hatred to all who differ in views with them, calling them enemies. How different God's way as taught by gospel truths. Matt. v. 44: Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them that despitefully use you and persecute you. 45: That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven, for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27, 32: For I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth, saith the Lord God; wherefore turn yourselves and live ye.

25.] *Hid thy talent.*—The lover of his own supreme self, and gratifier of his lusts and appetites, and dance heel intellect cultivator, when called to look to the welfare of their souls, cries out, I have no time to bother my head to learn which is the Lord's way.

26.] *Thou knewest.*—He well knew that he had utterly neglected and rejected the strivings of God's spirit truth in early life, and was then a hardened rebel sinner.

27.] *Thou oughtest.*—Thou shouldst have devoted thy blood life which was daily fed on my miraculously expanded life germinations food, and used the light of my sun; I sustained the earth in its place in its vast evolutions, I spared thy probation blood life, and not one day have you spent in my service; but you have devoted all your blood life to sinful gratifications of your animal lusts and appetites, and your soul intellect mind egg wherein you might have received immortal spirit life seed you have admitted your worst enemy to occupy with evil.

28.] *Take.*—At blood life death, his life soul intellect spirit is like the sun's rays then taken from him, and he is left in endless chaotic death, without one gleam of life. Eccles. xii. 7: Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was; and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it; and on the redeemed spirit born holy those life rays will ever shine in full beatific life eternal glory rays. Acts xvii. 28: In God we live. Out of life rays of God none live.

29.] *Every one that hath.*—All who have by way of spirit birth

new creature life received Christ's spirit shall have immortal life's abundance. *Shall be taken away.*—God's gifts and graces shall certainly be taken away from such who employ them not to the good and profit of their neighbors. The life he hath, and soul, shall die (Ezek. xviii. 4, 27).

30.] *Outer darkness.*—Utter darkness, outside of lighted space and life in any form; inane death and darkness beneath all lighted space, like a similar death night chaos that pervaded ere creation. Gen. i. 2: The earth was without form, and void. And darkness was upon the face of the deep; and, as in ver. 29, from him that hath not spirit life immortal seed from Christ's spirit, shall be taken away all life that he hath. Ezek. xviii. 4: The soul that sinneth it shall die.

31.] *All the holy angels.*—Luke xx. 36: They (spirit born new creatures in Christ Jesus) are like the angels. 1 Thess. iii. 13: At the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints.

32.] *All nations.*—All the then nations of the earth, the same as all the nations of earth at the previous national judgment. Gen. vi. 3: And the Lord said, my spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh. 5: And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. 6: And it repented the Lord (the spirit word creation power Son of Jehovah God, who saw the wickedness as stated in ver. 5), that he had made man on the earth. (John i. 3: All things made were made by him.) 7: And the Lord said, I will destroy (annihilate as to life in any form) man. Gen. vii. 21: And all flesh died, every man. 22: All in whose nostrils was the breath of life died. 23: Every living substance was destroyed which was upon the face of the ground, both man and cattle, etc. Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark. Num. xxiii. 9: Shall not be reckoned among the nations. Isa. xl. 15: Behold, all the nations are as a drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance. 17: All nations before God are as nothing; and they are counted to him (in value considering the cost of redemption) less than nothing, and vanity. 6: All flesh is grass (grass products fed upon form the mortal body), and all the goodness thereof is as the flower of the field. 7: Surely the people is grass. 22: The inhabitants of earth are as grasshoppers. 24: The whirlwind shall take them away as stubble. Isa. v. 24: Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff,

so their root shall be rottenness, and their blossom soul unspirit born shall go up as dust, because they have cast away the law of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel (Dan. xii. 2; Gen. ii. 7; iii. 19; Mal. iv. 1; Eccles. xii. 7): Obad. 16: They shall be as if they had not been. Luke xxi. 25: Distress of nations upon the earth. Matt. xxiv. 37: But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. 38: They were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day Noah entered into the ark. The Lord plainly proclaims in the preceding chapter that the destruction by fire of the earth with its air element a surrounding sea of flame will sweep all nations of people then on the earth, as in the Noahic flood. All nations, does not say or mean all that had been nations previously, as Babel myth pagan Roman inquisition traditions of men false creeds towers of rotten body resurrection Babel slime, and endless hell torture teach. *One from another.*—Plainly stated in the twenty-fourth chapter previously. 40: Then (the time spoken of in the twenty-fifth chapter) shall two be in the field (one spirit born holy, the other not); one shall be taken (by the angels of the Lord, like Lot taken by the angels from Sodom, as the Scriptures plainly teach, changed in a moment from their blood life probation bodies of flesh, and resurrected by the Lord in a spirit body like his (1 Cor. xv. 44, 50, 52), and the other left in his nature blood life body, to be consumed with the earth in a moment dead soul and body, when the word, Depart from me, is spoken. Acts xvii. 28: For in God we live, and move, and have our being; Negative, out of God's life rays probation nothing can live, or move, or have a being; of Adam's sin lust race of nations or devils.

33.] *Sheep.*—By sheep are meant the elect spirit born holy; and by goats, reprobates in their nature state, unspirit born, unholy, impure in thoughts and deeds.

34.] *From the.*—Eph. i. 4: According as God the Father hath chosen us in his Son Christ Jesus, before the foundation of the world, that we (spirit born of Christ's spirit life immortal seed love) should be holy, and without blame before him in love. 2 Tim. i. 9: Who hath saved us, and called us (spirit born holy) with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began; but is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death (of all soul's spirit born of his spirit life immortal love pulsating seed new creatures in

Christ Jesus, 2 Cor. v. 17), and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel.

35.] *For I was.*—Good works are not the cause of salvation, but they are the fruits of salvation (Rom. iii. 20; 2 Tim. i. 9). Eph. ii. 9: Not of works, lest any man should boast. 10: For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them. And their works, who are spirit born holy, brought forth by Christ's spirit impregnations of the soul's spirit intellect egg mind; such are approved of and crowned through grace.

37.] *When saw we.*—This is spoken to show that the Lord worketh in this reward of grace beyond all human apprehension of the meek and unselfish imagination of the holy. And how much more than the value of any work, and without the merit of the person Matt. xxv. 11; Eph. iii. 20).

40.] *Unto me.*—For you have done it for my sake, and in regard to my cause (Matt. x. 40, 42), and that all spirit born of Christ's seed, immortal spirit life of God, children of God who are like their nature bodies, begotten of woman's nature seed eggs when in infancy utterly helpless and dependent on their mother or others, matured for everything pertaining to food, clothing, warmth, help to move, etc. Thus the spirit born new creature in Christ Jesus (2 Cor. v. 17) is in its infancy while in blood life body shell, as fully dependent and helpless. John xv. 5: Without me (Christ Jesus our heavenly spirit vine) ye can do nothing.

41.] *Depart from me.*—Acts xvii. 28: In God we live and move and have our being. That is the affirmative. Negative: out of God we cannot live, nor move, nor have a being. Thus, Depart from me, is the command to depart from life. Matt. x. 39: He that findeth his life (blood life and soul) shall lose it; he that loseth his life for my sake shall find spirit life immortal. *Into everlasting fire.*—It does not say they shall exist there one moment. Num. xvi. 21: That I may consume them in a moment. Deut. iv. 24: The Lord our God is a consuming fire. Heb. xii. 29: Our God is a consuming fire. Ps. xc. 2: From everlasting to everlasting thou art God. 1 John iv. 16: God is love; his mercy endureth forever. Isa. v. 24: Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff, so their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom (soul) shall go up as dust. Because they have cast away the law of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel. Mal. iv. 1: For behold the day cometh that shall burn as

an oven ; and all the proud (proud popes, archbishops, or any other proud titled official of church and state Babel creeds, are included), yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble, and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts (the best of authority infallible), that it shall leave them neither root nor branch. Matt. iii. 12: But will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire (nothing can quench God's justice flame sword). Gen. iii. 24: A flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way to the tree of life. 22: Lest Adam take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever. 19: Dust thou art (Adam), and unto dust shalt thou return. Ecces. xii. 7: Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was ; and the spirit (like sunlight at night death) shall return unto God who gave it. Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27: The soul that sinneth it shall die. Job xxi. 30: The wicked is reserved to the day of destruction. Ps. lxviii. 2: As smoke is driven away, so drive them away ; as wax melteth before the fire, so let the wicked perish at the presence of God. Ps. civ. 35: Let the wicked be no more. Ps. evi. 18: The flame burnt up the wicked. Ps. cxlv. 20: All the wicked he will destroy. Ps. xxxvii. 20: Into smoke shall the wicked consume away. Obad. i. 16: They shall be as though they had not been. 2 Pet. iii. 10: The elements shall melt with fervent heat ; and the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burnt up. Rev. xx. 11: And I saw a great white throne and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away ; and there was no place found for them. Rev. xxi. 6: I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. 7: He that overcometh shall inherit all things (heaven's stores are all common to all God's spirit born children, and in superabundance inexhaustible, like the water to the birds and beasts, as well as mortals all free). And I will be his God, and he shall be my son. 8: But the fearful, and the unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers and sorcerers, and idolators, and all liars (nicknamers are liars), shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone (illustrated by Sodom and Gomorrah), which is the second death, first blood life death, second death, soul death (Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27). The fire death was prepared for the devil and his angels ; all who join his army of darkness deeds shall perish with them, at the close of time's parenthesis probation, they are consumed in a moment. *For the devil.*—From this and other passages may be gathered, that there is a chief of the apostate and evil spirits (Matt. xii. 24).

44.] *When saw we.*—It is the property of hypocrites highly to boast of their works, but never to acknowledge their faults; they cover their evil deeds under their outer show of righteousness; they are the wolves with Babel creeds of men, and justify their evil deeds, as nicknaming others, as familiarity.

46.] *Everlasting punishment.*—It is then a madness and sottish opinion to think that the wicked, yea, even the devils themselves, shall be resurrected from their soul death, and at last saved. Luke xx. 35: But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that (resurrection heaven immortal spirit life) world, and the resurrection from the dead (36) are equal unto the angels; and are the children of God, being children of the resurrection. 38: For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living. Heb. ii. 14: Forasmuch then as the children (of God, spirit born of God holy) are partakers of flesh and blood (life of nature flesh bodies), he (Christ Jesus) also himself likewise took part. Woman's seed (Gen. iii. 15) spirit begotten of the nature woman's seed egg. All animate life on earth is germinated from the female egg, when quickened by male milt into nature resurrection blood life: if the female eggs are not thus quickened by male milt in contact with those female eggs, no nature life is possible, and thus it is with the probation soul spirit egg mind intellect, which must be in like manner quickened into immortal spirit life from God's quickening immortal spirit life rays, or there is no immortal life in them; the fowl's female egg, when without a male, if set upon for six months by the female fowl diligently, produces no life whatever; break the shell, and a resurrection of rottenness is all that comes up from it: thus the everlasting punishment, no life is ever resurrected from the soul spirit mind egg after blood life probation closes. It is the same as the unimpregnated with quickening resurrection animate nature life. Gal. vi. 7: Be not deceived; God is not mocked (with rotten body, or soul spirit egg minds resurrection to immortal spirit life). For whatsoever a man soweth that shall he also reap. 8: For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption (rottenness). But he that soweth to the spirit (of God, by faith prayers holy) shall of the spirit reap life everlasting. 15: For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature. Heb. ii. 14: Jesus also himself likewise took part of the same; that through (blood life sacrifice holy) death he might destroy (annihilate) him that had the power of death, that is the devil. 1 Tim. vi. 16:

God only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto. 2 Tim. i. 10: Jesus Christ hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel. John iv. 24: God is a spirit. John v. 40: And ye (incorrigibly wicked) will not come to me, that ye might have life (immortal spirit life when blood life's probation is ended). John iii. 5: Except a man be born of water and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. John vi. 63: It is the spirit that quickeneth (to spirit life immortal the soul spirit egg mind); the flesh profiteth nothing (if it was to be resurrected from rottenness dust, there would be some value in it, but that Babel creed of resurrecting to life again rotten bodies is like the saving the incorrigibly wicked, after blood life death, and their rotten egg soul mind is as void of life in any form as a rotten egg of nature life, or a rotten potato, or rotten apple, or any rotten body of animate or inanimate nature life). The words that I (Christ) speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life immortal. 68: Lord, to whom shall we go (but to thee for immortality)? Thou hast the words of eternal life. John xi. 25: Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection and the life (immortal); he that believeth in me, though he were dead (unquickened with immortal life milt love), yet shall he live (by way of belief, reception of immortal spirit life milt love impregnation of the soul's spirit egg mind). 26: And whosoever liveth (while blood life continues) and believeth in me shall never die (negative, all other souls will die, Ezek. xviii. 4). The murderer sentenced to state's prison for life may be afterwards pardoned by the governor, but those hung by the neck until dead have a punishment from which there is no reprieve; it is an everlasting punishment, for none of them ever are pardoned, nor can they return again to life. 1 Cor. xv. 22: For as in Adam all die (all Adam's seed dies, and all who continue but nature Adamic beings all die), even so (in like manner as all Adam's seed dies, all Christ's spirit seed are immortal) in Christ (not out of Christ, unspirit born of God in Christ Jesus) shall all be made alive. But every man in his own order; Christ the first (resurrection) fruits; afterwards they that are Christ's at his coming (at blood life death). 26: The last (no enemy beyond that) enemy that shall be destroyed is death. 28: That God may be all in all. If the devil and incorrigibly wicked still then had a conscious existence they would be saved, but that is a Babel creed myth. 37: Thou sowest not that body that shall be. 44: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a

spiritual body. 47: The first Adam was of the earth, earthy (Gen. iii. 19: Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return). 48: As is the earthy, such are they that are earthy. And as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. The Babel creed that makes a hell of heaven by saving rotten bodies, and rotten souls, and devils, and death, say all are Christ's, and therefore resurrected. What sayest thou, St. Paul, to that? Rom. viii. 8: So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. 9: But ye (spirit born of God holy) are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be the spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the spirit of Christ, he is none of his. 13: For if ye live after the flesh ye shall die; but if ye through the spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. Isa. v. 24: Their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust; because they (Babel creed mortals) have cast away the law of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel. Dan. xii. 2: Some to everlasting life, and some to a resurrection of rottenness (original Hebrew). The righteous holy spirit children begotten of God. 1 John v. 18: Whosoever is born of God sinneth not; he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and the wicked one toucheth him not. 19: And we know that we (holy spirit born that sin not) are of God, and the whole (masses of Adam's sin lust race unspirit born) world lieth in wickedness. Positive, everlasting life promised to spirit born holy children of God (Dan. xii. 2; Matt. xix. 29; Luke xviii. 30; John iii. 16; iv. 14; v. 24; vi. 27, 40, 47; xii. 50; Acts xiii. 46; Rom. vi. 22; Gal. vi. 8; 1 Tim. i. 16). Negative, must inevitably be everlasting death (Deut. xxx. 15).

CHAPTER XXVI.

2.] *Passover*.—Concerning this word paschal, Exod. xii. 11. *The Son*.—Christ arms his disciples against the apparent scandal and bitterness of the cross, and shows that he voluntarily without constraint presented himself to sacrifice the woman's seed spirit begotten Lamb of God, emblemized by the sacrifice of thousands of innocent, unblemished lambs for many centuries previous, for the redemption of all who truthfully and heartily repent of their

past sins, and seek God through Christ the only mediator, with all their heart blood life power, for spirit birth life immortal seed redemption from eternal death doom, to which all Adam's race is sentenced, that all such through him might receive immortal life from his Father, who alone could impart immortal spirit life, that could not die while allied to him.

3.] *Assembled together.*—In a public sitting of the great council, which judged the most weighty matters, as of a false prophet, which they accused Christ of being. This council consisted of seventy judges, besides the high priest and the chief magistrate of the people. (Num. xi. 16, 17, 24.)

4.] *By subtilty.*—Covertly, and not openly, with a secret, strong, sinful compact.

5.] *The feast day.*—In the six days of unleavened bread then ensuing the passover, which were not festival days, when the greatest numbers were assembled to witness their executions; but here the priests advise not to proceed that way for fear of the rising of the people to oppose them in their horrid murder of the holy Jesus. But they quickly changed their opinions upon Judas's proffer.

6.] *Bethany.*—Matt. xxi. 17. *The leper.*—He had no doubt been cured of the leprosy by the Lord.

7.] *There came.*—John xii. 1, 2, 12. *Box.*—Alabaster pot, or vessel to contain anointing oil. *Poured it.*—To honor our Lord, according to the custom of those times.

8.] *His disciples.*—John xii. 4. This is especially referred to Judas, who, it is likely, was the author of this murmuring.

10.] *A good work.*—Jesus Christ, whose life was a true pattern and example of sobriety, does not waive the use of things conducing to delight, although they were costly. We must not then condemn the use of such things among believers, provided there be no inordinateness or excess, and that charity and love be not diminished.

11.] *Always.*—You have always opportunity to relieve the poor, when you will to do so, but as for this woman's seed blood life spirit begotten body, that will soon shed the blood life in these veins pulsated by my love heart, for all who will accept of my Father's conditional remission of sins, and receive spirit life immortal seed into their soul spirit egg minds, through their she soul will door; soon all opportunity to offer kind oblations to this blood life body will cease forever. But I will bestow from my Father spirit life immortal on all who comply with my directions.

15.] *Thirty pieces.*—Thirty shekels (Zech. xi. 12; Exod. xxi. 32). It seemeth there was some hidden mystery in this number, Christ having taken upon him the form of a servant, and because this was the set price for slaves that were killed.

17.] *The first day.*—The fourteenth day of the first month, in the end of which they were to eat the paschal lamb (Exod. xii. 18; Lev. xxiii. 5; Num. ix. 3; Luke xxii. 7), which Christ Jesus strictly observed. When the sabbath occurred on the next day, the Jews sometimes adjourned the feast until after the sabbath, which they did on the occasion here referred to, as it appears by John xviii. 28; xix. 14. Therefore it is called the great day, the yearly feast, John xix. 31.

18.] *My time.*—The fullness of the appointed time of the last sacrifice of atonement, and of which all previous lamb sacrifices were foreshadowing emblems. Therefore I celebrate it before the rest of the people.

23.] *That dippeth.*—Now at this time, Ps. xli. 9: Yea, mine own familiar friend in whom I trusted, which did eat of my bread, hath lifted up his heel against me. Gen. iii. 15: Thou shalt bruise his heel.

24.] *Goeth.*—To his death of the blood life seed of the woman's nature life egg (Gen. iii. 15; Heb. ii. 14). This is to occur in a short time, and this Jesus said that his disciples might understand that all these things occur by God's providence, not by chance or man's power.

25.] *Thou hast said.*—I say not it is thee, but thou sayest so thyself.

26.] *Were eating.*—The paschal lamb feast was also here closed forever, as to any further emblem beneficial remembrance thereof. And the new soul spirit egg mind, spirit birth, new creature life immortal celebration of the Lamb of God spirit begotten sacrifice, that opened a spiritual life immortal way whereby immortal life spirit impregnations might be imparted to the soul spirit egg minds of mortals of blood life earthly being, and the spirit born new creature would pulsate through Christ, from God his Father immortal spirit life love. The ceremonies of the holy communion were taken from thence. *Blessed it.*—Mentally asked his Father's blessing (Matt. xiv. 19), which was done here by Christ, not so much in regard to the food of the body, as in regard to the food of the soul, to true spirit born holy believers, and receivers of his spirit life eternal truths, whereof this corporal bread was to be the sacrament

and seal, which was procured without the sacrifice of blood life, as in the former sacrifices (Mark xiv. 22; Luke xxii. 17, 19), or, as St. Paul saith, 1 Cor. x. 16, he blessed the bread as a sacrament of the soul's spirit food for the new spirit born creature life immortal from God. *Break it.*—Emblem of the breaking into the body of Jesus, to empty out its blood life spiritual sacrifice, in unison with woman's seed, thereby to crush the serpent's head (Gen. iii. 15; Heb. ii. 14; 1 Cor. xi. 24). *This is.*—This bread which is consecrated by me, is the sacrament of my body, offered as an expiatory sacrifice for you true spirit born believers; together with the sign use in true believers (Gen. xvii. 10; Exod. xii. 11; xl. 15; 1 Cor. x. 16; Eph. v. 26). *My body.*—My flesh (John vi. 53, 54), to which Christ addeth his blood. Not only to show himself whole by these two parts (Heb. ii. 14), but chiefly to show that his body in this sacrament ought to be considered and apprehended by faith, as offered in true sacrifice of expiation, in which the blood was to be spilt, and the flesh of the thing offered to be cut in pieces. 1 Cor. xi. 24: Christ comprehendeth his whole person, with his merit, obedience, satisfaction, expiation benefits, wherein consists the true food of the soul, received to a spiritual impregnation of the soul's spirit mind egg intellect, which is formed by the union of blood life, and Spirit of God life immortal, impregnation spirit love, which spirit life immortal impregnation of the soul mind egg, under the brooding baptism of the Holy Spirit dove develops a new spirit creature which thereby partakes of the nature of its begetter, who alone hath immortality to impart (2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 15; 1 Tim. vi. 16; 1 John v. 18; 2 Tim. i. 10), which spirit life immortal gospel promise of God immutable, received by way of the soul's blood life mortals will door into the spirit egg intellectual mind, produces the new spirit creature with immortal life, that lives eternally whilst it pulsates spirit love, and is received to a spiritual, everlasting life by the word of God, by way of faith, trusting in and relying upon the same, which also unites Christ unto it, as food is united to the blood life continuance. John iii. 5; vi. 63, 68; xv. 5: I am the vine, ye are the branches; he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit; for without me ye can do nothing. 6: If a man abide not in me (during blood life probation, Ezek. xviii. 24) he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. Clearly showing that Adam's race of mortals are like a branch of a tree in their unspirit

born state, and, like nature wood, are easily consumed; also as stubble and chaff (Isa. v. 24; Mal. iv. 1; Matt. iii. 12; John xvii. 20, 21; Gal. ii. 20; Eph. iii. 17).

27.] *Drink ye all of it.*—Popish Roman Catholic priests, with their Babel pope creeds of men, change it to, Drink me all of it: pure self-pharisaism.

28.] *For this.*—A reason why he commandeth them to parteciate of this cup, because that it is the sacrament of the true blood of the covenant of grace, opposite to the figurative blood of the ancient covenant of the law (Exod. xxiv. 8). *Of the new.*—Upon which is grounded the everlasting spirit birth covenant of God with men, manifested and given out in a new manner, more clearly, powerfully, and fully, under the gospel than under the law emblems (Jer. xxxi. 31; Heb. viii. 8). *Is shed.*—Must and will shortly be shed in deed, as it is now prospectively shed. John ii. 9: The water that was made wine; I have no doubt but pure water the Lord would turn into spiritual wine of far better quality, yes, infinitely better, than the liquor and drugs used as sacramental wine.

29.] *Henceforth.*—Behold, this is the last meal that I shall make with you in this world, to testify unto you my love, and leave you a perpetual pledge of myself, until I receive you in spirit bodies glorified in heaven, as each closes faithfully their probation blood life journey on earth, which shall be new ones like the angels of God (Luke xx. 36; xiv. 15; Matt. viii. 11; Rev. iii. 20; xix. 9). Now though Jesus did eat sometimes after his resurrection with his disciples, yet that was not as being still a necessity to preserve animal body blood life of nature; for the blood life and blood of Jesus was all shed on Calvary to redeem his chosen children who obey his proclamation of conditional pardon, and receive by faith belief spirit life immortal birth (Luke xxiv. 39; John i. 13). Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. 1 John v. 18: We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not. The flesh and bones body, resurrected by the spirit life eternal of Christ. John x. 18: No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. 11: The good shepherd giveth his (blood) life for his sheep. 28: Shed for many, not all, as taught by Babel men creeds.

30.] *A hymn.*—Which, the Jewish writers say, was one or more of David's psalms.

31.] *Offended.*—Deny that they will longer rely upon one so

seeming weak, abject, and wretched, in worldly respect; nor by reason of my doctrine, contrary to the sense of the flesh, and mortal life capacities of nature intellect minds in their benighted state, before spirit life immortal light illuminates the spirit born new love pulsating creature child of God.

32.] *I am risen.*—He comforts their sorrowing minds with a resurrection of his earthly body void of blood life, as proof of his spirit life immortal power. Ps. xvi. 10: For thou wilt not leave my soul in hell (the grave). Neither wilt thou suffer thy holy one to see corruption (rottenness, as all Adam's sin lust race do). Ps. xlix. 9: That he should live forever and not see corruption (Acts ii. 27; xiii. 35).

35.] *Said all the disciples.*—Being impulsed by blood life zeal and vain self-reliance presumption.

36.] *Gethsemane.*—It was on the Mount of Olives.

37.] *Sorrowful.*—In his human nature blood life, which had nature affections, except sin (Heb. ii. 18; iv. 15). Christ's union with his Father was not suspended a moment, but the spirit begotten body called Jesus, which was the medium of nature blood life communication with mortals by way of the woman's seed, the blood life body of Jesus suffered, but the spirit word power of God spirit Son did not suffer, but the spirit connection with the nature body spirit begotten sympathized with the suffering body until blood life was shed for the remission of the sins of all truly repentant of past sins, and who diligently with all their hearts seek in God's appointed way for spirit birth life eternal. The blood life body of Jesus felt the same attachment to retain its life powers that all blood life feels at the approach of danger or death; but its spirit governor readily used its power to lay down the blood life a sacrifice for those who would avail themselves of the provision, and to take up from the grave before corruption rottenness dissolved it into its original gases and refuse dust, as doth corruption all other earthly blood life beings. That blood life body of Jesus cried out, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? Ps. xxii. 1: By an unsearchable dispensation of infinite love, that volunteered to let the spirit begotten holy blood life humanity suffer, to give God's holy justice irrevocable law satisfaction for the sins of all the elect (Gal. iii. 13; Isa. liii. 6, 10), or to open a spirit life door.

38.] *And watch.*—To be witness of my suffering, and to be instructed and strengthened by my example. How few watch and pray in secret for Christ's aid!

39.] *O my Father.*—A pure nature blood life desire in Jesus, the sacrificial spirit begotten of woman's seed, man (Gen. iii. 15). Woman's seed egg of mortal life was by that word spoken in Eden by the Lord God, impregnated, and produced the spirit begotten body of Jesus, the same as vegetation life (Gen. i. 11) and animate blood life. Gen. i. 20, 24; ii. 7: Formed man of the dust (Heb. ii. 14; Matt. iii. 16). And besides that, this desire that the death sacrifice humiliation apparent, and for but a moment as it were, might pass, was only conditional under the will of God, accepted of by Christ; but from the contemplation of which Jesus was awhile diverted by the extremity of horrors. Therefore, there was no sin in it, but only a short conflict of nature blood life, presently overcome by reason and firm will, and full surrender without a reserve to his Father's will (John iii. 16). Thus must all spirit born do.

41.] *The spirit.*—The operation of God's Spirit, which is in you, in zeal and holy desire, is indeed very fervent and vigorous; but it is counterpoised by the oppositions of our remiss and restless nature. Wherefore you might be easily overcome, if you do not by secret prayer to God obtain strength. John xv. 5: As you readily see, without me ye can do nothing; and by your unwatchfulness you did not keep yourselves from the ambushes and surprises of the wicked one (Gal. v. 17).

42.] *O my Father.*—The extremity of his passion enforcing that prayer: Thy will be done, not mine.

43.] *Were heavy.*—Poor human nature was worn out by grief (Luke xxii. 45).

45.] *Sleep on.*—Ironical kind of speech, as if he had said, I could not awake you by my words; here are other people who will awake you in another manner.

46.] *Let us be going.*—Not to run away, but to go and meet my enemies. Thus he sheweth his free will to offer the spirit begotten woman's seed blood life sacrifice to death, after he had overcome and ruled all human affection into subjection to the spirit word Son of God.

47.] *Swords and staves.*—War implements of devils' invention, to cause evil nature self rulers to lord it over those unarmed for the war strife death, or by overpowering numbers to enslave the human will.

50.] *Friend.*—Ironically he calls Judas by the name friend, which by the proffered kiss he pretended to be; as have untold

thousands who have betrayed virtue, that they if a friend truthfully would have died to protect from such demon hypocrisy. Thus Jesus, by the word friend, upbraided the ingratitude of the accessory murderer.

51.] *One of them.*—Peter (John xviii. 10).

52.] *That take.*—Mortals who make a business of war sooner or later fall by their foes.

53.] *Twelve.*—A legion imports the number of about six thousand men chosen for war, which was the number of a Roman army, which Christ perhaps referred to, as a legion for each.

56.] *Was done.*—He shows all this was ordered by the hand of God, and that their madness had before that time prevailed against him, if they had gotten power from God, who had not given it till then, because the time appointed had not previously come. *Of the prophets.*—Those who had written of Christ's sufferings and passion. *Forsook him.*—A lively image of our weakness. John xv. 5: For without me ye can do nothing. All blood life mortal strength, without Christ's aid, is as dust.

57.] *Caiaphas.*—This was he who gave counsel to take Jesus and put him to death.

59.] *Sought false.*—Matthew shows that Christ Jesus was unjustly accused, and that perjured suborned witnesses with their utterly false devil tare seed lies witness falsely, as many perjured villains perpetrate robberies from the holy even at this day, and the devil's tare seed unclean spirit liars slander and nickname the virtuous and good. Jesus never committed one sin, but volunteered through infinite love and mercy to pay for us who have received spirit birth life from him the sin debts we could not pay.

60.] *Found none.*—Well agreeing, and that conformed to the law of two or three witnesses, whereby they might legally condemn him (Deut. xvii. 6).

61.] *I am able.*—They falsify the words and subvert Christ's meaning, for what Christ had spoken of the temple of his body that they attribute to the material temple, and therefore are truthfully called perjured false witnesses.

63.] *Held his peace.*—Bearing the calumnies patiently, and being disposed not to hinder nor stay the prefixed hour of the blood life holy sacrificial death.

64.] *Hereafter.*—At my second coming to judge the nations then on the earth alive. It will then plainly appear what I am,

which you now ask me with vehement evil nature derision and malice to surprise me and have a pretence to condemn me, as your associates have heretofore done when they nicknamed me Beelzebub, because I cast out devils and unclean spirits, tare seed children of the devil, the same as they his then accusers were. *Of power.*—The name of God as used among the Jews.

65.] *Rent.*—To feign great zeal and wrathfulness, as against a great blasphemy, as they used to do when they saw or heard of some cruel act (Ezra ix. 3; Jer. xxxvi. 24).

67.] *Did they spit.*—As it were in detestation upon a condemned malefactor. No mortal with the power Jesus could have called into action in a moment even to destroy his vile demon accusers, and the whole rebel race of Adam, and all the devils and unclean spirits in existence. Yet still mercy and love prevailed, and we who are spirit born on earth to-day should love more and adore more and more each day the glorified spirit word and spirit begotten Son of God, the Holy Ghost, who with the infinite love consent of the Sovereign of the universe opened up a narrow spirit life holy way through the precious holy blood Jesus shed on Calvary for all who are spirit born of his spirit love immortal life good spirit love seed (Matt. xiii. 38; John iii. 5; xv. 5; Rom. viii. 9; 1 Cor. xv. 23, 44).

68.] *Saying.*—After they had covered his face, they outraged and mocked him in that manner, that he might not be esteemed as a prophet (Mark xiv. 65).

70.] *But he denied.*—This is another example of our helpless infirmity; like the infant for months after its birth, utterly dependent, thus are we spirit born children of God in Christ Jesus, without his constant aid we are utterly helpless. Pray always then; be ever in love's suppliant attitude, dependence on Christ (John xv. 5).

71.] *Of Nazareth.*—The vile unclean evil tare seed children of the devil, that nicknamed Christ Jesus Beelzebub, as the devil's children love to gratify their evil nature devil within them to-day by nicknaming persons and places. They loved to call Jesus a Nazarene; this was given him by the evil unclean devil spirit, popular among devils, scorn from the name of the city, Nazareth, that is holy and consecrated to God. No broad-way to hell traveller loves holiness, therefore a holy person they hate and nickname him and his home.

73.] *Thy speech.*—Rough, Galilean (Acts ii. 7). The apostles

being most of them of that country where the Lord was also most frequently conversant (John vii. 52).

74.] *To curse.*—He began to denounce the Lord Jesus Christ with blasphemous language, execrations and imprecations upon himself. *And to swear.*—From which we see that if we do not acknowledge our fault after we have offended, we proceed from an evil to a worse condition, until we even come to blasphemy, or hatred, or disregard for holiness life, if God's pitying mercy does not reach after and save us, as drowning Peter.

75.] *Wept bitterly.*—That is, he was powerfully and to the life affected with repentance.

CHAPTER XXVII.

1.] *To put him to death.*—That is, to conclude of the manner of his death, for they had already concluded that he must die.

2.] *Delivered him.*—For the Romans had left the Jews power of examining the crimes of such as were malefactors of their own nation, but had reserved the power of condemning them to death and the execution thereof to themselves and to their magistrates (John xviii. 31). *The governor.*—As a proctor or overseer of the emperor's affairs, for there were some provinces referred to Cæsar, distinct from those which belonged to the people of Rome, whose governors were chosen by the people (Luke iii. 1).

3.] *Repented himself.*—With that kind of grief and repentance which proceedeth only from the wound of conscience, and the feeling of injustice and fear of God's wrath, without any love to goodness, conversion, faith, or hope in his mercy; which kind of repentance can produce nothing but death (2 Cor. vii. 10).

4.] *See thou to that.*—Behold, how hypocrites do connive at and flatter themselves, casting all the fault upon their copartners.

5.] *Cast down.*—Judas felt the bribery silver was as fire torments that he would rid himself of, but he was without hope of forgiveness and had no helper against his enemy the devil, or inbred evil nature lust for gains, and his blood life was as hell-fire torture.

6.] *It is not lawful.*—Hypocrites are very conscientious in trivial things, of dress and outward appearance of sanctity to the law and opinions of their fellow sinners, but not in shedding innocent blood. *Treasury.*—The Greek *corbana*, a Syriac word, which signifies the place where they laid up and kept the gifts and offerings which were made to the temple, and consecrated things.

7.] *The potter's field.*—It was some field that was so called for an unknown cause. *Strangers.*—Heathens, from whom the Jews by a custom were separated even after their death, though there is no express law of God for it (Gen. iii. 19), being only dust.

9.] *Jeremy the prophet.*—Plainly, in the Scriptures the favored Jews had, was recorded their vile wicked acts. *Valued.*—Who, though an Israelite by birth, and in part by Boaz in the woman's seed descent (Gen. iii. 15), but in Ruth of Gentile descent, yet the Jews bought the life of Jesus' blood life sacrifice at the same rate as by the law they ransomed a poor slave's life that was a stranger (Exod. xxi. 32). If the ox shall push a man servant, he shall give unto their master thirty shekels of silver, and the ox shall be stoned.

11.] *Thou sayest.*—It is a species of assent to what another saith, or asketh, or I acknowledge it; for Christ was truly their spiritual king, that they rejected, and by descent in David's line, perhaps the rightful temporal king, if they had not been subjugated to the Roman government, by way of transgressions previously against God's law.

12.] *He answered nothing.*—Bearing their slanders and vile evil devil nature mockings and buffetings, with forbearance that no mortal of Adam's race, with his power at hand to destroy them all in a moment with a word, would have borne, unless aided by the Lord thus to do, and not to stay the appointed hour of his sacrificial offering for the atonement for the sins of all repentant spirit born holy believers.

15.] *At that feast.*—At the passover.

16.] *They had.*—Barabbas was most likely a Jew they had previously put into Pilate's hands.

17.] *Or Jesus.*—The governor thought they would be ashamed to demand a murderer should be let loose unto them rather than Jesus, showing the vileness of men tradition creeds that regard not God's commands of love and mercy, even to vile enemies.

24.] *That he could.*—Or that all he might say was unavailing with men creed fanatics. *He took water.*—A vain ceremony, to

show that he protested himself to be innocent of his death, to which he was forced by the Jewish rabble masses (Deut. xxi. 6).

25.] *His blood.*—If there be injustice in crucifying him, we Jews take all the guilt and punishment thereof upon ourselves, and on our children.

26.] *When he had.*—Having first sought to appease the people's fury by this smaller punishment, as for a slight fault (Luke xxiii. 16; John xix. 1). Or he caused him to be scourged for a kind of torture (afterwards practiced by the Roman priests on saints) used before execution, to get the whole truth out of the delinquent, then in use in Rome in such cases; they used rods or wands for free persons, and whips for slaves, of which Jesus had taken the former upon him (Phil. ii. 7).

28.] *A scarlet robe.*—Which might have been a centurion's or sergeant's, who then wore that color, which being likewise the color of kings' habits, and soldiers would scoff at Jesus because he had styled himself to be king of the Jews (Luke xxiii. 11). But perhaps God's secret providence suffered all this to occur; first, that Jesus presented himself before God's judgment-seat in a strange vesture, namely, as a sinner, and a pledge for the sins of all who by way of his sacrificial atonement availed themselves through faith of immortal spirit life's new spirit creature being, spirit born of their soul's spirit egg mind's impregnation of God's spirit life immortal. 1 Tim. vi. 16: Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto. 2 Tim. i. 10: But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death (of those who were with all Adam's race sentenced to death (Gen. iii. 19, 22, 24, that receive life immortal soul spirit egg mind spirit life impregnation from God, in his spirit life gospel proclamation word, when by faith received through blood life's will door into the belief mind), and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel. Isa. liii. 6: And the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. 12: He was numbered with transgressors: and he bore the sins of many (not all, as false men creeds teach), and made intercession for the transgressors (2 Cor. v. 21; Isa. liii. 3, 4, 5, 7). Fully describing what took place at Jesus' death.

29.] *A reed.*—Instead of a sceptre, which was also done in mockery. To teach us that Christ governeth his kingdom on earth by very weak means, and despiseth the powers of this world, kings, popes, and college bred officials, D.D.'s, with all their hay,

wood, stubble, chaff, creeds of men, and Babel tower of rotten bodies. 1 Cor. i. 18–31 inclusive: That no flesh should glory in his presence.

31.] *To crucify him.*—The cross was a punishment wherewith the cruel tare seed children of the devil, the Romans, punished their slaves, and such as were seditious disturbers of the peace. The crime whereof Jesus was accused; who had voluntarily made himself a servant (Luke xxiii. 2; Isa. xlix. 7; Phil. ii. 7).

32.] *Cyrene.*—Of Cyrene in Africa. *Him they compelled.*—According to the custom of those days. *To bear.*—The custom of the Romans was, that malefactors carry their cross to the place of execution. But Jesus being so faint in blood life nature, that had become exhausted by the long continued pressure of sin burdens for those he would atone for with his blood life sacrifice, this poor man was compelled to help carry the cross (Luke xxiii. 26; John xix. 17), carrying the hind part of the cross, as do all spirit born figuratively (Matt. x. 38; Col. i. 24), though not in like manner.

33.] *Of a skull.*—So called, likely, by there being many bones of executed men there.

34.] *Vinegar.*—A vessel of vinegar stood there ordinarily (John xix. 29), for a little relaxation of the severe tortures of the crucified. These same Roman devils in human form practiced by way of their inquisition tortures of Christians, that like Jesus they denounced as a heretic for centuries; and then proclaimed their devil god, that would resurrect their refuse and torture them eternally. Such abominable mockery of God, who is love, goodness, holiness, justice, mercy unending, as he daily proves before all living on earth, all Babel men creeds called orthodox still proclaim, for fear of being called a heretic to creed faith. *Gall.*—The demon soldiers of Rome mixed gall with the vinegar, through devil insolence, and in a scoffing way. Luke xxiii. 36: After he was nailed on the cross he took the bitter cup. John xix. 30: And waited the hour appointed when blood life of woman's seed egg (Gen. iii. 15), impregnated by the word uttered in Eden, thereby being spirit begotten, shed that pure blood life as the closing sacrifice for sin.

35.] *Casting lots.*—For Jesus' coat without seam. Ps. xxii. 18: They cast lots for my vesture. 16: For dogs have compassed me; the assembly of the wicked have enclosed me; they pierced my hands and my feet. 19: Be not thou far from me, O

Lord ; O my strength, haste thee to help me. 29 : All they that go down to the dust (unspirit born unholy who are not immortal) shall bow before him, and none can keep alive his own soul. Thus clearly showing the meaning of Isa. xlv. 23. Every knee shall bow in death, that goes down to the dust, that are not spirit born of God in Christ. Gen. iii. 19 : Dust thou art, and to dust shalt thou mortal return. John xix. 24 ; fulfilled, Ps. xxii. 18.

36.] *They watched.*—Because those put to death by the cross lingered in pain a great while, no doubt the devil's invention by one of his children, as also taught by his servant antichrist, the man of sin, who taught in Rome first the eternal torture of the heretics, as a part of their Babel creed of Satan's inspiration to the pope of the church (of hell), not Christ the life and the truth and the way. John xi. 25 ; vi. 53 : Except ye eat the flesh (spirit word truth) of the Son of man, and drink his blood (spirit love), ye have no life in you. All unspirit born are dying gradually each day after birth of nature blood life. Each pulsation leaves one less, each breath leaves one less, of their limited probation number. Gen. iii. 19 : Dust thou art, O mortal. The cruel cross torture was by driving spikes through their hands, spread wide apart, and through their feet, by which they hung in horrid agony, until the soldiers, tired of waiting, broke their limbs, too severe torture for blood life to endure long ; such tortures intensified the Roman Catholic inquisition practiced during the dark ages, on thousands of Christ's spirit begotten children.

37.] *His accusation.*—It was the custom to place upon the cross the cause of the crucifixion in writing. Pilate's inscription was truth, but showed no cause whatever of death.

42.] *He saved.*—Thereby they acknowledged themselves, though titled by their Babel men tradition false creed, chief priests, scribes, D.D.'s and elders, to be children of the devil. John viii. 44 : Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there was no truth in him. If those Jewish priests and people had been even of good human moral character decency, they would not have mocked the Lord Jesus in such agony, with a lie that he could not save himself, and admitted the truth that he had saved others.

43.] *He trusted.*—This was a grievous temptation of the devil in them, whereby they sought to bring the feeble dying blood life body from woman's seed, Gen. iii. 15, spirit begotten, that they

had pierced with thorns and ruthless horrid iron spikes, into despair, taking thereby if they could his confident reliance upon God his spirit Father. But his power that moment could have hurled them and earth into chaos.

44.] *The thieves*.—One of them (Luke xxiii. 39). This is a form of speaking called synecdoche, whereby he attributeth to both that which was proper but to one.

45.] *The sixth hour*.—Which was at noon, or midday. *Darkness*.—Not by any natural eclipse, the moon being then at the full, but a supernatural miracle, to show that the heavenly spirit sun of righteousness and immortal spirit life, spirit word of God Almighty, sovereign of the universe creation power Son; that had said Let there be light, and there was light. The sun that then would have expired in eternal chaos night, had its Creator in truth expired; it was the shadow of death development, when the blood life of the spirit begotten woman's seed body expired, a sacrifice for his spirit begotten, and that should thereafter thereby become immortal children of God. Or Satan's darkness power might have been permitted to darken the atmosphere (Luke xxii. 53). And likewise to show Christ's infinite power alliance with his Father, and the horrid crime of the Jews in his death. *Over all the land*.—Most affirm that it was over all the world; others think that the darkness pervaded Judea only, and the countries thereabouts, where Satan's hosts assembled.

46.] *Eli*.—These words of Ps. xxii. 1 are here related in the Syriac tongue, which in those days was more frequently used than the pure Hebrew. *My God*.—The full explanation will be found in the prophetic words of the psalmist, Ps. xxii. 1. *Forsaken*.—That was as if he had said, I, Jesus, never committed one sin; why should I suffer sin's death penalty? not endless hell fires surely. But he clearly knew it was a volunteer sacrifice of his blood life, to save his spirit begotten children, and thereby also to destroy all the foes of God. Heb. ii. 14: Forasmuch then as the children are partakers (in this blood life earthly) of flesh and blood, Jesus also himself likewise took part (woman's seed, Gen. iii. 15) of the same; that through death (of the blood woman's seed life spirit begotten power) he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is the devil.

47.] *This man*.—Whether those who made these remarks were scoffers or strangers, is not stated.

50.] *Cried*.—Luke xxiii. 46: Father, into thy hands I com-

mend my spirit (John xix. 30). *Yielded up*.—The soul spirit life, the Holy Ghost, returned to God that gave it (Eccles. xii. 7), willingly, after he had fulfilled a perfect obedience to his heavenly Father (Phil. ii. 8).

51.] *The veil*.—Which separated the holy place from the most holy, in the temple (Exod. xxvi. 31; 2 Chron. iii. 14). And this breach came by miracle for a sign that by the death of Christ all mosaic ceremonies were annihilated; among which the chief was the secret service which was yielded to God within his sanctuary. And besides to show that the heavenly sanctuary was open to all true believers, and receivers of spirit life immortal birth holiness that sinneth not; to direct their prayers and spiritual service directly to the God of heaven (Heb. ix. 8; x. 19, 20, 22). *Rocks rent*.—All things in nature gave testimony to the majesty of the Son of God, and showed the ingratitude and obdurateness of the Jews. A heathen philosopher is said then to have exclaimed, when the sun was obscured by darkness, and rocks were rent, The God of nature suffers.

52.] *Which slept*.—This verse is clearly an interpolation by some Babel creed sect, or it is incorrectly translated; and the next verse contradicts its occurrence as stated at the death of the Saviour. The 53d verse says that they came out of their graves after Christ had raised by spirit life eternal power of God the flesh and bones body, void of life blood as a medium still of communicating his spirit life mysteries to his disciples. Luke xxiv. 39: A spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have. And the next 28th chapter describes the resurrection that was the first. And then as now no mortal in a blood life flesh body can comprehend or see a spirit, nor a spirit body; and because Christ the spirit word Son of God, creation power. John i. 3: All things were made by him (in time's creation), and without him was not anything made that was made. Therefore his spirit creation power word (Gen. iii. 15) begat the woman's seed body of Jesus, in whom his infinite love was veiled to fulfill (Heb. ii. 14). He likewise took part of the same; that through death (as heretofore stated), he might destroy (annihilate at the close of time) him that had the power of death, that is the devil. And Gen. iii. 19: Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. Eccles. xii. 7: Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was; and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it. Luke xxiii. 46: Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit. John x. 17: I lay down my blood life that I might take it, my

spirit life, again, freed of blood life. 18 : No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father. 1 Cor. xv. 20 : But now is Christ risen from the dead (not the dead are raised), and become the first fruits of them that slept. 23 : Christ the first fruits ; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming (at blood life death). 35 : How are the dead raised up, and with what body do they come ? 36 : Thou fool (even vegetation life is a positive proof that the seed sown is not in body raised). 37 : And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be. 44 : It is sown a natural body ; it is raised a spiritual body. 46 : That was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural ; and afterward that which is spiritual. 47 : The first man is of the earth earthy. Gen. iii. 19 : Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return (imperative statute law of God). The second man is the Lord from heaven. 48 : As is the earthy, such are they that are earthy. Gal. vi. 7 : Be not deceived, God is not mocked ; for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. 8 : For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption (rottenness) ; but he that soweth to the spirit shall of the spirit reap life everlasting. 15 : For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature. And as is the heavenly, such are they that are heavenly. 49 : And as we have borne the image of the earthy (son like the earthy father) ; we shall also bear the (spirit body) image of the heavenly (spirit life immortal Father). 50 : Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God. Rom. viii. 1 : There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus (new creature, 2 Cor. v. 17), who walk not after the flesh, but after the spirit. 6 : For to be carnally minded is death ; but to be spiritually minded (spirit egg mind impregnated with spirit life immortal) is life and peace. 7 : Because the carnal (Adamic nature-blood life lust sin begotten) mind is enmity against God ; for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. 8 : So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. (Then Babel creed mortal, why resurrect the rotten body, which if the soul inhabit it again, it will, while therein, be displeasing to God) ? 9 : But ye (spirit born, John iii. 5) are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be the spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man (in the church, or out of it) have not the spirit of Christ, he is none of his (who are resurrected, 1 Cor. xv. 23 : they that are Christ's).

1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto. Matt. xiii. 37: Jesus said, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man. 38: The good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one. 39: The enemy that sowed them is the devil. 40: As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of this world. Luke xx. 35: They which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from (not of, as the false rotten body Babel creeds of men, pagan, and Roman Catholic priest reformers, tradition of popery creeds as found to-day; worshipers of rotten mortal bodies, in the place of the pagan wooden gods wrought in the image of man) the dead (at blood life death). 36: They are equal unto the angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection; Babel creeds teach that the wicked rotten dead are resurrected (flatly contradicting the aforesaid Scriptures of truth). 38: For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living. John iii. 3: Jesus said, Except a man be born again (by way of his spirit love seed, sown in the soul's spirit egg mind through the soul's ears or eyes, will door, and willingly, cheerfully, heartily believed as truth, fully received intellectually, which quickens the mind egg with immortal spirit life from God, which new spirit born new love peace intellectual creature), he cannot see the kingdom of God. 5: Except a man be born of water and the spirit he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. Statute imperative law of the spirit God Sovereign of the universe, who alone can impart to the mortal's soul immortal life spirit birth impregnation seed, by way of Christ Jesus his spirit word and only spirit begotten Son. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the spirit is spirit (not flesh body). John iv. 24: God is a Spirit; and they that worship him must worship him in spirit (not with noisy body worship) and in truth (not with false Babel men creeds). John v. 34: But I receive not testimony from man, but these things I say that ye might be saved. 40: And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life. John vi. 63: It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing. (If, as Babel creeds of men teach, the flesh bodies were to be raised, the flesh would profit something.) The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life. 63: Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou hast the words of eternal life, which the wicked receive not. John viii. 12: Jesus said, I am the light of the world; he that

followeth me shall not walk in darkness (death), but shall have the light of life. 15: Ye judge after the flesh. 21: Jesus said, Ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins; whither I go, ye cannot come. 23: Ye are from beneath, I am from above; ye are of this world; I am not of this world. John xv. 5: I am the vine, ye are the branches; he that abideth in me (not in the grave, with corruption), and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit; for without me ye can do nothing. 6: If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered, and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned as in a moment. John xi. 25: Jesus said unto her, I am (not I have been, nor I will be), I am the resurrection and the life (now). He that believeth in me, though he were (spiritually) dead, yet shall he live. 26: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. All blood life bodies do die, therefore they are not what Jesus spoke of as immortal; none can be immortal but those spirit begotten of God, who only hath immortality to impart to others, and dwells in life light eternal that no mortal can approach unto; therefore it must come by way of Christ's good seed of his Father's, sown in the soul's spirit egg mind before blood life death, for God's book of animate nature life proves positively that no birth impregnation can occur after the blood life body death, nor after the fowl's eggs are laid; if there is no male bird life quickening resurrecting milt impregnation on the egg inside of the shell, there is no life there; the hen might set six months on it faithfully, but no life birth will come forth; break the shell and a resurrection of rottenness alone comes forth. Thus it is with soul egg minds whose blood life bodies die before spirit life of God impregnation takes place. No resurrection can ever after possibly occur but uncleanness (Isa. v. 24; Dan. xii. 2; Mal. iv. 1; Matt. iii. 12; Rev. xx. 11, 14, 15; xxi. 8). Spirit resurrection, and in spirit bodies.

54.] *The Son of God*.—Nature witnessed truthfully, that its Creator was assailed by the powers of darkness and death; that as a deluge of evil pervaded the earth and still prevails over the earth, all earth life dies, none are immortal of earth life.

55.] *Which followed*.—As well to hear the doctrine of the gospel from his mouth, as to give him drink.

56.] *And Mary*.—Many have believed that it was the blessed virgin (John xix. 25; Mark xv. 40).

57.] *A rich man*.—And was therefore in great danger to declare himself to be Christ's disciple, against whom the Jews had exer-

cised such extreme cruelty. *Of Arimathea.*—This is old Rama, or Ramathaim in the tribe of Benjamin.

60.] *Own new tomb.*—Clearly showing it is no harm to erect vaults, or like this excavate the rock, or as Abraham who was rich and gave four hundred shekels of silver for the cave and lands for a burial place of his wife Sarah, called Machpelah, in Hebron in Canaan. It is a proper treatment of the blood life remains of our friends, and elevates humanity above the brute creation. But to mock God, as a God of the dead rotten bodies our own, or our friends, and that he would awake rottenness vile bodies, begotten in sin, and composed of milk, green grass and colorless water, whitened by animal distillation, and flesh formed of the same; dead carcases of swine, rabbits, cats, rats, oxen, cows, sheep, deer, bear, fish, muscles, clams, oysters, etc. Various other dead bodies, and wheat, rye, corn, oats, buckwheat, rice, etc. Grass seeds, which led God's great prophet Isaiah to exclaim, xl. 6, All flesh is grass. 7: Surely the people is grass. No farmer would consider a man or woman rational, that would say that he would even draw into his barn rotted grass; much less the vile mockery that he doctored as a D.D. grass after it was dead and rotten, and cured it even to immortal life. 15: Behold, the nations are as the drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance. 17: All nations before God are as nothing; and they are counted to him less than nothing and vanity, considering the cost of the sacrifice made by Christ of the body blood life sacrifice of Jesus' body, laid in the tomb of Joseph of Arimathea. 22: The inhabitants of the earth are as grasshoppers before him. 23: He bringeth princes to nothing. He maketh the judges of earth as vanity. 24: And the whirlwind shall take them away as stubble.

62.] *The preparation.*—The day before the sabbath, or before any other solemn feast, was so called, and especially after the nine hours, which were three hours after midday, immediately after which the feast was; so that this following day was the sabbath itself in which the Jews did likewise celebrate the passover.

63.] *That deceiver.*—The devil's Babel priests and Pharisees were not yet certain of their triumph, though they had seemingly conquered and vanquished the only Saviour of mortals. They call him a deceiver, without whom no man can know God unto salvation. *After three days.*—That is, the third day, taking one part as being truthfully on the third day.

64.] *Steal him away.*—Like all other political thieves and

wrong-doers, they judge the innocent disciples full of sorrow, would, like their devil lawyers, play vile tricks upon their opponents, and win a brief verdict against the innocent through lies and fraud.

65.] *A watch*.—Of Roman soldiers, appointed to lie in garrison in a stronghold which was by the temple, for the security of it and for the public tranquillity, whom they most likely used.

66.] *Sepulchre sure*.—The more they seek to hinder and obstruct truth, the more it appears to their shame. Truth is eternal; though slow, it moves with power.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

1.] *The first day*.—The next day after the Jewish sabbath. *The other*.—She that is called the mother of James and Josès (Matt. xxvii. 56, 61; Mark xvi. 1).

2.] *There was*.—Whilst these women were upon the way, the Lord rising at that instant, and coming out of the sepulchre or vault; for by the time they reached there Jesus had left. But the angel remained there; at whose sight the watch of Roman soldiers fled, and in the meantime the women came, who were told by the angel that Jesus was risen; and they went and reported it to Peter and John: John xx. 2. And these two apostles running to the sepulchre, the women came back with them; but, they returning to the city, Mary Magdalene stayed by the vault: John xx. 10, 11: And it is likely that the other women were near her. But Mary had a new vision of two angels; and the Saviour appeared first to her (Mark xvi. 9; John xx. 14), and then to the other women by the way as they returned to Jerusalem for to make the second report thereof to all the apostles. *The angel*.—The first time there appeared but one, the second time two (Luke xxiv. 4; John xx. 12).

4.] *Did shake*.—Unbelievers of truth are terrified at the presence of God or his angels, whereas believers spirit born God's children are comforted by it.

7.] *I have told you*.—Assure yourselves of it, do it and fail not; as for my part I have discharged my commission.

9.] *Jesus*.—Mark xvi. 9; John xx. 14: It appears that he

appeared to Mary Magdalene in some special manner before any of the rest.

11.] *And shewed.*—Unbelievers are forced to give their own testimony to the truth, without any thanks to them for it.

15.] *Did as they.*—By the just judgment of God they were so infatuated, that in dispersing the report they gave out things contradictory; how could they testify that the body of Jesus was stolen away when they confess they were asleep? commonly reported, slanders, and lies, against the righteous.

16.] *A mountain.*—From whence he returned to Jerusalem, and from the Mount of Olives he ascended into heaven (Luke xxiv. 49; Acts i. 12).

18.] *Is given unto me.*—In quality of mediator. And in the spiritual union of the spirit love soul mind power of Jesus, with the spirit word Son of God Spirit. And as soon as mortal vision mediation closed soon after the bloodless body of Jesus would be used, and placed for use; or given to the earth elements of which it was composed. That is wholly his to dispose of as infinite wisdom sees best. I have received from my Father God supreme of the universe the kingdom of this world and the spiritual kingdom of my spiritual spirit born church. John iii. 5: And now I enter into the glorious possession and administration of it.

19.] *Go ye.*—Therefore, not settle down at your ease in one place, while you get earthly pay. Declare my judgments to the nations, which is done by the preaching of the gospel (Ps. cx. 2; Isa. ii. 3, 4). All nations, Jews or Gentiles. Baptizing them as did John unto repentance. *In the name.*—As commissioned spirit born holy children of God the Father and the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, whose union in love, goodness, mercy, and power, name, I am permitted to use.

20.] *I have commanded.*—No power was given any man on earth to make any new commandments or Babel creeds of men traditions. *I am with you.*—All who are spirit born holy, full of love. 1 John iv. 16. God is love; he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.

M A R K.

CHAPTER I.

1.] *The beginning.*—St. Mark begins his gospel with the preaching of John the Baptist.

2.] *In the prophets.*—Malachi and Isaiah. *Messenger.*—Angel or ambassador.

3.] *Prepare.*—Clear yourselves of all false second nature teaching beliefs, counter to the gospel truths.

4.] *In the wilderness.*—It was a barren and waste place among the mountains. *Preach.*—That every man should be converted, and amend his life with true repentance for his former sins, and seek remission of the same through Jesus Christ and spirit birth.

7.] *There cometh.*—Jesus Christ, whose forerunner I am.

8.] *Have baptized.*—He declares that he is but a minister of the outward sign, and that it is Christ Jesus himself that gives efficacy to it. *Holy Ghost.*—Infinite love and goodness, spirit mercy of God.

9.] *Was baptized.*—Matt. iii. 14: I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me? Jesus said, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfill all righteousness. Then John suffered him.

10.] *He saw.*—John i. 32: I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him. He that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he that baptizeth with the Holy Ghost. And I saw and bare record that this is the Son of God.

13.] *Tempted.*—He himself would be tempted that he might assist such as are tempted (Heb. ii. 18), and for an example to overcome the tempter.

15.] *The time.*—Prefixed by God himself for the coming of the Messiah, which is therefore called the fullness of time, Gal. iv. 4; Eph. i. 10.

16.] *Fishers.*—It required but little exertion of the intellectual thoughts to catch fish; and as mortals are naturally inclined to appropriate all glory to themselves, the Lord took for his disciples, as I feel he has called me to this work, not for our great wisdom,

nor for our exalted education, nor honorable dignity of official station, but to show forth his own exalted official mission from the Sovereign of the universe in clemency, to raise from condemned rebels under the sentence of death, by way of soul spirit egg mind immortal life impregnation, to develop a new spirit species of creatures equal unto the angels; thus all the salvation power and glory comes wholly from God.

21.] *Capernaum*.—This was a city in Galilee situated upon the lake of Gennesaret.

22.] *As the scribes*.—Who had only dead Babel men creed doctrines, without any quickening spirit life power or majesty glory.

24.] *Destroy us*.—The unclean spirits. They were tare seed children of the devil, whose bodies were rotten or passed to the elements. Matt. xiii. 39, 40: Destroy us before the appointed time, the end of this world, when as foul tares they are consumed.

26.] *Torn him*.—Having shaken and stretched him severely, as if he would have torn him in pieces.

27.] *What new doctrine is this?*—It was spirit birth of the soul spirit egg mind doctrine, clearly taught by the Lord Jesus Christ. Matt. xiii. 38: The tares are the children of the wicked one. 39: The enemy that sowed them is the devil. The harvest is the end of the world, and the reapers are the angels. 40: As therefore the tares (foul weeds that grew there in that region, at that time, among the wheat that they pulled up, and to destroy their seed burned up with fire). As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of this world. Then all unclean spirits shall be consumed in a moment, Num. xvi. 21.

29.] *They were*.—Christ and his disciples. *House of Simon*.—Wherever Jesus Christ is received, he shows some sign of his divine power; for he comes never empty unto us, but brings with him the spiritual goods which he hath received of his Father.

33.] *All the city*.—All that were diseased and came to be cured.

34.] *To speak*.—Spirits, even evil, have knowledge unknown to animal nature blood life; and evil spirits, even the father of lies, does, and can if he wills, like his tare popes, tell some truths.

35.] *The morning*.—Which is very seasonable for prayer. But how different from the creeds of men tradition practice, who make vocal prayers in the house; but Christ Jesus, before day dawn,

went out of the house into a solitary place to talk with his Father, the Sovereign of the universe, in sweet communion, secret prayer. Matt. vi. 6: When thou prayest enter into thy closet, and, when thou hast shut the door, pray to thy Father which is in secret (not seen by mortal eyes), and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. O for more secret prayer! Lord help all thy spirit born children to obey thy teachings; and then vain loud noises of men's Babel creed tower, eloquent polished worldly wise eulogistic vocal words, for mortal ears present to admire, would not be studied in vain. John iv. 24: God is a spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit (not with lips and tongue, nature blood life worship) and in truth; not by an outward false pretence, or to faithfully comply with men creed rules.

38.] *Came I forth.*—Christ Jesus did not return to the house for a vocal family worship, nor for food, for he received, in answer to his secret prayer, spiritual food from his heavenly Father's table, his native Messiah spirit home, and he came forth from thence on his Father's spirit love birth, new spirit doctrine proclamation, message of Scripture truths of God: the spirit Father of all immortal spirit life,—and no others can be immortal, and all creeds of men preached contrary thereto are spirit Babel false creeds of men. John xiv. 6: Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. John x. 1: Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that entereth not in by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. 9: I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved. 10: The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life. 11: I am the Good Shepherd: the Good Shepherd giveth his (blood) life for the sheep. 12: But he that is a hireling (archbishop with \$20,000 a year salary, or church of the pope Henry VIII. of England, or Congregational salary of \$20,000 a year, over \$384½ per sabbath, present salaries, pope of Rome hundreds of thousands of dollars a year salary, from their poor toiling votaries).

41.] *Moved.*—The compassionate and affectionate love of Christ appeared therein; that he had, as it were, a fellow feeling of our infirmities and imperfections, whereby none need fear to go unto him. *I will.*—God's will and act is one, in a moment it is accomplished, seeing he can do all things that he will.

45.] *To publish it.*—Or to publish many things, and divulge

what was done. *Could no more.*—By reason of the great multitudes which thronged unto him. Mark iii. 9: And hindered him from applying himself to the more important business of instructing them in regard to spirit birth immortal life, which was his principal business.

CHAPTER II.

1.] *In the house.*—It is not stated what house, and it matters little where the truth gospel is preached.

2.] *Were gathered.*—Amongst which, some were Pharisees and doctors of the law. They had not progressed to doctors of their myth divinity, which required a large amount of medicine, for they had tradition spirit Babel confused language creeds of men traditions. Matt. xv. 9: But in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. *The word.*—Of God, the gospel truths, not spirit Babel confused creeds of men tradition.

4.] *Uncovered the roof.*—The houses in that country were built with flat roofs.

5.] *Thy sins.*—He comes first to the cause of all our plagues, which being taken away, the effect ceaseth; the fruit or effect of sin. What a different doctrine from that taught by eternal hell fire worshippers!

8.] *In his spirit.*—His spirit word spirit Son of God power. *Why reason ye.*—Clearly showing through the medium, his spirit word begotten body. Gen. iii. 15: Of the woman's seed.

13.] *Sea-side.*—The Lake of Gennesaret.

14.] *Levi.*—Called also Matthew.

17.] *Sinners.*—Those that are sensible they are such in their conscience, and unconscious dead sinners. 1 Tim. iv. 1: Now the spirit speaketh expressly that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils. Tradition Babel creeds of men contrary to gospel spirit truth. 2: Speaking lies in hypocrisies (for salary), having their conscience seared with a hot iron, of endless hell fire torture of mortals of dust and earth elements.

18.] *And they.*—John's disciples (Matt. ix. 4).

22.] *Old bottles.*—Made then of leather. Old blood life bodies

would, like old leather bottles, be poor receptacles for spirit beings.

26.] *Abiathar*.—Called also Abimelech (1 Sam. xxi. 1). *Were with him*.—In like necessity.

27.] *The sabbath*.—The law of the sabbath was made for the good of man, as well his spiritual as his corporal good; to ease him of his labors, but not to prevent him from taking necessary nourishment sustenance. A day of rest; devotion to righteousness.

28.] *Therefore*.—Seeing that the intent of the law touching the sabbath is such, it belongeth to me, who am the sovereign lawgiver, to know what belongeth to the necessity of mine, and not to you false judges. And spiritually, self-assumed lordship over God's heritage by your tradition creeds of men.

CHAPTER III.

2.] *And they*.—Scribes and Pharisees which were present.

3.] *Stand forth*.—To the end that the miracle should be manifest.

4.] *Is it lawful?*—St. Mark and St. Luke say that Christ asked this question, but St. Matthew ascribes it to the Jews; and it is both ways true, for the Jews in their heart desired to know whether the work Christ did was lawful to be done on the sabbath day. *Held their peace*.—Out of policy; for they would neither confess it nor deny it.

10.] *Plagues*.—Any corporal infirmity sent for a punishment or correction by the Lord.

11.] *Unclean spirits*.—Which were in the possessed. To show that Satan's power is subverted by Christ.

12.] *Straitly*.—Christ will have none of the devil's testimony, who is the father of lies; for if he do testify the truth, it is always in cunning, that he may afterwards falsify or overthrow it.

17.] *Boanerges*.—To represent the power of the gospel spirit truth, not that they were to use loud voices like thunder, but a voice from heaven. 1 Kings xix. 12: Still small voice.

21.] *His friends*.—John vii. 3, 4, 5: This is diversely under-

stood whether his friends tried to get him out of the pressure, or thought him deranged in mind, because he differed in belief and doctrine of spirit birth spirit life, from all preachers and men creeds on earth, or whether they were deluded, plainly appears when they are aided and abetted by the devil's tare seed unclean spirit nicknamers.

22.] *Beelzebub*.—A nickname given the Lord Jesus Christ by devil nicknamers in human form; one of the meanest developments of evil nature.

23.] *Satan*.—Christ readily explains that the devil will not war upon himself.

26.] *Against himself*.—If the devil or the devil man commits suicide he is dead.

29.] *Against the Holy Ghost*.—To impugn the power that wrought Christ miracles to the devil, when God, they well knew, wrought them. Nicknaming the Creator of all times, creation, things animate with life, and inanimate things Beelzebub, was a sin against the Holy Ghost never to be forgiven. Thank God there is no nicknamer in heaven!

30.] *They said*.—Contrary to the internal feeling of their conscience which was enlightened and convinced by the Holy Ghost, which they out of mere malice opposed, and said that Christ Jesus like themselves had an unclean spirit. Their evil nature nicknamed God's spirit word son power in Jesus Beelzebub. There is no forgiveness for the spirit egg mind of a nicknamer of person or place: is as a spoiled egg.

31.] *His brethren*.—Woman's seed developments from man lust milt, because they could not comprehend spirit born holy power of God, and because it did not agree with their Jewish men tradition church spirit Babel creed; then the truth proclaimer of God must be flighty in mind, having no love for his spirit life immortal teachings, and being influenced by Christ's maligners.

34.] *Behold my mother*.—Christ is not to be understood that he despised his Jesus body blood life nature mother; but that he preferred spiritual before carnal parentage. God his spirit creation word power Father of Christ, without woman's seed or any other known to mortals, was the Father of the Jesus body. Gen. iii. 15: It shall bruise thy head; woman's seed (Heb. ii. 14).

35.] *Shall do the will*.—To do the will of God is to love him supremely, and their neighbor as themselves; by first seeking the kingdom (Matt. vi. 33) of God and his righteousness, and all

these things shall be added unto you. John iii. 3: Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. 5: Except a man be born of water and of the spirit he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

CHAPTER IV.

2.] *Many things.*—The apprehensions of his hearers were different, therefore Christ accommodated himself to each one's capacity; dispensed the riches of God's spiritual kingdom by parable illustrations to their finite dark understandings.

4.] *By the way.*—When God's word is preached it finds not always such hearers as profit by it, for some lose it again by their own carelessness, as is showed in this similitudes.

9.] *That hath ears.*—Christ speaks thus because the understanding of these things is not given to all men.

10.] *They that were.*—These were some that followed Christ besides his disciples.

11.] *But unto them.*—To those who are strangers to my church (1 Cor. v. 12; Col. iv. 5; 1 Thess. iv. 12; 1 Tim. iii. 7).

12.] *They may see.*—For a punishment of their wilful blindness and hardness.

13.] *How then will ye.*—If you understand not that which is plain and easy, how will you understand those things which are difficult and mysterious, and fully revealed comprehensively only to those spirit born of Christ's spirit love seed holy?

14.] *The sower.*—Soweth the gospel word of Christ (John vi. 63); not with Babel creeds.

21.] *Is a candle.*—He exhorts them, by the example of a good life, to enlighten all men; being set as an example of all the world.

22.] *For there.*—He gives a reason for what he meant by the preceding similitude.

24.] *Shall be measured.*—In Matthew vii. 2 this is spoken in the sense that one should abstain from offending another for fear of receiving an equal punishment. But here and in Luke vi. 38 the end appears to be to warn his disciples, that according as they shall dispense and distribute the gifts and grace of God, they shall receive the same reward they mete out to their neighbors, if

they fail of heaven in degrees possible with the gospel law truth in the case.

25.] *That which he hath.*—That which he seems to have, as St Luke expounds it, viii. 18.

26.] *The kingdom.*—The preaching of the gospel (not of tradition Babel creeds of men), by which the spirit born church is gathered together and governed in spirit under God's blessing, doth produce its effects by a secret power of God in the hearts of believers, not yet spirit born, by way of the little spirit seed of immortality, love quickening milt on their soul spirit egg minds the instant they make a full surrender of blood life to the Lord, Prov. xxiii. 26: My son, give me thy heart, and let thine eyes observe my ways (not vain, frail man's ways, or creeds of men). Ps. cxix. 2: Blessed are they that keep his testimonies, and that seek him with the whole heart (1 Cor. iii. 6, 7).

27.] *Should sleep.*—Should follow his daily avocations, if not sinful, and take nature's accustomed rest.

28.] *Bringeth forth.*—Nothing is brought forth until the seed is put in, the use of the means requisite: first, the ground is plowed, to free it from foul weeds. Thus repentant tears plow the blood life heart; and then the seed, if sown on good ground, receives the aid of the ground: thus spirit love seed requires the aid of the heart; then the rains, which the spirit food from prayers of faith, descend; then the sunlight: thus the light of the spirit life Son illumines his gospel truth, and opens the soul's spirit egg mind new creature spirit life immortal product of Christ's good spirit life eternal seed, though small in its belief mind reception of gospel truth love of Christ in God, yet it quickly expands into an overflowing well of love that reflects Christ within.

30.] *Whereunto.*—There is nothing on earth that mortal eyes can see, ears hear, or blood life of nature soul spirit egg mind intellectual faculties comprehend, previous to spirit birth from God in Christ; whereunto it is possible to intelligently compare and illustrate spirit birth spirit life immortal. No nature blood life being can comprehend what spirit is. The soul spirit egg mind, in its unquickened into spirit life dormant state, its spirit ways are wholly beyond the blood life or animal nature, senses comprehensive to blood life tests. No mortal can taste, smell, hear, see, or feel a thought, that bursts forth from the soul spirit egg mind, nor the memory that retains that thought; yet the blood life body

knows and obeys those thoughts, in locomotion of the body, which, like an abject slave, the mind wills to go. If body life is in health vigor, away go the feet one after the other, and bear the body on through space until the desired place is reached; once started, like the heart blood pulsations and lung inflations, that require no aid from the mind will power thoughts.

33.] *As they were.*—Accommodating his illustrations to the small capacity of the hearers, he used these familiar similitudes to infuse the truth the more easily into humble and weak men, and the proud, self-esteeming earth educated, wise in their own eyes, he left to themselves, for all such reject spirit life wisdom, because they are Babel blood life wisdom popes, and reject, as freethinkers, what they cannot comprehend: and as they cannot comprehend any of the ways of God, nor even themselves, they believe in myth.

36.] *As he was.*—At that time having taken neither food nor rest.

38.] *Asleep.*—To try his disciples' faith in him, and to show them a sample of his power.

41.] *Feared.*—Which fear was soon turned to wonder and admiration of their master.

CHAPTER V.

2.] *A man.*—Matthew refers to two; it might have been another occurrence, or one of the men was the most afflicted and publicly noted as a wonderful bad case.

5.] *In the tombs.*—The devils, or unclean tare seed children of the devil, called unclean spirits, whose blood life bodies being dead, and rotted back to their native elements, they sought these mortals' minds; finding the cells unoccupied with spirit life light love honey, they filled in their dark spirit tare hatred anger.

7.] *I adjure thee.*—An impudent boldness of the devil, like his tare seed liars and swearers, in using the name of God.

9.] *What is.*—A question grounded upon the custom of evil spirits, to take upon them proper names when they enter mortal soul spirit egg minds intellect cells, or when they become their masters or ministers by demon covenants. Now Christ asketh

his name to make the greatness of this man's misery apparent, and to show the wonder of his deliverance. *Legion*.—A Roman name for a great company of armed men, several thousand.

10.] *Out of the country*.—Not that the devil should have more solace and recreation, or be better handled in one country than another, but because they have a superlative wicked and unlimited appetite to damage and annoy mankind; therefore they watch all opportunities to bring their malicious designs into effect, as a worm boring a tree until it is dead.

12.] *Send us*.—For the devil had not power enough of his own to enter, not even into an unreasonable creature, without God's leave, clearly showing the mortal will door, if closed against evil spirits and evil thoughts atmosphere, they cannot enter. And in like manner, if closed against the holy good Spirit, it cannot enter. Therefore (Rev. xxii. 17) whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

17.] *To depart*.—The inordinate love of worldly riches hinders us from receiving and obeying the spirit of Christ, which opposes the spirit of the world.

19.] *And tell them*.—For those that receive good things at God's hands ought to declare and publish them.

20.] *Marvel*.—Were astonished at the miracles which Christ Jesus did (Matt. iv. 25). Not only admiration, but also consideration of that power and virtue which was in him.

23.] *Point of death*.—Matthew saith she was dead, she was dying, when the synagogue ruler told Jesus, and before their arrival at the ruler's house she was dead. *Lay thy hands*.—This Jairus, which was a principal man in the synagogue, had not such faith as the centurion, which desired only that Christ should speak the word and his servant should be healed.

34.] *Thy faith*.—Such is his goodness that he credits our faith with part of the miracles, and to show us that faith is, as it were, the hand with which we received God's good gifts.

40.] *They laughed*.—Because they had no hope ever to see her alive again, and thus ridiculed.

43.] *Charged them*.—Because Christ would have mortals to regard his doctrines of a spirit birth immortal life beyond blood life's brief existence, as of infinitely more importance to them than his restoration to blood life pulsations for a brief season. *To eat*.—To show that she was really alive again.

CHAPTER VI.

1.] *Own country*.—Nazareth, where Mary and Joseph lived.

2.] *To teach*.—Showing that in God's spirit life immortal church there is nothing that could possibly compare in honorable employment with preaching truth wholly in union with God's Scripture revelations of spirit life and his book of nature.

3.] *The carpenter*.—From this we may plainly gather that Jesus' blood life body employment previous to his baptism in Jordan by John, his spiritual announcer, and witness of the union of the spirit baptism (Matt. xiii. 55). *Offended*.—They judged Jesus by his previous worldly employment, as like themselves but helpless, dependent mortal, and self-esteem in them rejected the spirit crowned Lamb of God, as their superior in intellectual development, as doth college-bred to-day.

5.] *He could*.—Not for want of any power in him, but for want of due disposition in the people, who were faithless; which disposition of faith, according to God's appointment, is requisite in him that draweth near unto God, to desire or receive any benefit at his hands: as the seed must be sown before any harvest can be gathered.

9.] *Sandals*.—A Greek word; and it was a kind of shoes, in fashion of soles laced, or with straps buckled over the foot (Acts xii. 8). *Two coats*.—Extra clothing.

13.] *Anointed*.—This ceremony had received the sanction of Christ, for a token of his grace and supernatural virtue, to do these miraculous cures for the body only, without having therein any particular relation to the soul, nor the salvation of it, by way of spirit birth (John iii. 5), but as revealed (James v. 14).

22.] *Danced*.—Clearly showing and teaching all Adam's sin lust begotten race that dancing is one of the devil's amusements of sin lust recreations of evil. Job xxi. 7: Wherefore do the wicked live? 11: Their children dance. Exod. xxxii. 19: He saw the calf and dancing. Isa. xiii. 21: Satyrs shall dance there. Amos vi. 5: Chant or dance to the sound of the viol music that the devil's children become intoxicated with and dance.

26.] *His oath's sake*.—The murderer tyrant makes conscience where he need not.

27.] *An executioner.*—A sergeant, or one of his soldiers, according to the custom of the Romans at that time, who commonly employed soldiers in capital executions.

41.] *Looked up.*—Showing us by that gesture that all good which man receives comes from above, from the bounty and goodness of our heavenly Father.

48.] *And would.*—He did as though he would have passed by them without stopping, to excite in them a greater wonder and desire for his help.

51.] *Beyond measure.*—Extremely; more than they were when they saw him walk upon the water.

52.] *Considered not.*—These miracles seemed new and strange unto them, because they had not well considered the former ones.

56.] *They might touch.*—It was likely that this was because they had seen the miracle already done in this manner (Matt. ix. 20; Acts xix. 12).

CHAPTER VII.

3.] *Oft.*—Go without eating often if there was no water for a thorough washing of their hands and fore-arms. *Of the elders.*—The governors of their men tradition church, or of the forefathers.

6.] *With their lips.*—In outward appearance and vocal noise of the tongues, guidance by evil self pride, thoughts of hypocrisy.

9.] *Full well.*—Their men tradition spiritual Babel creeds rejected, as do most tradition creeds of men to-day, the Scripture commands of God.

10.] *Moses said.*—Exod. xx. 12: God's commandments on Mount Sinai. Honor thy father and thy mother. This passage of Scripture proveth that the law is not abrogated, and all truly spirit born of Christ's spirit life immortal new creature life that pulsates love feel drawn supremely in love to their heavenly Father, and their blood life evil selfish nature being consumed by Christ's fire baptism, they feel purely their nature affection kindred blood ties drawn to father and mother.

11.] *By whatsoever.*—Pharisaical law, subverting, as do all mere men tradition Babel creed teachings, that all God's laws

might be broken rather than become a heretic to Roman Catholic, Greek, English, or any other church Babel creeds of traditions of men they had ignorantly pledged themselves to.

13.] *Word of God.*—All Babel confused spirit expounding tongues and creeds of men contrary to God's statute Scripture laws thereby make to their salvation the word of God of none effect through your traditions of men.

14.] *Hearken unto me.*—Go not to any theology college or creeds of men.

15.] *Can defile.*—The false creeds of men, that are handed down by creeds in various church sect organizations, that teach contrary to God's law. The words that come out of their mouths these are they that defile the man.

19.] *Purging.*—Leaving by its separation the nourishment of the body void of the dregs and excrement. The heart is not the receptacle of food.

20.] *Which cometh out.*—Whilst a man walketh after the lusts and appetites of his carnal nature corruption, and Babel creeds of man traditions that mock God's holy Scripture truths, and contradicts them, there is nothing cometh out of him but such things as savor of uncleanness and unholiness.

21.] *From within.*—The soul mind thoughts are evil continually of all the incorrigible wicked, and political sectarian creeds of men who walk not after the spirit birth teachings of God's Scriptures (John iii. 5) cannot obtain heaven.

22.] *Evil eye.*—Envy, slanderer, nicknamer of person or place. *Blasphemy.*—Profane swearers. *Foolishness.*—The folly of building a creed tower to get to heaven in.

23.] *Come from within.*—From the inward motion and inclination of the blood life heart, mortals have within themselves the root from whence all wickedness springeth; hereby we may see what natural depravity, corruption, and original sin is still in the nature descendant of Adam, who also reap his sentence, death.

24.] *Tyre and Sidon.*—Cities in Phœnicia, not far from Galilee. *Would have no man.*—To avoid the vanity of mortals' applause; which poor, vain mortals love.

29.] *For this.*—Seeing thou hast that disposition which is appointed by God in constant and everlasting faith, thou shalt receive the benefit thou desirest.

32.] *To put his hand.*—Which was an ordinary sign of the application of Christ's divine power.

33.] *Put his fingers.*—Gestures and actions which he used at his own pleasure, to show that he healed beyond all order of natural means, by his power from his omnipotent Father.

34.] *He sighed.*—In sign of his fervent charity and of his zeal in praying.

37.] *All things well.*—As if they had said, besides the other works which he hath wrought, this also shows that he doth all things well. There was no possibility for him to do ill.

CHAPTER VIII.

2.] *I have compassion.*—Christ provides for his household of faith when in all appearance they seem to be quite neglected and forsaken. *Nothing to eat.*—In those climates men are not so subject to hunger as in cold climates, and may continue longer without food, and yet not prejudice their bodies.

3.] *Faint.*—By reason of their too long fasting.

4.] *From whence.*—It is not possible with human means so great a multitude should find sufficient to satisfy them withal in the wilderness.

5.] *How many.*—These inquiries were to impress upon their recollection memory the number.

6.] *Gave thanks.*—Teaching us to be thankful for the blessings we daily receive at God's hands.

9.] *Sent.*—By the expanding power of God as in all life generation, he fed them and then journeyed.

10.] *Dalmanutha.*—A place near Bethsaida, between the Lake of Gennesaret and Mount Tabor.

12.] *Sighed.*—Having compassion pity for their self-willed obstinacy in adhering to men creeds.

21.] *How is it.*—He reproveth them for thinking he had spoken of material leaven, having seen with their eyes how easy it was for him to feed them sufficiently with corporal food.

22.] *Bethsaida.*—A city situated upon the Lake of Gennesaret in Galilee.

23.] *Had spit.*—To show the power of simple faith means.

25.] *He put.*—To show his disciples and all his spirit born holy children that he would bless the use of simple means to the healing

of body or soul, when the means were used in full faith belief that it would be done when it accorded with God's will glory: every word of God, by way of his spirit word Son, or prophets, or statute laws, are big with immortal expansion life, to the spirit born children of God especially.

29.] *Thou art the Christ.*—That was the then belief of the disciples of our Lord, spoken by Peter.

30.] *Charged them.*—Matt. xvi. 18 saith, And upon this rock (Christ) I will build my church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.

31.] *Suffer.*—He tells them plainly that his woman's seed spirit begotten blood life must suffer on the cross a sacrifice of blood life to open a spirit life door to soul minds spirit born.

35.] *Lose it.*—Whoever neglected spirit birth of the soul mind would very soon lose their blood life by death that drew nearer each pulsation. *Shall save it.*—For the sacrifice of mortal blood life, he shall obtain, by way of spirit egg mind, spirit impregnation new creature in Christ Jesus (2 Cor. v. 17) life immortal being.

36.] *Gain the whole world.*—By this is signified that the spirit birth salvation of our soul is to be placed infinitely above all earth blood life's transitory things.

38.] *Shall be ashamed.*—Who by reason of having to renounce evil society and amusements, or natural hatred persecutions of the incorrigible wicked, whom they reprove for their vile, wicked works and ways, or their vile, wicked slanders, and nicknames and annoyances at the peril of blood life, if for God's glory, or make open profession of belief in a spirit birth experimental religion.

CHAPTER IX.

1.] *With power.*—To bear Christ's message to the churches on earth. Phil. iv. 13: I can do all through Christ which strengtheneth me.

2.] *Transfigured.*—Changed from nature body of Jesus' blood life development to the development of the fullness of his spirit word sonship divine spirit life.

3.] *Became shining.*—He representeth his divine majesty unto

them so far as they were capable to conceive of it; poor blood life bodies could not endure it.

4.] *Talking*.—Clearly showing that Moses and Elias were there.

7.] *This is my*.—He alone is the truth, the life, the light, the way.

9.] *Of man*.—Like all other miracles, the flesh body of Jesus was not to see corruption rottenness, like all lust-begotten bodies of Adam's race do. (Ps. xvi. 10.)

10.] *Should mean*.—That same trouble that pervades all Adam's race in a state of nature unspirit born to understand a spiritual resurrection, not being able, nor are they now more than at the time spoken of to comprehend spirit life resurrection.

12.] *Be set at nought*.—Dan. ix. 26: And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself (27: He shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease): signifieth the lowest degree of Christ's humiliation in his death of blood life. (Phil. ii. 7.)

13.] *As it is written*.—Isa. xl. 3: The voice of him (John the Baptist, called Elias) that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord.

19.] *Answereth him*.—Faithless, the disciples lacked as all do at this day, faith to turn out the evil.

23.] *All things*.—All things in accordance with God's glory and holy will; no holy one asks more.

24.] *Unbelief*.—Help, Lord. John xv. 5: For without me ye can do nothing.

25.] *Charge thee*.—As if he had said, Though thou hast not obeyed my disciples, yet my power thou canst not withstand.

29.] *This kind*.—Teaching clearly that unclean spirits vary in power, as doth the devil's tare seed children.

31.] *For he taught*.—It appears by this that Jesus did begin to withdraw himself from the frequent company of men, and from the other parts of his office and actions of his life, to prepare himself for the sacrifice of his woman's seed blood life holy, for the redemption from soul death of all who willed to become immortal, and to dispose his disciples to it.

32.] *Understood not*.—Because they were still possessed with an opinion that Christ should temporarily reign. The very mention of his death was so strange to them that they could not comprehend the meaning of it; and much less if they had fully known

his immortality, spirit life eternal connection with the eternal living Spirit God.

33.] *What was it.*—Christ would root the sin of earthly blood life's official station desires out of their hearts.

35.] *Shall be last.*—Or let the man who aspires and labors to be made pope, if he could, remain in lay humility. No man is fit for any office until God, or his fellow mortals, call him.

37.] *Such children.*—All spirit born holy are children of God; though a century of blood life age has passed over his body, he is but a helpless spirit child of God infant; in new creature spirit birth life from God in Christ. (Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5.) *Receiveth not.*—Jesus speaketh thus, because that he was mediator. He referred all to his Father, and to his glory and service.

38.] *Saw one.*—It was probably one who had believed the truths of Christ's doctrines and faith, and was moved by God's secret inspiration to do miracles, though he did not follow with the disciples all the teachings daily with the Lord. The disciples, like the different sects of to-day, claim they alone were the church and the officials, exclusive of the Lord Jesus Christ, and their say alone must be the church creed. Christ plainly told them they were wrong, and should use no sectarian authority, as if they were the vicegerents alone of God, as if that power was exclusively theirs. *In thy name.*—Calling upon thee, and interposing thy authority.

40.] *Is on our part.*—May be a profitable instrument in God's work; or, in this furious hatred which the world beareth me and my church, you ought to hold it as a favor and gain, if any one be not wholly against us. He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord. Then let all churches on earth who believe in experimental religion, spirit birth, new creature life (2 Cor. v. 17) unite as one, and proclaim to the world one faith creed, the Scriptures: and one name, children of God.

42.] *Little ones.*—Matt. xviii. 3: Except ye be converted, and become as little children (John iii. 5, spirit birth; 2 Cor. v. 17, new creature in Christ Jesus, Gal. vi. 15), ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. *Hanged.*—Better be dead.

43.] *Thy hand offend thee.*—Not God. This is a form of speech whereby he means that we should rather cut off all things that might hinder us from serving him, than employ them in any thing that is evil. *Into hell.*—Into Gehenna, death.

44.] *Worm dieth not.*—A parabolic emblem to show that death

of the incorrigible wicked soul, or its tare seed unclean spirit product, would be eternal death. The death worm, or fire death punishment.

49.] *For every.*—He gives a reason for cutting off all enticement to sin; for as every offering under the law was to be salted (Lev. ii. 13), so every Christian, to present himself unto God in a living sacrifice, ought to be purged from all corruption by the Holy Ghost, who hath the virtue of fire (Matt. iii. 11). 1 Cor. iii. 13: The fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is. 19: For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. Then do not seek heaven's way at college.

50.] *Is good.*—Spirit love is the only salt that can save souls from death.

CHAPTER X.

1.] *Farther side.*—When he had passed Galilee he came into that part of Judea which is beyond Jordan, where John the Baptist first preached truth unalloyed.

3.] *Moses.*—Christ hath a relation to the seventh commandment, of not committing adultery.

6.] *From the beginning.*—For the rectifying of such an abuse, he remits them God's ordinance; which ought to be always received for a law guide to truth.

10.] *In the house.*—Christ's disciples, not well understanding his answer, desire to be further instructed in that same matter.

11.] *Put away.*—That divorceth himself from her, unless it be for adultery (Matt. xix. 9).

12.] *If a woman.*—The law of God makes no mention of divorces undertaken by women. A thing which was unheard of by the people of God, and contrary to all modesty and honesty.

14.] *Kingdom of God.*—Seeing God denies them not salvation for their incapacities, men for the same reason should not deny them baptism, which is much less.

15.] *Shall not.*—John iii. 3: Jesus said, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

16.] *And blessed them.*—That is, commended them to his heavenly Father's protection.

18.] *Me good.*—Christ would show them that his goodness was

not like that which is ascribed to mortals, which is vain and false outside appearances.

21.] *Loved him.*—He showed him some signs of favor, as congratulating him for this outward disciplinary acquirement; not in any way approving of his pride and hypocrisy, not being contented with his outward action. Neither that he dissembled against his thought, but in a kind of mild irony and graceful contempt of his vanity.

24.] *Trust in riches.*—The spirit born holy child of God trusts wholly in God, and clearly understands that they are helpless as a nature child, dependent upon their parents or grown providers of food and raiment. Thus the dear Redeemer clearly states the case. John xv. 5: Without me ye can do nothing. 6: If a man abide not in me he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

27.] *Are possible.*—God can give a man such grace that he may not place any affections on the wealth he possesses, but hold them as a servant of God, to whom all gold and silver belong.

30.] *Shall receive.*—He intimates that those small possessions of earthly goods the spirit born children of God possess with peace of mind are better for them than a hundred-fold larger amount with unbelief of the Scripture truths of the gospel, infinitely.

32.] *Amazed.*—By reason of his frequent predictions, by which he foretold his approaching sufferings and death in Jerusalem, whither they saw him going.

34.] *Mock him.*—Of the Gentiles, after the Jews shall deliver him over unto them.

35.] *We would that.*—This example shows how ambitious the flesh is of earthly honors.

40.] *It is prepared.*—The blood life body soul mind of Jesus, that was in unity of love infinite with the spirit word Son of God, disclaimed that it was his to give distinction in the spirit world. Blood life authority all ended on earth.

42.] *Which are accounted.*—Who, though they ought to acknowledge themselves to be God's servants for the good and profit of the people, do attribute unto themselves, through immoderate presumption, an absolute power over them.

43.] *Shall be your.*—Or, let him be your minister.

44.] *Servant.*—The pope, instead of lording it with a triplicate crown, should be as a boot-blacker.

45.] *Many*.—Clearly stating the case for many, not for all Adam's rebel race, as madly taught by fanatics.

46.] *As he went out*.—He went in and out of Jericho, and perhaps many times healed and restored to sight many, but the case here spoken of was a noted case, Bartimeus.

52.] *Thy faith*.—All our blessings come from God, and are received by faith; sow and reap.

CHAPTER XI.

1.] *Bethphage*.—A village near the Mount of Olives, about a mile from Jerusalem.

4.] *The colt*.—See Matt. xxi. 5.

6.] *Let them go*.—Wherein Christ's power was shown, to which these men were obedient.

9.] *Name of the Lord*.—Many came in their own names, but Jesus came in the name of the Lord, which sent him for the salvation of mankind.

12.] *He was hungry*.—Herein subjecting himself to man's infirmities of nature blood life from the woman's seed.

14.] *No man eat*.—Showing thereby his displeasure with those who make a great show of sanctity without any fruits of holiness or church increase (John xv. 5). Such preachers are self called, men commissioned, barren trees, with green leaves but no spirit fruit.

15.] *Began to cast out*.—Christ showed his disapproval that the place where God had permitted his name to be used should be so polluted through the priests.

16.] *Any vessel*.—That was not consecrated, nor for the service of the temple, but for these merchants and other men's uses, which was a profanation (Neh. xiii. 7, 8).

17.] *Of all nations*.—Wherever a house is dedicated to God's service, prayers ascend to God therefrom, if there are any spirit born holy worshippers therein.

18.] *Destroy him*.—Secretly, and by some ambush.

22.] *In God*.—Such a faith as he every way requireth in all parts and qualities, and such a one as he engendereth in believers by his spirit birth life eternal.

24.] *What things soever ye desire, when ye pray.*—In love faith. By this he gives no toleration to ask whatsoever shall come in our fancy; for prayer must be regulated by faith love, and faith must not wander out of the limits of the word of promise conditions. Satan, or one of his unclean spirits, may throw into the mind hopper all the surrounding affairs of political aspirants full of sin, to grind out voters among the hearers. Such petitions are to mortal ears, not to God.

28.] *What authority.*—Christ's works testified by what authority he did those things; but the eyes of their hearts' blood life were so blind with self creed traditions of men, malice, and envy, that they could not see the truth way of spirit birth holiness love.

CHAPTER XII.

2.] *A servant.*—Servants the prophets. The Lord sent to his people sometimes one prophet, sometimes many. We may therefore by this account of one understand them all.

5.] *Many others.*—The goodness of God strives against the wickedness of mortals' ingratitude.

9.] *Destroy.*—These stiff-necked governors, who, through covetousness and ambition, had opposed themselves against him.

10.] *Not read.*—Ps. cxviii. 22: The stone which the builders (of God's spiritual temple) refused is become the headstone of the corner. 23: This is the Lord's doing. *The head.*—The strength.

11.] *The Lord's doing.*—It is the Lord's ordinance which is repugnant to all unspirit born, unholy.

18.] *Asked him.*—Sadducees say there is no resurrection. The absurd Pharisee doctrine of the resurrection of rotten bodies they rejected as mockery of God. Matt. v. 20: Except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

19.] *Moses.*—Because his writings were held in great esteem among the Jewish people.

24.] *Therefore err.*—Christ by his demand declareth that the original of error and false opinions proceeds from despising and being ignorant of the Scriptures, following traditions of men.

25.] *But are.*—Gal. iii. 28: There is neither male nor female; for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. Clearly showing human bodies are not raised. Spirits, angels, and all immortal beings are spirit children of God, and without sexual distinctions.

27.] *He is not.*—Clearly and fully denies the Pharisee doctrine of blood life corruption matter resurrection. He is not a God of the dead, but of the living,—spirit born of his spirit life immortal seed in Christ. *Of the living.*—Therefore those must live still that are spirit born immortal life beings. John xi. 25, 26: Jesus said, I am the resurrection and the life.

28.] *Asked him.*—Tempting him (Matt. xxii. 35). He speaks as if the gospel lessened Mosaic law of God.

29.] *The first.*—The chief and most excellent, to which the rest are added.

30.] *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God.*—Clearly teaching love to be the whole life pulsation of all spirit born holy beings in heaven; no others can enter there.

31.] *Thou shalt.*—Imperative statute command law of God on Mount Sinai.

34.] *Thou art.*—The kingdom of grace was near him in the gospel love truths which he had uttered, by which he re-established his kingdom in salvation of all spirit born of love.

38.] *Long clothing.*—He condemns their love of the long clothing; Episcopal and Catholic priests; vainglory.

41.] *The treasury.*—There were two kinds of offerings in the temples: the one of money for the repairing of the building, and to buy the ordinary offerings for sacrifices and other uses, 2 Kings xii. 9. But in the people's court was a chest where every one cast in what money they pleased. The people's court chest is all any church should have.

43.] *Cast more in.*—The Lord esteems our gifts according to our affection in giving.

44.] *Of her want.*—Of her exceeding small store. (2 Cor. viii. 2.)

CHAPTER XIII.

2.] *There shall not be left.*—Christ had foretold his disciples of the destruction of the temple.

5.] *Take heed.*—He forewarns them of that which was more needful for them than what they asked.

6.] *I am Christ.*—The Messias, the king of the church, which popes mock; they are antichrist.

8.] *Kingdom against kingdom.*—Because that men would not willingly yield themselves obedient to the gospel; therefore without spirit birth love hatred wars would continue.

11.] *Take no thought.*—He speaks this that they should be assured of his assistance, and that he would prompt them what to answer, lest they rely upon their own strength and fall.

25.] *Stars of heaven.*—This shows that there shall be a perfect change of the whole course of nature. Heb. i. 10: Thou Lord in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the work of thy hands. 11: They shall perish, but thou remainest; and they shall wax old as doth a garment.

27.] *Of heaven.*—A popular term. For to the eye the heavens seem to terminate the earth round about (Matt. xxiv. 30).

30.] *This generation.*—The generation living when the great changes of the heavens occur.

31.] *Pass away.*—Rev. xx. 11: And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was no place found for them. 2 Pet. iii. 10: The earth also, and the works that are therein, shall be burnt up.

32.] *Neither the Son.*—The Son of man, the woman's seed blood life as man.

33.] *Watch.*—Do not grow weary of your brief earth life watching and prayers of faith.

34.] *Far journey.*—The heaven of heaven's throne of God is millions of miles to us unknown.

35.] *At even.*—He uttereth a variety of parables, to impress on the mind the responsible truths.

37.] *Watch.*—Because our whole life is a continual warfare; therefore it stands us in hand to watch.

CHAPTER XIV.

1.] *Passover*.—According to the law, the fourteenth day of the first month, March, at evening; but this year of Christ's suffering it was put off until the sabbath day, which was the following day.

4.] *Indignation*.—Judas was a lover of silver, and never satisfied, and a saving miser.

8.] *Come aforehand*.—But now Christ Jesus hath no more need of such anointing, or the like office.

12.] *When they*.—The same day as, according to law, they were to kill the lamb, though the Jews by tradition did transfer the passover to the day following.

22.] *Is my body*.—That is, even as bread and wine are ordained for the nourishment of the body, and preservation of blood life; so my body that shall be broken, to shed out the blood life for you, is the purchaser of immortal spirit life pardon, and spirit life immortal food, for your spirit born new creature life (Rom. viii. 9). It cannot be nourished without spiritual food.

23.] *All drank of it*.—His church must all partake of it. But pagan popery priests say drink ye all of it, and then drink me all of it, refusing it to the laity.

36.] *Abba*.—It was a Syriac word used in affectionate tender prayers to God (Rom. viii. 15; Gal. iv. 6).

38.] *Is ready*.—Though you be willing spiritually, yet the weakness of your flesh will not suffer you to do it.

41.] *It is enough*.—Showing them what John, xv. 5, confirms: Without me ye can do nothing.

43.] *One of the twelve*.—This added to the horrid treachery murder sin of Judas.

45.] *Master*.—Some original copies have it, Master, well be it unto thee.

50.] *They all*.—All his disciples.

54.] *Afar off*.—Peter begins to abate much of what he had formerly boasted.

61.] *Blessed*.—Of God, to whom all glory and praise is due. A name used by the Jews.

62.] *Of power*.—Of the glorious God, according to the custom of the Jews common then.

68.] *He denied*.—Peter had quickly forgotten those gallant promises he had made unto Christ. Let us then take notice of

our weakness, that we may learn not to depend on our own strength.

72.] *He wept.*—Or, he went out and wept. The Pope of Rome should do likewise.

CHAPTER XV.

7.] *In the insurrection.*—He seems here to intimate some late and notable insurrection.

21.] *Of Alexander.*—They were known and famous persons in the church at that time.

23.] *Wine.*—This wine was given to condemned men by a certain act of mercy, to dull and stupefy their senses.

24.] *Casting lots.*—The soldiers fulfilled ignorantly what was foretold, Ps. xxii. 18.

25.] *The third hour.*—Nine o'clock in the morning.

39.] *Centurion.*—Spake in spirit truth language, this man was the Son of God; only begotten sacrificial lamb of God to close all types sacrificed from Abel to that day.

42.] *Because it was.*—It would seem that this was the occasion which moved Joseph to make such haste, by reason of night drawing on, because at that time began the preparation of the feast.

43.] *Counsellor.*—Senator, or member of the great council of seventy-two. The kingdom spirit life immortal kingdom, after blood life probation's close on earth.

CHAPTER XVI.

1.] *Had bought.*—In the three last hours of the day in which our Lord was crucified (Luke xxiii. 56). *Anoint.*—Embalm like the Egyptians, where they by tradition received such false ideas from in regard to the dead corruption body resurrection to life, which God's providence would not suffer the mockery to be perpetrated on Jesus' body.

5.] *Into the sepulchre.*—Cut out in the rock in the manner of a vault. *A young man.*—An angel, thus clothed in human form for the occasion, for angels have a spirit body that passes through the air with the fleetness of light; flesh bodies would be in atoms, as if shot from a cannon, with any such flight as angels take (Dan. ix. 21).

7.] *And Peter.*—He makes a special mention of Peter, who was in deep repentance trouble, for he most grossly sinned, and therefore needed the greater comfort.

8.] *Neither said they.*—They stayed not to talk with any one, but ran in haste to tell the disciples.

11.] *Believed not.*—The disciples had quickly forgotten what Christ had told them of his resurrection.

12.] *In another form.*—Christ could change the body form in a moment at will.

14.] *Appeared.*—This was upon the eleventh day after his resurrection. *At meat.*—After the meal, continuing their talk and holy conversation (John xx. 19).

16.] *Believeth.*—John v. 44: How can ye believe, which receive honor one of another, and seek not the honor that cometh from God only?

17.] *These signs.*—Showing clearly the weakness of all faith on earth (Matt. vi. 30).

19.] *Had spoken.*—To many, and on numerous occasions (Acts i. 2, 3). *Received up.*—St. Mark mentions in short that which St. Luke gives a full description of as it appeared to him (xxiv. 50). *Sat.*—At the right hand of honor in heaven's spirit glory.

20.] *The Lord working.*—He means that these works were the true and proper works of God.

LUKE.

CHAPTER I.

15.] *In the sight.*—In God's service and esteem. *Neither wine.*—Being consecrated to God as a Nazarene (Num. vi. 3). *Shall be filled.*—He shall be abundantly endowed with the gifts of the Holy Ghost.

16.] *Shall he turn.*—He shall be an instrument of their conversion by his preaching (Acts xxvi. 18).

17.] *Before him.*—The Messiah, who is the Lord God of Israel, clearly stated in this verse.

19.] *That stand.*—As God's minister and messenger. *Am sent.*—I came not of my own volition; I came in obedience to the command of the supreme Sovereign of the universe.

20.] *Thou shalt be dumb.*—A miraculous sign to confirm what he had said.

24.] *Hid herself.*—Until the miracle became certain, lest the scorn of mortals should make her doubt.

25.] *Thus hath.*—Words of admiration and joy after she was certain of her conception. *My reproach.*—Because barrenness was accounted a dishonorable thing among the Jews.

28.] *Favored.*—Thou, of all Adam's race, art exalted and blest to thy race, who should call thee blessed in honor. Thy seed shall triumph over the devil that hath the power of death. Heb. ii. 14: And through his sacrificial blood all spirit born holy become immortal. *Blessed art thou.*—One which hath received an undeserved favor from God.

32.] *Shall be called.*—The only begotten Son of God. John i. 14: The word. Gen. iii. 15: The seed of the woman should bruise the serpent's head.

34.] *How shall.*—A question out of pure admiration, and a desire to be instructed in a necessary truth to be known, and not to be apprehended by mortal understanding from nature. Gen. iii. 15 gives the key to the mystery. *Seeing.*—The holy Virgin thus speaks because the angel had spoken to her of Jesus' conception as of a thing which should soon come to pass, and her marriage with Joseph might be deferred (Matt. i. 18).

35.] *Overshadow thee.*—A figurative kind of speech to signify

the secret power of the Holy Ghost in this work. As the eggs laid by the female fish in the still water are passed over by the male with milt quickening resurrection life, thus the word of God in Eden (Gen. iii. 15) passed upon the woman's seed egg of the virgin, called overshadowing spirit void of nature elements. The infidel fool that says in his heart there is no God limits also the power of God to what he has created.

37.] *Nothing*.—All things consistent with God's attributes, holy and infinite; he cannot lie.

38.] *Behold thee*.—She consented to God's will, and subjected herself unto it obediently.

39.] *The hill country*.—It was part of the land belonging to the tribe of Judah (Josh. xv. 48). *Into a city*.—Hebron, a city appointed for the priests, such as Zacharias was (Josh. xxi. 11).

48.] *He hath regarded*.—That is, hath taken pity upon the wretched condition and estate that I, a descendant of King David, was brought into; and hath not disdained my poverty, but hath been pleased to choose me for a vessel of grace in this great work of salvation of souls. Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul shall make her boast in the Lord: the humble shall hear thereof and be glad.

50.] *His mercy*.—After sentence of death had been pronounced upon all Adam and Eve's race.

52.] *The mighty*.—Which are raised high in earthly might and power.

53.] *The hungry*.—Matt. v. 6: Blessed are they that hunger after righteousness (John vi. 35).

54.] *Hath holpen*.—Or, hath taken into his protection; or, hath raised up from utter helplessness.

55.] *As he spake*.—As he promised to all nations of the earth who complied with faith's conditions.

58.] *Her neighbors*.—All who had read the Scripture prophecies of the prophet Isaiah. vii. 14: A virgin shall conceive and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel.

60.] *Not so*.—It is likely that Zacharias had told Elizabeth in writing of the name John, given by the angel.

64.] *His tongue loosed*.—And he praised God, not only confessing the goodness of God towards him, but also to show that he had been justly punished for his unbelief.

66.] *The hand*.—God's apparent favor and protection were with him, and there appeared in him an extraordinary divine virtue actuating all his surroundings.

67.] *Prophesied*.—He spake by divine inspiration of the mysteries of the church's salvation, which as yet were not fully revealed.

68.] *Blessed be*.—He begins with thanksgiving. *Visited*.—He hath in effect shown the care he hath taken of them by a new and singular effect of his grace.

69.] *Raised up*.—1 Sam. ii. 1; Ps. lxxxix. 5, 18: He hath given his spirit born children cause to triumph by reason of the spiritual victory which the Messiah hath had over his enemies.

71.] *That we*.—Spirit born holy should be saved from our enemies, through the power of Christ.

72.] *The mercy*.—He refers back to the promises of God as recorded in the Scriptures being fulfilled.

73.] *The oath*.—The promise which he made to Abraham (Gen. xxii. 16).

76.] *Shalt be called*.—Thou shalt not only be so indeed, but shalt be acknowledged to be such by public testimony and acknowledgment.

77.] *By the remission*.—He shows that salvation is preceded by the forgiveness of sins of all spirit born of God in Christ.

78.] *Dayspring*.—Jesus Christ, the true Sun of righteousness (Mal. iv. 2).

79.] *In darkness*.—He sets here before our eyes the state of human generations.

CHAPTER II.

1.] *Cæsar Augustus*.—This was the second Roman emperor who had brought the land of Judea under obedience to Rome. *All the world*.—A popular kind of speech, the whole Roman empire.

3.] *Into his own*.—This ought to be especially understood of the Jews, who, by their ancient divisions, had their tribes, nations and families, with their inheritances, in certain designated cities, in which they held their freedom of being citizens thereof, and of community there, though they dwelt elsewhere.

4.] *Nazareth*.—Where Joseph and Mary's habitation was; though their ancestors came from Bethlehem, where they were

citizens. *Of David.*—The city where he was born, and where the ancient seat of the family was (1 Sam. xvi. 1; John vii. 42). *Bethlehem.*—A house of bread.

7.] *In a manger.*—Of the stable of that inn where they were lodged. In which inn all other places were taken up, by reason of the great concourse of people, either by such as first came, or were by the hotel-keeper more esteemed than those pious Nazarenes.

9.] *The glory.*—Divine and heavenly light which God's angel messenger spirits are clothed with, showing that they belong to heaven's angelic children of God and light.

13.] *Heavenly host.*—An ordinary name of the holy angels.

14.] *Peace.*—Reconciliation with God, followed with his love and with a sweet harmonious concord amongst them. *Towards.*—Or, amongst men.

15.] *Which is come to pass.*—The faith of the shepherds is here commended.

19.] *Pondered them.*—Examining, gathering together and comparing them one with the other, to ground herself more and more in knowledge and faith (Acts xvii. 11).

21.] *For the circumcising.*—Jesus should be circumcised for the same reasons for which he also would be baptized, to fulfill the ceremonial emblem law of spiritual heart blood life circumcision in spirit birth children of God. *Of the angel.*—They do not do it unwittingly or by chance, but by the Lord's command.

24.] *A pair.*—Which was the offering of the poorest sort of people (Lev. xii. 8).

25.] *Devout.*—Or, religious and fearing God. *Waiting.*—For, at that time, the minds of believers were raised up, and attentively looking for the approaching coming of the promised Messias.

26.] *Christ.*—The Greek name answerable to the Hebrew name Messiah, that is, anointed and consecrated, namely, for the eternal King and High Priest (Ps. ii. 6; Isa. lxi. 1; Dan. ix. 24).

27.] *The parents.*—Reputed by the world or unspirit born unenlightened by spirit birth wisdom from heaven's spirit clime.

28.] *Blessed God.*—For the benefits he received from him, by the presence of the promised Messiah (Heb. vii. 3).

29.] *Lord, now.*—Even at this time that thou hast accomplished thy promise unto me, and that I have with mine eyes seen the Saviour of the world, I die happy and contented to leave

blood life, and in spirit body life desire to be forever with the Lord (Gen. xlv. 30).

32.] *To lighten*.—Or, which must be revealed to all nations.

33.] *Marveled*.—Not but that they perfectly knew it by the angel's revelation; but because they saw his light was also communicated to others, and was spread abroad.

34.] *This child is set*.—Or sent; that is to say, God hath established him to be the fundamental rock of salvation to all those that shall receive him by a lively faith, and spirit birth of his good seed.

35.] *A sword*.—Such shall the opposition be that thou who art the nature seed mother must prepare thyself to be pierced with extreme grief and anguish. *That the thoughts*.—That is, God shall suffer all this to pass to the end that by the preaching of the gospel may be discovered the impiety of the rebellion of God's open enemies, that they may be utterly annihilated.

38.] *In that instant*.—By the providence of God, and being moved by the Holy Ghost.

39.] *They had*.—Viz., Joseph and Mary. *Returned to Nazareth*.—After they had first fled with the child into Egypt (Matt. ii. 13), or soon after reaching Nazareth they fled.

40.] *Waxed strong*.—Whereby the spirit word of God creation son spirit power was manifest in unison with the child Jesus, whose woman's seed blood life body grew strong and beautiful as the sacrificial lamb of God.

44.] *In the company*.—This shows that a great multitude went together.

47.] *Answers*.—Truthful reasons that he gave.

49.] *Wist ye not*.—Having heard so many witnesses of me,—the angel, Simeon, Anna the prophetess. *My Father's business*.—Spiritual life immortal business of the greatest possible momentousness to you, as well as all Adam's race now under the irrevocable sentence curse of death of blood life; and I am the soul spirit egg mind intellectual spirit life immortal mediator between my spirit Father and poor doomed mortals, to whom by way of the alliance of my spirit birth spirit life immortal love pulsating seed, with Adamic nature woman's seed, a narrow way through my blood life sacrifice to God's infinite holy justice flame that consumes the life of all unspirit born unholy beings: I haste, even before the maturity of nature blood life, to the appointed years of my ministerial priesthood, to arouse the men tradition preachers to a

sense of their duties, being impelled forward by my love infinite soul pulsations of mind and the magnitude of my office of mediatorial sacrifice.

52.] *In favor.*—God's gifts and graces, and his loving favor to Christ over all mortals on earth were daily apparent, and mortals were pleased with his wisdom.

CHAPTER III.

6.] *The salvation.*—Jesus Christ, in whom alone is spirit birth life immortal seed salvation of the world.

11.] *Let him impart.*—Showing his piety by acts of pure charity towards his neighbors.

14.] *Falsely.*—Vexing him by cunning or malice, as nicknaming persons or places, and falsely slandering for crimes or acts never done by him: do no wrong to any.

15.] *Were in expectation.*—Concerning the coming and manifestation of the Messiah, that firm belief being rooted in the minds of the people that the time was come: as well in regard to the prophecies, and the fullness of time, as by reason of some secret inspiration of God.

23.] *About thirty.*—At which age the priests began to enter into service (Num. iv. 3, 35–47), which our Lord did imitate, who was the great and spiritual life immortal priest of truth and verity.

CHAPTER IV.

1.] *By the Spirit.*—By the spirit word creation power son of Jehovah God, or by the Holy Ghost, by which he was always accompanied, and he was the Holy Ghost.

4.] *Every word.*—The decrees and wisdom of God, who by his power doth preserve and govern all things. Deut. viii. 3: Man doth not live by bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord doth man live.

6.] *Delivered.*—So the devil is constrained to confess that he

hath no power over the world, only as God permits him to be the prince of his worshippers.

13.] *For a season.*—Until he openly set upon him, and assaulted him at the time of his passion (Luke xxii. 53; John xiv. 30). For the devil never wholly desists, and the respite he gives is but to return with greater force.

14.] *In the power.*—Carried in his voyage by the spirit word son power, his Father, as by the same creation spirit word son of God power he was sustained in the desert.

16.] *And stood up.*—It was the fashion among the Jews that if any one did come to their ecclesiastical meetings, who was known to have some gift of understanding the holy Scripture, which was read every sabbath day (Acts xiii. 27; xv. 21), they would entreat him to make them partake of it, for their common edification. (Acts xiii. 15.)

17.] *He had opened.*—Unfolded; for books in those days were made of rolls of parchment, or some like material, rolled up about a stick.

18.] *The Spirit.*—The Spirit of the Lord is upon me. The spirit word creation power spirit Son of Jehovah almighty eternal sovereign supreme God of the universe, called the Lord God of Israel.

21.] *This day.*—This is a summary of the Lord's sermon, showing that those things which had been spoken by the prophet, were now accomplished by the gospel which he had begun to preach unto them.

22.] *The gracious.*—Divinely pleasing love words attracted their soul minds, by a secret drawing of love's attraction persuasions as proceeding from God, by the Holy Ghost in him.

23.] *Physician.*—An ordinary proverb, meaning respect those that are nearest thee, more than strangers, for thou hast wrought many miracles in other places, and here thou workest none; whereupon thou art not here so much honored, nor accepted of, as thou art elsewhere; which things they speak because he wrought no miracle in Nazareth. (Mark vi. 5.)

24.] *Verily I say.*—Christ sheweth his countrymen that their unbelief hindered miracles being shown unto them.

25.] *I tell you.*—These examples are to show that God oftentimes, in the communicating of his graces, prefers strangers and such as are far from him, before those that are near and domestic unto his word, if they prove unworthy. *Shut up.*—Without rain.

26.] *Sarepta*.—A city lying between Tyre and Sidon.

27.] *Naaman*.—This Naaman, a rich man and a stranger, acknowledged God's power through the ministry of Elias, of whom the people of Israel had but little esteem.

28.] *Filled with wrath*.—They took this for blasphemy, for they were sensible that Christ threatened the grace of God should be transported elsewhere.

30.] *Passing*.—Restrained their power to move against him ; or, made himself invisible to their sight.

31.] *Capernaum*.—Christ conversed so often in this city that some called it his city.

36.] *What a word*.—How powerful and operative, in a moment it produceth its effects.

38.] *They besought*.—His disciples, or those of Peter's household.

39.] *He stood*.—He came and stood nigh where she lay, rebuked the fever by his will. Having command and power over it, as over all evil spirits or diseases.

40.] *Healed them*.—Whereby he evidently showed that it was he whom God had promised for a Saviour and deliverer.

41.] *Suffered*.—Permitted them not to witness that he was the Christ, as many wicked professors do.

42.] *Stayed him*.—The zeal and great affection of this people shall condemn all lukewarm professors.

CHAPTER V.

1.] *To hear*.—These people being ill-instructed by the scribes and Pharisees, who had with their Babel men tradition creed falsified the law, desired to understand the pure truth out of the mouth of the Saviour Christ ; and not men-traditions false, as also now taught by many men-tradition Babel creeds of men's manufacture, who take glory and titles to themselves as if they were wise above God's gospel truths.

5.] *At thy word*.—Peter herein showed a willing obedience.

8.] *Depart*.—Peter finding in Christ a divine and extraordinary virtue, did presently feel within himself the natural terrors and

apprehensions of the soul of a sinful man when God's spirit-power draws near to him in demonstration of his gospel truths, which terrors, being overcome by faith in his grace, are changed into an humble reverence and adoration.

9.] *He was astonished.*—The sense of God's presence amazed him. John xv. 5: Without me ye can do nothing.

13.] *And touched.*—The allegory or spiritual signification taken from hence gives us to understand that the leprosy and corruption rooted in our nature cannot be cured except touched by the spirit power of God, in Christ's spirit word that impregnates the soul spirit egg mind intellect with quickening immortal life from God, and lights up the new creature spirit born with life's eternal lamp, with spirit love oil that expands and burns on through the ceaseless ages of eternity; pulsating love.

14.] *Tell no man.*—This prohibition, and others of the like nature, were because the proper time of his being revealed was not yet come.

17.] *The power.*—God, whose actions are free in a superlative degree, would show his power in delivering them there through Christ, who also told them so. (Acts xi. 21.)

20.] *Thy sins.*—He toucheth first the principal cause and origin of all our plagues and diseases.

24.] *I say unto thee.*—I command thee as having power to do it.

32.] *The righteous.*—Such as are puffed up with a vain ascribing of righteousness to themselves, who are unspirit born, and filled with self-applauding righteousness, are not righteous; they need a physician.

35.] *Shall they fast.*—Then shall they have cause to fast, and be sorrowful through the afflictions and straits which they must suffer.

38.] *New wine.*—Beautiful illustration. The old Adamic body, with the old Adamic blood life, lust begotten old nature Adam of the earth earthy, is not the receptacle of spirit love life immortal pulsations. But the new creature in Christ Jesus is the bottle to hold the new heavenly spirit love holy pure wine of heaven's vintage; Christ being the vine, and his father the husbandman. John xv. 5: I am the vine. (2 Cor. v. 17.)

CHAPTER VI.

1.] *The second*.—Levit. xxiii. 15, 16: At which time wheat was ripe and ripening; there called corn.

4.] *Not lawful*.—Otherwise, then at such times as necessity required it to be done.

5.] *Is Lord*.—Having power to measure or moderate or abolish the Jewish sabbath.

7.] *An accusation*.—As a transgressor of the law and contemner of days of rest.

9.] *Is it lawful*.—Christ would first convince them of their malice before he healed the party. *Destroy it*.—Let it perish; for he that suffereth his neighbor to perish, when it lieth in his power to save him without periling his own life, slayeth him.

12.] *All night*.—Secret prayers alone, like Jesus taught, if they are blessed as he was with communion with his spirit life Father. It is wholly for them to judge how long, while their zeal and necessities dictate. Christ Jesus had the mission of immortal life redemption for all spirit born of God through his blood life sacrifice; thus his prayer intercessions for others account for the length.

19.] *There went*.—As there now issues spirit healing and God begetting by his spirit word life immortal power in the souls and hearts of all true believers.

20.] *Ye poor*.—They who through poverty and afflictions are so mortified that they are thoroughly humbled, and wholly subject themselves to God.

22.] *Shall separate you*.—Excommunicate you from the external communion of any church.

26.] *When all men*.—When you shall have the general applause and favor of the world, which you cannot have nor obtain without framing yourselves to their wicked works, and thereby worshiping Satan, the prince of darkness, falsehoods, slanders, nicknames, blasphemies, and dances, lusts, wars, drunkenness, and all evils that wrong God's service.

27.] *Which hear*.—Which have the gift of my Spirit to receive my doctrine into your minds, by an upright judgment and obedience of faith.

29.] *That taketh*.—As if he should say, having borne a small loss, be prepared to suffer a greater.

30.] *Thy goods.*—He exhorts men not to be enraged for the loss of goods.

37.] *Judge not.*—Be not ill affected, sharp-sighted, or harsh in reproving or judging another.

38.] *With the same measure.*—How plainly the awful denunciation falls on those who mete out to their neighbors and kindred an eternal, unending, continuous, relentless torture fire!

39.] *Blind lead.*—Our dear Redeemer plainly states the case. Unspirit born mere blood life beings, full of sin and lust, cannot discern spiritual life immortal things.

40.] *Shall be.*—By spirit birth of Christ's good seed spirit life immortal.

42.] *Thou hypocrite.*—The Lord Christ hath at all times showed the great dislike he had of hypocrites, as of wicked and accursed men.

43.] *For a good.*—Or, the tree is not good which brings forth evil fruit. The mortals whose acts and deeds are evil are not receptacles of the good spirit of Christ.

45.] *Of the abundance.*—The soul mind intellect or spirit egg, when spirit born of Christ's good seed, partakes of Christ's good spirit; and if filled with it, holiness, love, good fruits.

46.] *Why call ye me Lord?*—All who claim to be children of God, and say, Lord, Lord, and do evil, willful acts of sin, are hypocrites. 1 John iii. 8: He that committeth sin is of the devil.

48.] *Upon a rock.*—Deut. xxxii. 4: God is the rock.

49.] *Immediately it fell.*—This similitude of the two houses shows the difference there is between true godliness and hypocrisy, men tradition creeds and God's statute Scripture laws of truth. For they, as church members, make a profession of Christianity outwardly in appearance; but when trial comes true godliness continues firm against all oppositions, it clings to the rock Scripture truths, whereas hypocrites vanish into nothing at blood life death.

CHAPTER VII.

6.] *Sent friends.*—To show him thereby so much the more honor.

9.] *Great faith.*—Christ did praise this Gentile, because he had confidence.

16.] *God hath visited.*—To bring order out of chaos caused by sin.

21.] *Plagues, and of evil spirits.*—Evil spirits were great evils. They were the tare seed children of the devil, begotten by sowing evil tare seed in the soul spirit egg mind.

22.] *Tell John.*—As if he had said, That which ye have seen and heard sufficiently witnesseth what I am. *To the poor.*—Those who are affected and cast down with a sense of their misery, for there are no others that receive profit of the gospel preached unto them.

29.] *Justified.*—Those baptized of John acknowledged and defended God's honor, in truth of his doctrine of grace preached by John, confirmed by Christ, against the accusations and reproofs of the Pharisees and D.D.'s, after they had embraced it with a lively faith.

30.] *Rejected.*—Or, disannulled. That is to say, they did by their incredulity cause the preaching of God's grace, by which, through faith and spirit birth new creature holiness, life immortal could be obtained, without which to them the gospel grace of God was of no benefit whatever. *Against themselves.*—To their own perdition.

38.] *Weeping.*—She showed clearly that God's mercy spirit was chiding her for her past sins, of which she then regretted that she had been led by an unclean spirit astray into by and forbidden paths; her penitential tears demonstrated heart blood life sorrow.

41.] *A certain creditor.*—The Lord telleth this Pharisee, who was not an adversary, yet he held to the old sect in part, that he ought not to despise this woman so much beneath himself, because he was a sinner as well as she, and liable to God's judgments, and had need of his grace in Christ to obtain remission.

44.] *No water.*—According to the custom in those days, before they did sit down to the table, especially when a man came out of the country; yet he upbraids not his host with bad entertainment, but shows that this woman's love was greater than his. And as spirit love is the life blood of the new spirit born creature in Christ Jesus which it pulsates eternally, love was the great essential to immortal life.

47.] *For she loved.*—Love is not here set down as the cause, but the fruits of forgiveness and spirit birth new creature spirit life immortal; those that love not are not forgiven, nor spirit born of God; for God is love, and love fulfills the law of God.

48.] *Thy sins.*—The woman, according to the Lord's discourse, having by her tears showed repentance and love for the cause of Christ, had already received the pardon of her sins, and felt God's grace love in her heart blood life; therefore that which he speaks here is but a declaration and greater confirmation of this benefit.

CHAPTER VIII.

8.] *Ears to hear.*—To comprehend and give faith here unto all who desire immortal spirit life.

10.] *In parables.*—Unspirit born, unholy nature life beings, cannot discern the things of the spirit life eternal, like Paul, while he followed men creeds of the Jews, until the scales fell.

12.] *Lest they.*—All who are slaves to the devil, and travel hell's broad dance sin lust way, are blinded by satanic lust, and evil desires, creed lies, lest they hear truth and live.

13.] *A while believe.*—At a protracted meeting, when God's spirit strives greatly with the people, they, in a manner, catch the sweet songs of Zion's melody, and finally believe; it is rather popular then, but they love the silly dance, or some of the thousands of Satan's devices, and they glide quickly back into sin's maelstrom and perish.

14.] *No fruit.*—Absorbed with the fashions of the silly, and worldly aspirations for office, desire to lay up treasures on earth, where they make but a brief stay, and are liable every moment to be called away from: and cares drive from their minds all their former brief thoughts of treasures in heaven, they die spirit diseased paupers; their end is unfruitful, and they reap at blood life's close a rotten body (Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15).

15.] *With patience.*—Persevering to the close of blood life's probation trial, amidst all their trials and afflictions, which is as it were, the fullness and ripeness of the spirit born new creature in Christ Jesus love fruits.

24.] *Master, we perish.*—This expression sheweth that the disciples were quite hopeless.

26.] *Gadarenes.*—The Gadarenes were beyond Jordan, eastward, in whose land was the lake into which the swine violently precipitated themselves; thus Satan's tare children were immersed.

28.] *Torment me not.*—This word signifieth to put upon the rack, and sheweth that the devil's tare seed children, after death of blood life body, unclean spirits are tormented at the presence of Christ. Such do not like to hear about religion.

31.] *Into the deep.*—Into solitary boundless darkness, chaos beneath lighted space.

37.] *To depart.*—Great fear of the power that commanded the devil's unclean spirits tare seed children to leave the poor man, and their deeds being evil they disliked the gospel light; thus all unspirit born sinners would feel; if it were possible for them to go to heaven, no happiness could they enjoy there.

38.] *Be with him.*—Might constantly follow him like his other disciples.

39.] *Return to.*—Christ knew that he could do him better service absent than present. *And show.*—Christ would have this wonderful thing published, the better to testify this people's ingratitude, who desired him to go out of their borders (Matt. viii. 34).

46.] *Touched me.*—In a different manner from the others which were in the throng; the mere using forms of prayer to touch the Lord takes no saving life immortal virtue.

54.] *And called.*—That persons present might perceive the power of his word. His will in silence had the same power; thus it is in secret humble childlike prayers.

55.] *She arose.*—Whereby the Lord showed that he is the fountain of life. *Give her meat.*—To show that she was truly alive, for a dead body can neither eat nor drink.

56.] *Were astonished.*—For miracles were deeply thus imprinted on their minds. *They should tell.*—If a mortal had done such a miracle his selfish vain glory would have desired the applause of his poor vain fellow mortals, as a child doth desire bubbles.

CHAPTER IX.

1.] *Gave them power.*—This power of working miracles was given them for a confirmation of the gospel doctrines they taught.

2.] *The kingdom of God.*—Spirit birth holiness. The gospel, whereby God erecteth his kingdom among those spirit born new creatures in Christ Jesus.

10.] *The city*.—Into the territory of Bethsaida, which was situated near the lake of Gennesaret.

11.] *And healed*.—Jesus doing these wonders showed more and more that he was the Messias, that he might draw mortals to give attention to his sayings of truth, and receive his divine heavenly spirit birth doctrines of holiness to the Lord.

14.] *Five thousand*.—Matt. xiv. 21: Is added besides women and children.

16.] *Looking*.—Teaching us by this miracle and example to lift up our thoughts towards heaven's God.

19.] *Is risen again*.—This folly was common amongst the Jews, to believe the souls of such as were dead (according to Pythagoras's opinion) were issued into other bodies.

22.] *Be raised*.—He mentions his resurrection openly, because his disciples should not be quite discouraged when they should see him suffer the woman's blood life seed body to be slain as the last sacrificial offering, to open a door to heaven.

26.] *In his own*.—Spirit word power Son of God glory, and in his spirit Father's glory, and the children spirit born of his spirit word power angelic glory. Luke xx. 36: And are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

27.] *See the kingdom*.—Erected and forwarded by the preaching of the gospel.

32.] *They saw*.—Moses and Elias, both of whose blood life bodies had perished and returned to earth elements as if they had never been animate with life obedience to their soul spirit egg mind wills. Eph. ii. 1.

33.] *Not knowing*.—Peter being ravished into deep astonishment and taken by surprise, and overpowered by the glory of Christ's spirit body, Christ's glory did so affect him, that it overpowered Peter's nature reasoning faculties, being beyond the mortal powers to comprehend; thus he knew not the folly of what he said, requiring rest rather than labor and pains.

34.] *Them*.—The apostles, because their mortal visions were not adapted to look upon such glory light, mortal eyes quail before bright sun rays.

39.] *Teareth him*.—Bruised him, and gave him pain and sorrow,—deranged his mind.

42.] *Rebuked*.—He commanded with threatening that he should come out of the child.

44.] *Sink down*.—Be quick and ready to hear these words,

and having heard them be sure to remember them well. The passwords of men's secret societies are merely for recognizance.

46.] *A reasoning.*—Argument. Matt. xviii. 4: Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as a little child (not pope, cardinal, bishop, D.D., or any other), the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

47.] *The thought.*—The inward thoughts of worldly ambition, which brought them into these disputes; then as to-day, such as seek titles for self-aggrandizement obey the tempter as did Eve in Eden.

48.] *For he.*—I give you this child example, because that true greatness before God consists in childlike innocence, sincerity, and humanity, and pure spirit love, which if all Adam's race partook of, all churches of real Christians would be as one in supreme love to God, and to each other, as to themselves; all wars would end if love pervaded the earth, and universal peace would pervade the earth.

50.] *Is for us.*—Whilst he hinders us not, and that God by such means is honored.

53.] *Did not.*—Or would not, by reason of the extreme hatred which existed then between the Jews and Samaritans.

54.] *Command.*—They thought thereby to do a just thing, and acceptable to God, considering the inveterate wickedness of the Samaritans.

55.] *Ye know not.*—You do not judge rightly this emotion of yours, it is but a kind of hatred, or revenge and carnal wrath, and opposition to patience and love.

58.] *Foxes have holes.*—Mortals must not think that by following Christ they can become thereby rich in this world.

CHAPTER X.

1.] *Other seventy.*—The Lord sends out his servants before him to announce his coming in spirit love power.

4.] *Salute no man.*—A hyperbolical term, viz., be careful and think upon nothing but the commission which I give you, and be not drawn away by any offices of friendship.

6.] *The son.*—Viz., some person capable of receiving the blessing which you have pronounced, and who is disposed to receive the doctrine of the gospel.

7.] *Eating and drinking.*—Not salary, nor station, but necessary food and drink, in travels and lodging, in the place where night comes upon the messenger of the gospel.

9.] *And heal.*—For confirmation of the truth of the gospel you preach, and as remuneration to the family for your food and other hospitality you receive of them, also above all, their souls feed with spiritual food, light, love, and gospel truth's spiritual meanings.

12.] *In that day.*—Namely, of the last judgment.

13.] *Chorazin, Bethsaida.*—Two cities situate on the shore of the lake of Gennesaret. *Mighty works.*—Viz., wonders and miracles, which bear witness of God's power.

17.] *Even the devils.*—Whereby they had sufficient experience that Christ's word was not in vain. *Through thy name.*—That is, we are thy ministers, using thy authority proxy to drive them out.

18.] *I beheld.*—The meaning is, do not think all is accomplished when devils, or unclean spirit sin seed evil falsehood nicknamers, blasphemers, or other evil unclean tare seed creatures, are driven out of the soul spirit egg mind, evil nature birth being.

20.] *Rejoice not.*—Fix not upon it as the principal comfort whereof you have to rejoice. *But rather rejoice.*—Because you have through spirit birth holiness new creature life love begotten spirit existence, immortal life.

21.] *Rejoiced.*—In love of his spirit Father will that fully accorded with his selection of his humble apostle's childlike love and obedience to his commands, and that gave not to self-exalted potentates, nor worldly wise collegiates, the exclusive favor of spirit birth life immortal spirit life wisdom from heaven, but unto babes, or children spirit born of spirit love.

22.] *All things.*—Spirit life's immortal love seed, goodness, mercy, and power, and infinite spirit life love attributes.

25.] *Tempted him.*—For if Christ had answered him, he, like most lawyers and men creed worshipers are tricky dissemblers, it would have been like placing pearls before swine.

30.] *A certain man.*—A Jew. By this parable is shown that all men, even professed enemies, as the Jews and Samaritans were (John iv. 9), and strangers unacquainted with each other, as this

Jew was to this Samaritan, are comprehended in the law under the name of neighbor. And besides that, true charity consists not in any show and profession of conjunction and affection, but in the real work of doing good. And, moreover, that the ignorance of many took outward show of sanctity and superiority, assumed by church priests, bishops, and popes as a reality.

31.] *A certain priest.*—He shows the great uncharitableness that was among the Jews. *Passed by.*—Without being moved to compassion.

36.] *Was neighbor.*—That is to say, had done that which the law had commanded. Judging truly of the meaning of loving a neighbor, they would, if they loved their neighbor as themselves, pray that all who were not saved in heaven might, as they will, remain in death.

37.] *Do thou.*—Viz., help those that have need of it, though they be unknown to thee: so Christ shows us who they are we should esteem for our neighbors. The most sacred way to render love our neighbor as ourselves, is to freely preach and teach the way to heaven, pray to God in secret for them.

41.] *Thou art careful.*—Christ reprehendeth two faults in Martha, one that her mind and strength was absorbed too much in the cares for the blood life body.

42.] *Hath chosen.*—Viz., hath addicted herself to the true duty of receiving my words which are spirit truth, and immortal spirit life in all who receive and believe and obey them until blood life's probation closes.

CHAPTER XI.

5.] *Which of you.*—By this similitude he showeth that we should not be dejected, though we do not immediately receive what we earnestly desire.

10.] *Every one.*—The Lord's promises are all conditional, and to all Adam's race while in probation blood life existence. *That asketh.*—That which is in accordance with God's will.

13.] *Holy Spirit.*—For without the grace of God's Spirit all things that men receive shall be turned into evil unto them.

14.] *And it was.*—The evil spirit unclean was dumb, and made the man dumb.

15.] *Beelzebub*.—Their evil natures were the same as nick-namers at this day.

23.] *Is against me*.—Those that apply not themselves to the service of Christ for the destruction of the kingdom of Satan shall not be esteemed his, for they are against him. (Matt. xii. 30.)

24.] *Seeking rest*.—A place to remain and do according to wonted custom.

28.] *Yea, rather*.—This woman is covertly reprovèd because she doth not prefer the chiefest praise which should be given to Christ, namely, that he makes us happy when he unites us unto him by his word through spirit birth of his good seed from his spirit Father, who alone hath immortal spirit life to impart.

29.] *Evil generation*.—He calls the Jews so, who were degenerated far from the holiness of their forefathers by way of tradition creeds of men they followed instead of the Scripture laws and testimonies which, as to-day, church creeds pervert.

33.] *No man*.—Christ addeth this to his former discourse to show that, having proposed the doctrine of salvation, he would put it in full evidence and power after his resurrection.

38.] *Washed*.—Superstitious tradition men creed washings, taught by the Pharisees.

39.] *Now do ye*.—Thus the Lord makes use of their outward ceremonial washings to rebuke them for not seeking inward soul spirit mind cleansing from evil thoughts.

40.] *He that*.—God the creator both of the body and souls, first germinating pair in Eden, requireth also to be served with pure soul spirit born life holy, without which no one is immortal.

41.] *Give*.—Immersion in water does not purify the heart or soul void of love.

43.] *Ye love*.—Christ reproveth and judgeth the ambition of the scribes and Pharisees. They took glory to themselves by receiving public salutations, and occupying chief seats.

44.] *Appear not*.—Which are covered on the outside, whereby the bones and carrion that are within them cannot be seen. Monuments of marble or outside features often cover a den of vipers. The hypocrite with a D.D. flag hath within nests of viper nick-names that their evil vile nature hatches out to order of unsanctified devils.

45.] *Of the lawyers*.—One of the doctors of the law. Men's manufactured laws are always defective, and no amount of D.D. or lawyer doctoring can restore them to perfect health.

46.] *Woe unto you also, ye lawyers.*—The profession of law is, if wholly on the side of equity justice, an honorable profession; but to-day, as it ever hath been since the fall of man, the hearts and mind thoughts of lawyers are mostly evil continually; they seek official stations. But woe, woe to the nation or state whose rulers and law-makers are lawyers and warriors.

47.] *Woe unto you.*—(Lawyers.) Ye seduce clients with small reward on your lips, but robbery counsel fee in your hearts and minds; ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them.

49.] *The wisdom.*—Christ Jesus the wisdom of God in creation and salvation, and truth knowledge, and immortal life.

50.] *This generation.*—Because they reject and crucify Jesus the fountain of spirit life; also on those alive at time's close.

52.] *Woe unto you, lawyers.*—By your false statements and D.D. usurpations, you have appropriated to yourselves only the power of expounding the law of God, and commissioning others to do the same, thereby captivating men's consciences to your opinions, and despoiling them of all liberty of judgment and knowledge. *Key of knowledge.*—Pure truthful doctrine, and the understanding of holy Scripture.

54.] *Accuse him.*—As a transgressor of the law, and a disturber of the common peace.

CHAPTER XII.

4.] *My friends.*—God's spirit begotten and spirit born children are all the seed and friends of Christ. *That kill.*—Yet not without God's sufferance, having no power of themselves. Mortals in temporal power can only kill the blood life body; God in a word can slay soul and body.

5.] *Into hell.*—Gehenna of fire. An Hebrew word which signifieth the valley of Hinnom, which was a place near Jerusalem where idolaters did burn their children in their worship of their myth god Moloch.

10.] *Blasphemeth.*—By imputing Christ's miracles to Satan, and nicknaming him Beelzebub. The same devil evil spirit is in all nicknamers of persons and places, thereby marring their peace and truth names. Of such are the unforgiven sin crimes.

14.] *Who made.*—Christ's mission being spiritual life immortal development.

16.] *A certain rich man.*—Christ by this parable would show the vanity and folly of such, who gather and lay up much riches.

19.] *Soul, thou hast.*—This is the common argument or feeling of those who have a superabundance of earthly treasures, when they place their whole content and felicity therein; they become miserly, selfish, and are grasping for all within their earth low reach, regarding not others' feelings.

20.] *Thou fool, this night thy soul.*—James v. 20: He which converteth the sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul from death. Heb. x. 39: Believe to the saving of the soul. Acts iii. 23: Every soul which will not hear that prophet (Christ Jesus) shall be destroyed. Ezek. xviii. 4, 20: The soul that sinneth it shall die.

21.] *That layeth up treasure.*—He that heapeth up wealth to gratify his insatiable covetousness before he makes provisions of God's grace and blessing.

23.] *The life.*—All life and power to live, move, and have a being comes from God's spirit word.

26.] *For the rest.*—For greater and more important things to preserve your soul alive; which dependeth upon your obedience to God's commands.

27.] *The lilies.*—The goodness of God which showeth itself in the herbs and flowers far exceedeth all man can do by his riches or power. *In all his glory.*—Which is greatly extolled (1 Kings iii. 13). Solomon could not impart life in any form, therefore the living lily infinitely excelled the inanimate gold and dead matter in Solomon's temple.

29.] *Doubtful mind.*—Or troubled with things that pertain to God's power, or to have elevated and doubtful thoughts, which happen to such as do not steadfastly rely upon God. John xv. 5: Without me ye can do nothing.

33.] *Sell.*—Bestow of principal as well as income; if requisite, give alms. Use your wealth and talents in doing good. Let that which you regard as your chief good be in heaven.

34.] *Your heart.*—Animal affections and lust desires hold the soul mind in subjection to earthly wealth.

35.] *Your lights.*—Ps. xxvii. 1: The Lord is my light and my salvation; the Lord is the strength of my life; of whom shall I be afraid? xlix. 15: God will redeem my soul from the power of

the grave. Isa. lx. 19 : The Lord shall be unto thee an everlasting light. John viii. 12 : I am the light of the world : he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.

37.] *Shall gird himself.*—Figurative terms, the spiritual meaning of which is that Christ will with unspeakable charity distribute and dispense his everlasting life stores unto his spirit begotten children of light, even as a master would who should serve his servants at table.

38.] *Second watch.*—From nine in the evening to twelve. Third watch, twelve to three in the morning.

40.] *Cometh.*—There is nothing surer than his coming, but the hour is uncertain, that all men may keep themselves upon the watch for blood life death.

48.] *Worthy of stripes.*—Therefore ignorance is not blameless. James i. 5 : Ask of God.

49.] *What will I.*—Christ spake of the fire of divisions, sectarian creeds of men. Jews with circumcision's gulf between them and the gospel dispensation to the Gentiles, by way of spirit birth and Holy Ghost fire baptism.

50.] *Baptism.*—Of blood. The woman's seed blood life's holy sacrificial offering, spirit begotten by way of the word of the Lord God spoken in Eden some four thousand years previous. (Gen. iii. 15.)

57.] *Of yourselves.*—Having so many miraculous proofs of the truth.

58.] *When thou.*—When you are indebted to God for each pulsation of nature's blood life sustenance, and preservation from death, and you raise not grateful thanks of love and adoration gratitude for this life's blessings, how can you imagine that you shall be resurrected to spirit life, that pulsates only spirit love, when you are by nature birth but the products of sin's lust seed sentenced to death ; having not a farthing's value of redemption life by way of spirit love birth, of Christ's good and holy light life immortal seed.

59.] *The very last mite.*—The last mite of probation blood life, in the prison grave.

CHAPTER XIII.

2.] *Suppose ye.*—These chances you have no right to claim as giving you leave to indulge any rash judgments (John ix. 2).

3.] *I tell you, nay.*—All mortals on earth stand or fall for themselves, and whether their neighbors do right or wrong, they have no benefits arising from the wrong doings of their fellow-mortals. Each must repent and do right, or inevitably perish, be blotted out of existence. As pain gives warning through the body nerves that part of the living mortal body is injured, the conscious soul spirit egg mind's intellectual nerve gives warnings of the wounds or bruises sins have made.

4.] *The tower.*—On the southeast of the walls of Jerusalem, beneath which was the pool of siloa.

6.] *Parable.*—The meaning of which is, to show God's mercy and long forbearance towards the rebellious and faithless nation of the Jews.

7.] *Three years.*—Subsequent to the baptism of Jesus in Jordan by the wilderness preacher, John the Baptist. *Cumbereth it.*—It is fruitless.

11.] *A spirit.*—Unclean spirit, or tare seed child of the devil, had by its evil power drawn up or contracted the nerves of her body and made it crooked.

15.] *Hypocrite.*—He condemned Jesus for releasing the woman from her infirm bondage to Satan.

16.] *Eighteen years.*—Which may teach us not to despair of salvation if we have neglected to seek salvation in youth.

23.] *Are there few.*—This question was because so few received the truths of the gospel.

24.] *Strive.*—Christ, according to his usual custom, doth not answer the curious questioner, or the tricky lawyer Pharisee, but silently avoweth that indeed there are but few. Therefore all ought, if they would act the part of rational intelligences, strive to be of that little number.

25.] *When once.*—Having spoken of the way, and of the endeavor wherewith each mortal for themselves (it being an individual matter of life or death) must strive to attain to life everlasting.

26.] *We have eaten.*—Partaken the bread, and drank, partaken the wine emblems. They had professed by outward ceremonies to

be his friends, but. were never spirit begotten (1 John v. 18) new creatures in Christ (2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 15).

28.] *There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.*—Jews have for near two thousand years as a nation wept and mourned for their national bereavement in vain. Still they look back to Abraham's covenant they broke, and to Isaac and Jacob saved, and they lost forever.

29.] *Come.*—From every point of compass on earth all spirit born holy, at blood life's probation, death, receive a spirit body, and are welcomed to God's spirit kingdom of holiness, truth, and love life immortal.

30.] *Last which shall be first.*—Jews were first called to receive the King of spirit life glory. They rejected his spirit grace sovereignty, and then the Gentiles were offered conditional grace pardon, and they now are first.

32.] *That fox.*—Sly, evil, subtle, wicked man. *To-day and to-morrow.*—A brief time. I shall be perfected; shall have completed salvation's grace conditional developments; and the third, or resurrection day, will perfect it all.

33.] *I must walk.*—Remain free as I am a few days, then go up to Jerusalem.

34.] *Would I.*—Or I would cheerfully have saved you by imparting to you of my spirit love life immortal seed, but ye would not.

35.] *Your house.*—Temple at Jerusalem, and spiritual house emblem.

CHAPTER XIV.

4.] *Held their peace.*—Like politicians, they feared incurring the people's hatred.

5.] *Answered.*—He replied vocally to their inward secret thoughts.

7.] *A parable.*—Showing the importance of humility.

8.] *Highest room.*—Next seat to the principal personage. Scribes and Pharisees sought for worldly approbation and self-aggrandizement.

9.] *Lowest room.*—Popes, cardinals, bishops, and many kings and preachers, assume and are by nature in lust birth officials in

church and state; others, by commission from their fellow creed or craftsmen, seek to lord it over God's heritage. Like begets its like in nature, ethics, and theology.

11.] *Exalteth himself.*—All spirit born holy Christians humble themselves and exalt God.

12.] *Call not thy friends.*—If God had only called his friends that had always obeyed his imperative statute laws and loved him supremely, Adam's race of rebels, accursed to death annihilation, would never have had an offer of conditional grace pardon and an invitation to freely partake of the heavenly spirit life immortal feast of love. Rom. v. 10: Confine not your hospitality to relatives and friends who will return it, but give to the poor.

14.] *Resurrection of the just.*—John xi. 25: I am the resurrection and the life.

15.] *That shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.*—Spirit born new spirit creature in Christ Jesus, that shall feed on heavenly spirit bread, love eternal.

16.] *A certain man.*—Christ calls their minds back from those heavenly contemplations to the serious meditation of the means of attaining to the said happiness, which lieth in the acceptance of God's grace in Christ.

17.] *Come.*—Christ upbraids the Jews with their unthankfulness, because they would not feed upon the holy meat which was presented to them, though long since they were invited to it.

18.] *And they all.*—Those who have their hearts' blood life affections fixed and attached to worldly affairs; all the Jews who rejected Christ Jesus.

23.] *Compel them to come in.*—Not by force. 2 Cor. v. 11: Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; by earnest, persevering entreaty.

26.] *And hate not.*—The carnal nature is full of sin. All who aspire to spirit birth new spirit creature life immortal must renounce all manner of carnal love which is contrary to me, and feel greater love and desires for their heavenly spirit love life eternal Father.

27.] *Bear his cross.*—Boldly proclaim himself on the Lord's side, and proclaim his gospel Scripture truths uncontaminated by the world, the flesh, or the devil.

28.] *For which of you.*—Those who had not strength and power to keep God's law that should bear them to heaven, and would not accept the gospel tower of salvation, Jesus' proffered aid

full and free, only make themselves trouble without any reward whatever for their folly, false creeds and hypocrisy.

33.] *Forsaketh not all.*—All that he hath, blood life's probation, must be surrendered, and spirit life immortal must be sought of God in Christ's appointed way.

34.] *Salt is good.*—To season and preserve nature blood life food from rottenness. Thus spirit love faith holiness to the Lord preserves the spirit soul life; when the earth salt hath lost its preserving quality, the body rots.

35.] *He that hath.*—He shows that it is not given to all men to comprehend and conceive these things intellectually; they require spirit birth light.

CHAPTER XV.

4.] *What man.*—The end of all these similitudes is to show God's goodness and care in calling sinners to repentance.

7.] *Joy shall be in heaven.*—God is love in one of his infinite attributes. All heaven's inhabitants are spirit children of God. They all in love rejoice at the salvation of a repentant sinner who is on the way to spirit birth, and new creature life of love in unison with them.

12.] *Give me.*—The younger represents notorious sinners, vigorous in young blood life strength that dances at night to gratify carnal nature, that like the moth dashes into the candle and is burned. Such soon spend all substance given them by parents or others in recreations, dissipation, folly, madness.

22.] *Best robe.*—The dissipated insane young man in poverty repents and returns by breaking off his sins, by doing right. He returns to his senses, is spirit born and saved.

25.] *His elder son.*—Christ here reproves the Jews, also the disaffection and great churlishness of such as are discontented, when God shows mercy to poor wretched and miserable Gentile sinners. And his mercy ends their misery.

28.] *Entreated.*—Did freely instruct and advise him what his duty was.

29.] *Do I serve.*—Hypocrites often accuse God of injustice,

and esteem themselves righteous as moralists, temperate, often for lazy poverty.

32.] *Was dead.*—The soul spirit egg mind was inebriated with sin's narcotic, and dead to reflection, and when the dead drunk libertine dancer became sober in his extreme poverty he began to reflect.

CHAPTER XVI.

1.] *Steward.*—One intrusted with property to be used according to the will of its owner.

2.] *No longer steward.*—How many silly mortals seek for office in church and state, and are tempted by the devil, and obey him and die.

8.] *Commended.*—Not for his injustice wickedness, but for his sagacity or care for nature life's necessities.

9.] *Friends.*—Use the mammon of unrighteousness, worldly treasures, in such a manner as Christ commands. Feed the hungry, clothe the naked, that when you die and close blood life's probation stewardship, you may be received into heaven by way of spirit birth holiness spirit of Christ love.

11.] *The true.*—The spiritual riches, which only are the true permanent treasures of mortals, and enduring happiness. All others are transitory.

12.] *Another man's.*—Worldly external wealth, which mortals at blood life death must leave behind for others.

15.] *Justify yourselves.*—Pretend before men to be just. The wicked who overreach their unsuspecting neighbors and rob them of their home and farm, often reply, to cloak their demon conscience, "I done as I agreed," when truth reveals the agreement was a vicious fraud, practised on the one talented hard working man by the devil wise serpent swindler.

16.] *Until John.*—In the baptism of John and his proclamation cry of the coming Lord; Prepare ye the way of the Lord, was foretold by the prophets, Isa. xl. 3; Mal. iii. 1. Men were strongly excited, and they pressed to hear and receive the preached gospel.

17.] *To fail.*—To be without fulfilment, effect, or vain, or fail in being accomplished.

19.] *There was.*—This is a parable of the Jews, who was called the rich man. Gen. xiii. 2: Abram was very rich in cattle, in silver, and in gold; Exod. xxv. 4: Blue, and purple, and scarlet, and fine linen; xxxix. 3: Gold worked as wire in the purple and fine linen.

20.] *Lazarus.*—A certain beggar. The Gentiles of earth who fed on crumbs of spiritual Scripture truths at the rich man Jew Abraham's synagogue, but were not permitted to enter there unless circumcised.

21.] *And desiring to be fed.*—Gentiles were called dogs by the Jews. Matt. xv. 26: Jesus said, It is not meet to take the children's bread and to cast it to dogs (rich Jews chosen of God's grace riches infinite); 27: The Gentile woman of Canaan, of poor Lazarus beggar dog tribe said, Truth, Lord; yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their master's table. Like the Canaan woman, Lazarus, the Gentile race representative, desired to be fed with the crumbs which fall from the rich man Abraham's Jewish table; by faith Gentiles would and do feed on the rich grace promises, spiritual riches above all estimation.

22.] *The beggar died.*—Dead to sins, and was resurrected by Abraham's faith promise fulfillment. Rom. iv. 16: Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace, to the end the promise might be good to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all. 1 Pet. ii. 24: We being dead to sins should live unto righteousness. Rom. vi. 2; Eph. ii. 1: And you hath he quickened who were dead in trespasses and sins (John xi. 25). Thus dead Gentiles by faith in Abraham's promise are carried by angels of the covenant to Abraham's bosom, by faith they partake of the same faith love fountain of spirit life love immortal that Abraham's faith partook of when he offered his son, in his submission to God's will faith in his promises of the coming sacrifice of salvation and immortal life seed. The rich man, the nature seed of Abraham, died also a spiritual death. Void of faith like Abraham in Christ Jesus the promised Messiah; whom they then rejected, and died spiritually; the want and utter destitution of faith in Jesus still keeps the Jews dead, he is the only quickening life. Rich man, the Jews, was buried as a nation, and still remains so.

23.] *Lift up.*—All the parables ought to be understood figuratively. The Jewish nation was killed by the Roman soldiers that had been previously invoked to crucify Jesus of Nazareth,

and Bethlehem of Judea. When the Roman army surrounded Jerusalem and cut off all escape from their city, and all succor, their wall of defense became a barrier to all escape and they made civil war upon each other; and pestilence and famine turned women as well as men into unclean spirit demoniac devils, for they devoured their children, becoming by hunger's horrid pangs the worst species of cannibals. And Jerusalem, the Abrahamic city of earthly glory and seat of wisdom, became the prison house hell, and their torments ceased not by day or night until death ended their horrid pains of starvation; or if spared from the flames of the burning temple, where centered all their hopes of heaven, or from horrid death by war hell weapons of Roman devil soldiers, who with the same hell malice that their fellow soldiers, or of the same nation, crucified the King of the Jews, whom Jewish priests and rulers volunteered to surrender to the Roman governor for the hell torture death by crucifixion, and released to prey again upon them the demon Barabbas from prison, in preference to their only Saviour. Then when the same Roman murderous soldiers were imprisoning the Jewish rejecters of proffered mercy, and slaying and torturing and starving them to death, they had no Saviour, King of the Jews; and in their Jerusalem prison hell the previously rich man, parabolic Jews, lifted up their eyes being in torment; and on looking back to Abraham their nature body ancestor, who was also by faith father of spirit faith in Christ Jesus, whom they had rejected as a Jewish nation and caused to be crucified, then they commenced to see the elevation of the Gentiles, or parabolic Lazarus, who previously was in the extremest life immortal poverty infinite, and eternal death poverty; they then under the gospel proclamation of the apostles of the Jewish King and Saviour, whom they had rejected, saw the poor Lazarus Gentiles placed in fellowship love faith's spirit birth life with Abrahamic faith covenant promise of inestimable riches, on compliance with the gospel proclamation conditions of repentance, and faith, in unison with that in Abraham's bosom, which received the promise of immortal life spirit birth new creature life riches, for which soul life immortal all earth's riches, if possessed, a man would give.

24.] *And he cried.*—The Jews, the parabolic rich man, when in Jerusalem, walled in and surrounded by the Roman army, and being tortured by hell's war weapons, pestilence, famine, and fire, torments sufficient to satisfy any mortal's revenge. The Jews

also, in every nation whither they fled, for centuries were scourged by human form devils.

25.] *Abraham said, Son.*—Thus acknowledging that the rich man told the truth in calling Abraham his father. Abraham died and said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime (was the rich man not then alive, and conscious?). 22: Rich man died; and Abraham is talking to his dead son, or Jew descendant of the flesh, and says to the dead rich man, Thou in thy lifetime receivest thy good things, and Lazarus evil things; but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented. How could that literally take place if both were dead; and the day of judgment must have then taken place, to make any literal sense, by taking it as an illustration of a fact, instead of truthfully taking it as a figurative parable of the Jews and Gentiles.

26.] *Great gulf fixed.*—A gulf made by breaking Abraham's covenant of faith which centered in Christ. The rich man Abraham's seed of nature could not be absorbed into the families of the Gentiles or poor man, as they affiliate with each other, because another great gulf, circumcision of the foreskin, prevents the Gentile marriage; aids to perpetuate their national persecution.

27.] *I pray thee, therefore,*—Send him to my father's house. If Abraham was the rich man's father, which he acknowledges by calling him son, then Abraham's house, the Jews', was meant.

28.] *Five brethren.*—Scribes, Pharisees, Sadducees, publicans, and Essenes. Five sects of the Jews.

29.] *They have Moses.*—Who had Moses and the prophets at that time? No one but the Jewish nation, the five brethren sects of the Jewish nation, the rich man.

30.] *From the dead.*—Here was shadowed forth the parable figure of the cause of the rich man, Jewish national, death, by way of the rejection of the Saviour; and if Jesus Lazarus (Matt. viii. 20: The Son of man hath not where to lay his head, while nature animals, as foxes, have holes and places of rest) would arise from the dead, and proclaim salvation's narrow way of spirit birth life, the five brethren sects of the Jews would embrace and fellowship the gospel truths thus proclaimed.

31.] *He said unto him.*—If they hear not Moses and the prophets, which they the five brethren sects of Jews had in their native Hebrew, and which was read, or a portion of it, every sabbath day to the circumcised rich man Jews only, poor Lazarus Gentiles, called by Jews dogs, and of which

from Ruth, Boaz' wife, the Jewish line, the ancestors of the Virgin Mary, the mother of the woman's seed portion of the blood life body of Jesus of Bethlehem and Nazareth, whereby Jesus, by way of Ruth the Gentile, partook of the Lazarus Gentile seed. Luke xxiv. 47. Beginning at Jerusalem. Thus the gospel was first preached at Jerusalem, offering pardon in Jesus Lazarus's name, by way of Abrahamic faith repentance, to the five brethren.

CHAPTER XVII.

2.] *Little ones*.—Spirit born infants of Christ's spirit love seed (Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5; 2 Cor. v. 17). Gal. vi. 15: New creatures.

5.] *Faith*.—Full belief, trust in, and reliance implicitly, without a doubt, upon God.

6.] *Obeys you*.—The power of mind will over matter, when in accordance with God's will and appointments or permission, is here described as triumphing over nature.

7–10.] *Unprofitable servants*.—The sacrifice of the blood life of the holy pure sinless word spirit begotten son Jesus infinitely outvalues all the value to God of all Adam's race of mortals. Isa. xl. 17: All nations before God are as nothing (would he resurrect and endlessly torment such?); and they are counted to him less than nothing, and vanity.

12.] *Stood afar off*.—Lepers were not allowed to dwell with nor come near persons in health (Matt. viii. 2–4; Lev. xiii. 46; Num. v. 2, 3). Thus sinners contaminate and often infect and poison Christians by communion contact and seductive animal nature appetites.

14.] *Shew yourselves unto the priests*.—To obtain their testimony that they were really cured, and might be again admitted into society, cleansed and healed.

15.] *One of them*.—Out of ten, healed of nature leprosy, but one of the ten was also healed of soul or spirit life leprosy.

18.] *This stranger*.—A Gentile Lazarus, not a rich in grace chosen Jew; most likely the other nine were of the rich man Abraham's five brethren.

19.] *Thy faith hath made thee whole*.—The poor leper was

not only cleansed of his bodily infirmities, but his soul spirit egg mind was impregnated with love life immortal spirit birth that pulsed love; his new creature love life would evermore feed on spirit love, by way of Christ the heavenly spirit love vine that bore immortal spirit life fruits in heaven. John xv. 5: Without me ye can do nothing.

20. *Demanded.*—*Asked.*—Kingdom of God (1 Cor. xv. 28). God all in all, then in existence.

21.] *Within you.*—All spirit born of God's seed spirit love in Christ Jesus.

22.] *Days of the Son.*—After Christ Jesus should leave earth, in earth body of woman's seed communication with mortals, and resume his spirit word communications and infinite spirit life immortal attributes.

23.] *See here, or see there.*—Men creeds manufactured by evil priests, who, by vain ceremonial theatrical mummeries and organ's wind, would lead vain mortals to believe they, like Gehazi, were in need of silver salary, and bestow only spirit delusion leprosy on all they lead astray, instead of bestowing free grace freely without money and without price (Rev. xxii. 17). Go not after men creeds. Follow me, said our Lord commander-in-chief of God's army on earth (Matt. iv. 19; viii. 22; ix. 9; Mark ii. 14; Luke v. 27; viii. 38; ix. 23, 59; John x. 27). Follow the Scriptures, but no vain false creeds of men here or there, the church, our church, or their church,—none but Christ.

24.] *His day.*—Eternal day dawn of eternity's Son of God's triumphant light dawn that shall develop at once the Son of glory ineffable, that shall rise then in triumphant mid-day glory as between eternity past and eternity to come, and close of parenthesis creation and probation time, and destruction of the wicked.

25.] *Suffer many things.*—Of this generation. Its nicknaming, slanderous defamers, insults and mockeries, perjuries and lies, and crown of thorns, in mockery of Christ's king of all kings power, and his horrid crucifixion.

26.] *As it was in the days of Noe.*—Gen. vii. 1: And the Lord God said unto Noah, Come thou and all thy house into the ark; for thee have I seen righteous before me in this generation. Clearly showing each generation and each heavenly sphere was classed by itself. 23: And every living substance was destroyed which was upon the face of the ground. And Noah only re-

mained alive, and they that were with him in the ark. So shall it be also in the days of the Son of man.

28.] *Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot.*—Gen. xix. 23, 24: Then the Lord rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the Lord out of heaven; and he overthrew those cities and all the plain, and all the inhabitants of the cities. Thus time will close. Matt. xiii. 40: As therefore the tares (the devil's unclean spirit children) are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of this world. 49, 50: So shall it be in the end of the world; the angels shall come forth and sever the wicked from among the just. And shall cast them into the furnace of fire.

29.] *It rained fire.*—The same day Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven (heavenward, or sky where birds fly). And destroyed, to put an end to; to annihilate a thing, as fire devours stubble, or chaff, or wood, or any combustible matter, and reduces them to gases and other nature elements, void of life (Isa. v. 24; Mal. iv. 1).

33.] *Save his life.*—Mortals by nature's sin lust birth have but one life, which they lose at blood life body death; if they are willing like the volunteer soldier to join the army of light, by way of spirit birth regeneration, then at blood life death they save their spirit birth life immortal.

37.] *Wheresoever the body is.*—Wherever the unbelieving Jews are, there will their destroyers be upon them, as eagles upon their prey (Matt. xxiv. 28).

CHAPTER XVIII.

1.] *Always.*—Ever be in a frame of mind humble, and feel your constant dependence on Christ for salvation (John xv. 5; 1 Pet. iii. 7).

7.] *Shall not God avenge.*—Shall not God, the just judge, pure and holy, who tenderly cares for his saints, vindicate and deliver his people from their foes temporal and spiritual. Oh how manifestly I have seen the rebuke of God upon those who viciously and wickedly through fraud and perjury robbed me of earthly subsistence means!

8.] *Nevertheless.*—Although the Lord God is the shield and

sustainer of his people, when time's brief blood life probation draws to a close, and Christ returns as judge of all the earth, how few if any will he find faith in?

9.] *Trusted in themselves.*—Not in the Lord, without whose aid they could do nothing, John xv. 5; in their own righteousness, when none but the Lord can save.

12.] *Tithes.*—One-tenth of their net income.

13.] *Afar off.*—At the opposite side of the temple, far from the holy altar, smote upon his breast, showing the troublesome burden of heart pressure sin.

18.] *Eternal life.*—What shall I do to become immortal? Clearly the Lord proclaims that all are mortal unspirit born of God in Christ heaven's spirit vine, that hath a branch on earth; blood life all have briefly.

22-25.] *Sell all that thou hast.*—All mortals have blood life, and most use it to selfish ends, and to serve the world's slavery servitude to the devil in wars, dances, drunkenness and lust. Sell it all, and buy the pearl of spirit love immortal life; or surrender in full volunteer service your blood life to the Lord; join his spirit life eternal army.

26.] *Who then can be saved?*—Thus impenitent sinners who love the ways of sin say, Where is the holy, pure, righteous child of God on earth, if without holiness (Heb. xii. 14), without which no man shall see the Lord? Follow peace with all men, not war with any. God knows his spirit born children, and daily feeds his lambs.

27.] *Things which are impossible.*—Things impossible with mortals, have no key to open to the power and wisdom of God, whose ways are infinite. Man cannot prolong his life beyond probation's close, nor do one of the innumerable, infinite acts that God hath and can still do, unless God empowers him to do it as his servant. God in Christ only can beget immortals.

30.] *Life everlasting.*—Positive and affirmative; negative can be no other than eternal death, the opposite of life everlasting must be the portion of all unspirit born.

32.] *Delivered unto the Gentiles.*—The rich man Abraham's nature seed heirs, the Jews, who were like their sacrifices, but parabolic emblems of Jesus, and Christ's spiritual kingdom by way of spirit birth from God's word spirit love light life immortal. Thus Jesus becomes the Lazarus Gentile that sends his spirit love life immortal seed by way of Abrahamic bosom faith of soul

mind, severed by his disobedient sin lust Jew children, and united by way of Christ Jesus to the Gentile seeds of faith belief in Christ through the Abrahamic faith promise of spirit life eternal.

33.] *Put him to death.*—The woman's seed nature blood life that allied Jesus to Jew and Gentile, by way of Boaz and Ruth, received by way of the Virgin Mary, was put to death.

34.] *Understood none of these things.*—Like Paul, the Jews were so filled with the second nature habit of believing the Jewish men creed doctrines.

CHAPTER XIX.

11.] *The kingdom of God should immediately appear.*—They imagined, in their worldly aspirations for worldly emoluments and honors, that when Christ should enter Jerusalem he would proclaim himself king, deliver them from the Romans, and raise them to great earthly renown. To correct this idea and give them right views of his kingdom, spoke the following parable.

12.] *Far country.*—God's spirit kingdom throne is numberless millions of miles distant from earth; could mortals fly five hundred miles each hour, it would require fourteen million two hundred and fifty-five thousand four hundred and eighteen years to reach Cygni; with railroad speed of twenty miles an hour, it would require three hundred and fifty-six million three hundred and eighty-five thousand four hundred and sixty-six years to reach the star called Cygni. Our sun is some ninety-five millions of miles distant from this earth, and it would take one million three hundred thousand worlds like ours to equal in size the sun, and five hundred times the size of all its planets, and thirty-eight suns to equal the star Lyra; Sirius is estimated to be twenty billions of miles from the earth. The most distant star visible to William Herschel's great telescope was estimated to be ten thousand billions of miles distant from this earth. Far country: mortals cannot comprehend the vastness of the distance; yet some men pray very loud, as if they would send the noise through that boundless millions of space to address the Sovereign of the universe; but often I fear studied words for mortal ears.

13.] *Ten pounds.*—Ten talents (Matt. xxv. 14, 30), representing the various intellectual gifts.

15.] *Having received.*—This shows the second spiritual glorified power coming of the Saviour spirit born holy, who have the spirit of Christ.

20.] *Another came.*—Hypocrites which have no saving faith, and all unspirit born.

23.] *With usury.*—Luke xviii. 20. Those who sow to the spirit, or spirit life seed, reap love spirit peace of mind.

26.] *For I say.*—Christ's words shall be given to them who faithfully sow to the spirit life holiness love obedience to God, more shall be given; but from them who use them not to advantage the offer of eternal spirit life grace shall be taken away eternally. Life of soul spirit egg mind, which in all unspirit born, remains unimpregnated by spirit word life immortal (John iii. 5; v. 40; vi. 63; iv. 14, 24). *Even that he hath.*—Blood life, and soul spirit egg mind or intellect will power, shall die and end forever in death.

27.] *Slay them before me.*—The ruin which befell the Jews by the Roman army, whose soldiers they invoked to crucify the body spirit begotten of woman's seed, pure, holy, and immaculate Jesus, and falls also upon all persevering opposers of God's truth commands in ruin and eternal death slay them, not keep them alive in torment fires.

28.] *Went before.*—Willingly gave his nature woman's seed blood life a sacrifice for the sins of all his seed, willingly went to close the last sacrifice, which had been typified by lambs spotless for some four thousand years previous.

34.] *The Lord hath.*—As if they had said, He, to whom all things created by him belong, will make use of it for a short time without injury.

37.] *The mighty works.*—The great and transcendent divine miracles and works.

38.] *Peace.*—2 Thess. iii. 16: The Lord of peace himself. Phil. iv. 7: Peace of God which passeth all understanding shall keep your hearts (blood life) and minds, soul spirit egg new spirit being or creature in Christ Jesus (2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 15). John xvi. 33: That in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation. But be of good cheer, I have overcome the world.

40.] *I tell you.*—My person, my doctrine, my power and actions are now so evident, that they cannot be hid from comprehension. *Stones would immediately cry out.*—A proverbial expression:

nature obeys my commands, even the hard stones of the earth will be rent asunder, as a rebuke to the murderers of my blood life, the only pure nature product of Adamic woman's seed.

41.] *Wept over it.*—In view of its guilt, and the miseries which were coming upon it.

42.] *In this thy day.*—Day of consummation of sacrificial emblems past, and by an especial grace of God the accomplishment of his promises in me is presented unto thee.

44.] *Thy children.*—The inhabitants of Jerusalem. *One stone upon another.*—Titus, their conqueror, caused the ground to be plowed up beneath the temple walls, to obtain most likely the gold that melted and ran down the walls.

46.] *My house.*—The temple was called God's house, because God's name was called upon there and his service erected. *Den of thieves.*—As well in respect to their false men creed priestcraft dignity doctrine which was there corrupted, as of God's service which was there perverted, as it is at this day by Latin litany and theatrical ceremonial mummeries, and making salary and money, and attendance on their man-appointed meetings, conditions of immortal life in heaven.

47.] *He taught daily in the temple.*—For a number of days before his crucifixion.

CHAPTER XX.

2.] *Tell us.*—Matt. xxi. 23, 27: For the Jewish priests (like the tradition men creed preachers of this day) would not suffer anybody to teach without their leave and consent, even the Lord himself, the builder of and head of the church of God spiritual and immortal, nor an angel of God, nor commissioned by Christ Jesus the spiritual source of all immortal life partakers on earth.

4.] *The baptism.*—By whose commission, or with what priestly self-commissioned power, did John baptize? or was his commission from God only? Thus I ask to-day: The Lord Jesus Christ, in spirit body glorified, called me in person, and commissioned me with these Scripture truths, and the book of nature uncontaminated by men tradition creeds; and by opening my spirit soul mind new spirit born creature in Christ Jesus, intellect mind understanding of spirit truths sight,—wisdom, knowledge,

understanding, communion with God in Christ my spirit vine (John xv. 5), without whose aid I am as helpless in heavenly strength as an infant in nature strength and wisdom. Shall I obey my commander-in-chief, and write and bear his message of eternal truth light and gospel life immortal, or shall I obey men tradition preachers, and, like Jonah, fly from duty?

5.] *If we shall say, From heaven.*—Then their high priest commissioning of only their men creed traditions from the elders, or rabbins, would be endangered, and we could not be esteemed truthful without obedience to John's truths.

6.] *If we say, Of men.*—If John's adherents in belief of his truth sayings hear us say John is only a self-appointment, or commissioned only by men.

9-16.] *He shall come and destroy these husbandmen.*—The rich man in gold, silver, and cattle, and the land of promise Canaan in prospective temporal and spiritual, the Jews, and give the vineyard to the poor man Gentiles, who by faith shall work the vineyard, which faith was demonstrated by Abraham's bosom son sacrifice. *Out of the vineyard.*—Jesus Christ the heir of all things, whose spirit word woman's seed blood pure and holy was shed without the city (Heb. xiii. 12). Wherefore Jesus, that he might sanctify his people with his own blood, suffered without the gate (how soon after all the Jews were driven from Jerusalem to suffer!). Let us go forth from men tradition false creeds unto Jesus without the camp, bearing his reproach. For here we have no continuing city; but we seek one to come beyond the grave.

17.] *The head of the corner.*—Not the base of the corner, as in earthly wise erections, but the head capstone of the spiritual temple of God on earth. But creeds of men, spirit Babels structures, have no truth capstone.

32.] *Last of all.*—The woman outlived her seven husbands on earth.

33.] *Resurrection.*—They could not comprehend the Pharisee men creed of a body resurrection, made of vegetation matter, that, like the body, soon rotted back to nature elements; and deemed the resurrection of a rotten mortal body, rotten potato, pumpkin, or any other nature body or product, alike untruthful doctrine of men creeds void of truth; and if all those seven men husbands of one wife should be raised with physical powers and lusts, they would be likely each to claim her as their wife, and a fist or other war fight would be a likely result, and the heaven of peace would

be turned into a war heaven; thus the Sadducees nature reason unspirit born would quite likely argue the question.

34.] *The children of this world.*—Gen. ii. 7: And the Lord formed man of the dust of the ground.

35.] *Worthy.*—To render worthy to exalt; worthy to obtain resurrection life from the dead blood life corruption body of this world's products (Gal. iii. 28).

36.] *Children of God.*—They who are accounted worthy by the Lord Jesus Christ, who is the only resurrection and life spiritual and immortal.

37.]—*Now that the dead are raised.*—They are; past tense (not they are to be at the close of time, or some future day. John xi. 25: Jesus said, I am (not I will be at some future day) but now, present tense) the resurrection and the life (1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortal life). Christ in God only can impart immortal life, the negative all unworthy of resurrection life immortal must eternally remain dead when dead at blood life's probation close (Ezek. xviii. 4).

38.] *For he is not a God of the dead.*—John iv. 24: God is a spirit; and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. Heb. i. 7: And of the angels God saith, who maketh his angels spirits (Luke xx. 36). Those worthy of a resurrection at blood life body death are equal to the angels who are spirits, and God's children. He begets them; he is a spirit, and like begets its like is God's law of his universe of life light.

47.] *For a shew.*—Popes with a mad-cap, triplicate stories, emblem of their spirit Babel insanity in their service of the devil, who fills them with desire for adoration of mortals, and vain tinsel monkey puppet show decorations. Thus silly kings, and emperors, and warrior officials, and mummary ceremonial gowned preachers for a show change gowns, and read prayers to appear devout, but the salary is the secret prompter within them.

CHAPTER XXI.

8.] *Take heed that ye be not deceived.*—Many shall come in my name. Popery of Rome comes out with his infallible bull dog that bites himself.

15.] *For I will give you a mouth and wisdom.*—All who ask God for wisdom through Christ's aid, if holy in love faith, receive wisdom, gospel true light, which all their adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist.

17.] *All men.*—Gen. ii. 7 : And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground. iii. 19 : Dust thou (Adam, man) art, and unto dust shalt thou return. Thus all Adam and Eve's sin lust begotten race are but dust poisoned by sin, and all dust bodies return to their mother earth ; spirit born they hate, who have the spirit of Christ ; the wicked love lust and sin.

27.] *Then shall they.*—All saints at that period of time which draws near, most likely before the year 2000 of this era, see the Son of man coming in a cloud, with power and great glory, to open a new dispensation, as seemeth good unto the Lord our God. Amen.

28.] *Your redemption.*—From the powers of evil, sickness, sorrow, pain, and death.

33.] *Earth shall pass away.*—Deut. xxxii. 22 : Fire shall consume the earth (Ps. xlv. 2). Isa. xxiv. 19 : Earth is dissolved. li. 6 : Earth shall wax old. Mal. iv. 1 ; 2 Pet. iii. 10 ; Rev. xx. 11 : Earth fled away.

35.] *As a snare.*—Unexpected the inhabitants of the earth will behold the Lord coming with power as judge, to destroy all the wicked as in a moment. Num. xvi. 21.

36.] *Pray always.*—Any moment of the earthly existence of any mortal they may close blood life's probation.

CHAPTER XXII.

3.] *Then entered Satan into Judas.*—Satan was a fallen angel of high order, and like Adam became a rebel ; now death (Heb. ii. 14).

26.] *Greater.*—Let him be as the younger. Matt. xviii. 3 : Except ye be converted, and become as little children (spirit born new child of God, or spirit as angels).

30.] *In my kingdom.*—John xviii. 36 : My kingdom is not of this world.

32.] *When thou art converted.*—Clearly showing that Peter was

not yet spirit born, and therefore not yet a child of God. A poor rock to found the church of Rome on.

33.] *I am ready.*—Blood life flesh is full of boast courage, but helpless against Satan unaided by the Lord. John xv. 5: Without me ye can do nothing.

36.] *But now.*—Hitherto I have had regard to your infirmities, and have provided for your necessities in time of peace; but now I give you warning of coming persecution from the powers of Satan and his wicked servants, under the name of corporal weapons, as parable allegories.

38.] *It is enough.*—The apostles, as even at this day men creeds, hold to carnal weapons. Priests uphold national wars with hell weapons of death, some volunteer to murder their fellow-mortals, and teach resurrection of carnal sin lust begotten bodies, not discerning that spiritual weapons, spiritual birth, spiritual resurrection is from the saints' dead bodies, not of their dead, rotten bodies, Christ clearly states and defines. But carnal worldly wisdom is ever substituted for spirit life teachings, thus worshiping the creature instead of the spirit Creator, and source of all holy spirit life.

51.] *And healed him.*—Christ's power is not lessened in spirit, though in body among his foes, no mere man could have restrained Christ's power to then destroy his foes.

53.] *Daily with you.*—Christ shows the freedom which he had to declare his Father's will, wherefore no man could hinder him until the appointed hour.

62.] *Wept bitterly.*—Not as Esau and others for worldly honors or property lost, but from true contrition.

67.] *If I tell you [the truth] ye will not believe.*—The servants of the devil are ever willing followers of evil, when led captive under false promises of reward, as Eve was in Eden (Gen. iii. 4, 5). The wicked love novel lies.

68.] *If I also ask you.*—For what good act of mine you thus malign and assault my body life, ye will not answer me, nor let me go.

70.] *Art thou then the Son of God?*—Ye say that I am, or that truth I consent to; all other things ye witness against me you know are false.

CHAPTER XXIII.

2.] *Forbidding.*—Matt. xvii. 27; xxii. 21: Render therefore unto Cæsar the things which are Cæsar's, and unto God the things which are God's, clearly showing that the Jew rich man's witnesses were of their Father the devil. (John viii. 44.) The devil is a liar and the father of liars.

3.] *Thou sayest it.*—That I am the descendant of David by woman's seed birth blood life I admit.

4.] *I find no fault in this man.*—Pilate admits and witnesses himself that Jesus was spotless of any wrong doing.

5.] *Teaching.*—That was the great trouble with the Jewish priests, they taught of nature wisdom traditions of men.

7.] *Herod's jurisdiction.*—Who put John to death to gratify a miserable dancing girl's devil mother's vengeance. The same devil was in Herod still, who would reward a silly fool's dance, whose intellect was in her limbs that played the puppet-show farce for silly fools: and he would surrender Jesus to death, as he had John his forerunner, as prophesied. Thus war murderers and wicked devils in human form rule on earth.

15.] *No, nor yet Herod.*—I have examined him before you, he is innocent of any crime. And Herod (the murderer of John) cannot with all his search find any cause for the murderous outcry of Jewish priests and people to crucify him.

16.] *I will therefore chastise.*—Then release him after perpetrating a criminal act, as judge governor, to whip the innocent, such devils in human form seek official stations to show forth demon power.

18-22.] *No cause.*—Innocent; but Pilate to please the accusers, who were all perjured liars and tare seed children of the devil, would whip and scourge the Lamb of God, innocent of any evil.

23.] *Crucified.*—With loud voices the rabble devils cry, Away with Jesus, crucify him: And the voices of them and the chief priests prevailed.

24.] *And Pilate.*—Who repeatedly gave his decision that they had maintained no just cause of action against Jesus, that he was innocent of any crime or wrong-doing whatever, still, like all unjust officials who pamper to the prejudices of the multitude, and murder, and scourge, and plunder the innocent. Pilate gave sentence that it should be as they required.

28.] *Weep for yourselves.*—Jesus saw that sorrow, war, pestilence, famine, and death awaited the inhabitants of the rich man's city, which soon would be their fiery furnace and hell torture.

29.] *Blessed are the barren.*—The horrid hell famine in Jerusalem when surrounded by the Roman army, and mothers ate their own infant children, and better not to have children than to have them exposed to such distress.

30.] *Cover us.*—They would choose to be killed at once rather than live in such protracted misery; yet murderers prefer the prison hell life to the hangman's death. But life or death awaits all Adam's race.

31.] *Do these things.*—Murder the prince of peace, so soon after his gospel grace conditional peace proclamation. Coming years will make them still harder in heart to believe as a nation my gospel truths.

34.] *Forgive them.*—Infinite love of God, about to leave the woman's seed body to nature death, cries out to his spirit life, Immortal Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do; they are blinded by their men creed traditions of the elders, rabbies. If the Jewish priests had been holy, and searched the Scriptures, instead of men creeds, they would have known Jesus.

39.] *Save thyself and us.*—Thus all the wicked rail, and ridicule truth, and worship fashion's idols, and patronize the liar novels, theatres, horse-trots, etc.

40.] *The other answering rebuked him.*—Dost not thou fear God? Matt. x. 28: Fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul; but rather fear God, who is able to destroy (annihilate) both soul and body in hell (the grave).

42.] *Lord, remember me.*—When thou comest into thy (spirit power and immortal life glorified, peaceful, holy heavenly) kingdom.

43.] *To-day.*—Christ entered into his spirit power kingdom the instant the spirit left the sacrificial body on the cross; and without water baptism, or Pharaoh immersion and his hosts, but with the Holy Ghost baptism (Matt. iii. 11, 16). He prepared the repentant thief, who witnessed truthfully to his wicked associate, and the murderous rabble who heard him, that Jesus had done nothing wrong, but that he was a sinner, then prayed the Lord for mercy. This prayer received an immediate answer, and the reprieve by the judge, Christ the Lord, and the promise, To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise; not as false men creeds teach that dead, rotten bodies are resurrected to heaven. 1 Cor.

xv. 44: It is raised a spirit body. 50: Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God.

46.] *Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit.*—Willingly left the woman's seed spirit begotten body on the cross dead matter; the blood life had run out of it through the horrid, cruel holes in the feet and hands, made by the ruthless iron spikes, and the loving heart that pulsed the blood life ceased to beat when its life fountain ceased to flow; and the cruel soldier's spear pierced the tender side of Jesus' holy body and life blood, and water cleansing, for souls of believers of truth, flowed out. The breath life of the body blood life ceased to inflate, when no more instruction would be heeded by the wicked Jews, who followed men creed preachers' advice instead of the commands of the commander-in-chief of the army of God.

47-49.] *Certainly this was a righteous man.*—All admitted Jesus to be innocent. Antichrist, the man of sin, the pope of Rome, holds the cross as a relic of Roman soldiers' triumph over Jesus, as Satan's war murderers.

51.] *Joseph.*—He had united with Nicodemus and opposed the crucifixion of Jesus. God hath always witnesses of his truths holy.

53.] *Never man.*—That all occasion might be taken from wicked men to ascribe the resurrection of Christ Jesus' body to any other, who might before have been buried in the same grave.

54.] *Preparation.*—For the solemnities of the sabbath day which next ensued.

CHAPTER XXIV.

1-12.] *The resurrection.*—Matt. xxviii. 10. *Two men.*—Angels in human robes. *Is not here.*—Christ's body is not ubiquitous, to be everywhere, though it be glorified. Jesus' body did not rot or see corruption, as mortals' dead bodies. It was spirit begotten holy; all others of Adam's race are unholy and vile (Phil. iii. 21).

13.] *Two of them.*—Of the disciples, not of the eleven apostles. *Furlongs.*—Eight to a mile.

16.] *Their eyes were holden.*—Kept from discovering who he was.

18.] *Cleopas*.—Supposed to be Alpheus, the father of James the Less, and Jude.

21.] *Redeemed Israel*.—Delivered their temporal government from their Roman bondage (emblem of their spiritual bondage to Satan death); and raise them to great national prosperity and glory.

26.] *Ought not Christ*.—Was it not needful, in order to fulfill the prophecies, that the Messiah should die in blood life? Did they not clearly foretell that he would be cut off, but not for himself (Dan. ix. 26)?

31.] *Their eyes were opened*.—The difficulties in the way of their recognizing him were removed. He vanished; disappeared. Made the body of flesh and bones invisible in a moment, as after the resurrection ascension sight was hid in the distance cloud that carried the nature elements of the flesh and bones in gentle life showers to nature's life vegetation of which it is composed (1 Cor. xv. 50).

32.] *Our heart burn*.—Glow with wonder and delight, as mine do now in writing words that come to my mind as I write, new from the Lord. *Opened to us the Scriptures*.—Explained to us their meaning.

38.] *Thoughts*.—Affrighted, terrified, they supposed that they had seen a spirit. Strange and perplexing thoughts, doubting of the truth.

39.] *For a spirit*.—John iv. 24: God is a spirit. Matt. iii. 16: And John saw the spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon Jesus. Rom. viii. 9: If the spirit of God dwell not in you, and if ye have not the spirit of Christ, you are none of his. viii. 8: So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. A spirit hath not flesh and bones as ye see me have,—to convince his disciples by ocular demonstration of his resurrection spirit power to raise a dust flesh body void of blood life pulsating power and show. Acts xvii. 28: In God we live, and move, and have our being. Out of God's life power we cannot live, move, or have a being is inevitably the negative.

43.] *Did eat*.—Not from any necessity, or good that it did the bloodless body. Gen. xviii. 8: They did eat; thus with his disciples, to give them greater confirmation by divers senses of nature. Christ by filling the bloodless body with spirit life immortal, used it merely to satisfy and communicate.

45.] *Understanding*.—He inspired and enlightened their soul's

mind intellects by quoting those portions of Scripture which foretold his blood life death and spirit life resurrection, which they did not comprehend before.

46.] *To rise from the dead the third day.*—Otherwise he could not fulfill the prophecies concerning him, prove that he was the Messiah to procure the salvation of his spirit begotten good seed to spirit life immortal.

47.] *In his name.*—John xiv. 6 : Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life (immortal spiritual), no man cometh to the Father but by me. xi. 25 : Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection and the life. 26 : Whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. To all nations preach, beginning at Jerusalem, the dwelling-place of his murderers, who had enjoyed and hitherto resisted all the means of grace. In Christ's name preach his gospel, not creeds of men.

48.] *These things.*—His life, holiness, miracles, and teachings, and commands.

49.] *The promise.*—The Holy Ghost, which I promise you from my Father (John xiv. 16 ; xv. 26). In whom also consists the accomplishment and summary of all the promises of grace (Acts i. 4). *Endued.*—Adorned and replenished therewith, and likewise baptized and governed by the divine power of the Holy Spirit of God, and spirit of Christ (Rom. viii. 8, 9), without which you are none of his (1 Cor. xv. 23, 44, 50).

51.] *While he blessed them.*—His apostles and disciples ; and in spirit he went to heaven.

JOHN.

CHAPTER I.

1.] *In the beginning.*—Before creation of matter of the world, when there was neither time, nor temporal things in any form, during eternity past, ere time's parenthesis between eternity past and eternity to come. The word was with God, and the word was God. As an earthly father might be said to be possessed of the life germ of his son previous to sowing the nature Adamic life seed, and when the son matured to life's manhood the son could truthfully say that he possessed the same nature powers (if equal in intellect, and strength of body). That kindred ties of love, and all matters that were essential to the happiness of the father, were equally the same to the son ; that each acted in unity concert, and having infinite resources all things were held in common.

2.] *The same.*—The Son of God before the creation of the world did retain himself, as it were, within the centre of his glory and blessedness, which he hath in common with the Father (John xvii. 5), without producing himself by works or words.

3.] *By him.*—Not only as by a joint and co-operating cause with the Father. Without him, he is of the Father, the same as one portion of the ocean is water power and quality with the other part of the ocean, and of the same material. The Son word partakes of the spirit attributes, and acts in conjunction with the Father in creative union power infinite. *Without him.*—This seems to be added with reference to this world, and the sun, and its surrounding planets ; hath made them in unity of creation power essence, and in communion of the will, counsel, and virtue of the Father, who must always be acknowledged to be as the well spring, and beginning of everything operating in the Son, and by him.

4.] *In him.*—Was immortal life seed from the Father which was the spirit light life, that without his aid as mediator no mortal could ever have attained to immortal spirit life angelic. 1 Tim. vi. 16: Light which no man could approach unto. Life immortal, God the father being only immortal in the beginning, from whom the word Son emanated and all other immortals.

5.] *The light.*—God the father's original self-existent light,

being eclipsed and almost extinguished in man by sin, leaving only the soul's spirit egg mind dormant, and unproductive of life spiritual, unless impregnated by the word of God the Son, who brought life and immortality to light through the gospel. Man's inward spirit life darkness could not by nature comprehend anything thereby to salvation, and immortal spirit life; even as the eye which hath not its inward light seeth nothing in the outward light, nor with inward light in darkness.

6.] *There was.*—The divine light through the only spirit begotten Son opened a narrow way to immortal life by his spirit word power as proclaimed in his grace, conditional with obedience to its requirements of faith which worketh by love, as revealed in his gospel truths, whereof John the Baptist was the first preacher.

7.] *For a witness.*—To give mortals certain knowledge of the coming Messiah. *Of the Light.*—Of Christ, the spring and author of this light celestial. *Might believe.*—Might be induced and prepared to believe God's grace gospel truth proclamation.

9.] *Lighteth.*—Infuseth and preserveth in mortals some sparks of the first light by the gift of reason, understanding, and knowledge, hearing and sight (Rom. ii. 19).

10.] *He was.*—Even from creation he hath always been present with the world in power, and in perpetual action, giving seed-time and harvest.

11.] *He came unto his own.*—The Jews had been his favored people, rich in grace provisions, and conditional promises, and covenants; all of which they broke as a nation, and priesthood previously ordained of God on condition.

12.] *As many.*—This grace provision reached to the Gentile world, before poor, and destitute of Scripture light and gospel spiritual life food.

13.] *Not of blood.*—Blood life nature sin lust Adamic seed. *Nor of the will of man.*—Man's will did not pray for the spirit birth gospel provisions. *Of God.*—By his good spirit life immortal seed (Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5; vi. 63; Rom. viii. 8, 9). 1 John v. 18: begotten of God.

14.] *Word was made flesh.*—Gen. iii. 15: The woman's seed shall bruise thy (the devil, death) head.

15.] *Bare witness.*—This is he of whom I spake, the spirit begotten Son of the Lord God, the only source of immortal life by way of spirit birth.

16.] *Have all we.*—Believers who participate of spirit birth from Christ's spirit word of God's love seed. *And grace.*—Through which saints are received into God's grace, by the grace and love of the Father towards Christ our mediator (Rom. v. 15; Eph. i. 6). Having established Christ head of all spirit born of God, he distributes to every member of his spirit vine a portion of his gifts, spiritual food for the new spirit creature in Christ.

17.] *For the law.*—Christ alone sows immortal life seed in his gospel word of God, which by obedience to all God's Scripture law, or by his grace word sown by Christ Jesus. Moses and the law do indeed set down what the law of God requires of mortals to gain his grace and immortal life, but cannot give sinful mortals the power of fulfilling it. And we are equally helpless now in and of our own strength to combat our foes (John xv. 5). Without Christ's aid we can do nothing successfully. Christ doth strengthen, shield, defend, and reward all his faithful holy children spirit born of his good seed of the spirit kingdom.

18.] *No man.*—Man is but a dust being in a state of nature blood life being. Gen. ii. 7: And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground. iii. 19: Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. *Declared him.*—God, who formerly was invisible in his spirit life immortal ways, hath made as it were himself visible to his saints in Christ.

23.] *The voice.*—Isa. xl. 3: The voice that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord. 6: Cry, All flesh is grass. 7: Surely the people is grass. 8: The grass withereth, the flower fadeth, but the word of our God shall stand forever. 17: All nations are before God as nothing.

24.] *The Pharisees.*—This seems to be noted to show that like titled D. D.'s they were not satisfied when they had done their message, but they must question John because he baptized, to the contempt, and as it were in emulation of so many religious washings appointed and observed by them.

25.] *Why.*—By what authority dost thou bring in this new sacrament (the same as they question Shaw's Day Thoughts, the forerunner of the Lord's spirit power dispensation which draweth near, and unclean spirits have stirred up the people with their developments, to blind the churches on earth, and prejudice them against the Lord's spirit life birth, and spirit body resurrection life immortal). And what virtue can it have being administered by thee, who hast not so high a calling as those great persons who

are foretold in Scripture that they shall pour out the water of grace promised by the prophets?

26.] *I baptize.*—I am the ministerial forerunner of the Messiah, who is already come into the world though he be not manifested, and by his authority I do that which I do; and upon him depends all the spiritual virtue, whereof I dispense nothing but the outward sign.

27.] *Coming after me.*—Before whom I am sent to prepare his way.

28.] *Bethabara.*—It is thought to be the place mentioned Jud. vii. 24, and it would seem there was some passage over Jordan there, a fording place as the Hebrew name importeth.

29.] *The Lamb.*—Him whom God hath appointed to open a spirit door to spirit born soul minds.

31.] *I knew him not.*—Not by sight before God had revealed him to me.

36.] *Lamb of God.*—This was spoken as alluding to the paschal lamb emblem.

41.] *The Messiah.*—The Christ. Dan. ix. 25: Unto Messiah the prince (of heaven). 26: And after sixty-two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself.

44.] *Bethsaida.*—A city situated near the lake of Gennesaret, in Galilee.

45.] *Of Nazareth.*—That for a time had his ordinary abode there (Luke ii. 4). Moses and the prophets (Luke xxiv. 44; Gen. iii. 15; xlix. 10; Deut. xviii. 15–18; Isa. ix. 6, 7; liii. 2–12; Jer. xxiii. 6; Ps. xxii.).

46.] *Come and see.*—Nazareth was in Galilee, a country town, some of whose inhabitants were pagans in creed, and many of the inhabitants of Galilee were people of a low order of poor uneducated people. Thus the brightest diamonds are surrounded with dirt, and the highest intellectual gem that ever graced earth was called a Nazarene, though truthfully also a Bethlehemite (Matt. ii. 1; Mic. v. 2). Bethlehem, Judea (Jud. xvii. 7–13; xix. 1–18; Ruth i. 1–22; ii. 3, 4). Boaz and Ruth, Jew and Gentile, ancestors of the Virgin Mary.

47.] *Israelite indeed.*—A spiritual Israelite, not nature seed of sin lust of the rich man Jewish nationality. Ps. li. 5: Behold I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me. All Adam's seed was sentenced to death. Gen. iii. 19: Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. God's statute law, notwith-

standing men creeds to the contrary, with their eternal life of the wicked in hell torments which partakes wholly of the creed of the devil as uttered by him to our first mother, Eve. The first preacher of that doctrine in Eden. Gen. iii. 4, 5, 6: And the serpent (devil, death, poison of mortal's body and soul) said unto the woman (Eve), Ye shall not surely die. The devil first preached that the wicked was immortal, contradicting flatly God's law imperative statute. Gen. ii. 17: Thou shalt surely die; not eternally dying, but in the day that thou eatest thereof soul spirit mind death severed from God's spirit love.

48.] *I saw thee.*—Christ's divinity origin by spirit birth was hereby shown, because he knew things absent as if they were present. Gen. iii. 15: The promise of the Lord God, or spirit Son of God's word seed. In secret prayer communion with God, though unseen by men, we are never unobserved by Jesus Christ's spirit love in the spirit word Son of God, creation power and infinite attributes, imparted to him by his spirit Father, who only innate of himself is self-existent life immortal and the only source of immortal spirit life (1 Tim. vi. 16). By yielding obedience to Christ's commands we learn by experimental regeneration that God in Christ is love, by improving the light we receive at spirit birth from him we are prepared for higher attainments, and brighter manifestations of his power and glory.

51.] *Son of man.*—Spirit word creation power Son of God, whose word spoken in Eden (Gen. iii. 15) begot spiritually Jesus the Son of man (spirit second Adam), from the woman's nature seed egg of the Virgin Mary, with the same spirit creation word power that he made the sun: let there be light and there was light.

CHAPTER II.

1.] *The third day.*—After the events recorded in the preceding chapter. *Cana of Galilee*—A town on the west side of Galilee, so called to distinguish it from Cana near Sidon.

4.] *What have I to do with thee?*—Thou art the woman spoken of some four thousand years since, of whose nature Adamic man life egg germ seed, my man blood life, nature blood life, by spirit word of God power of creation was formed, but no power to make

wine of water, or any other power to create or transform was derived from thee; and there is no time appointed for a display of the spirit word creation power at thy command, who art but mortal woman. What have I in spirit power in common with dust Adamic nature? shall dust command, or call upon God's spirit creation power to obey?

5.] *Do it.*—Mary had faith, and in answer to her faith spirit life love Jesus complied with her request.

6.] *Six water-pots of stone.*—It was the custom of the Jews to have such vessels for water, for purposes of purification.

8.] *Governor of the feast.*—The officiating person who had the general supervision of the feast as ruler.

9.] *Water that was made wine.*—That which was drawn out was made wine; we are not told whether that remaining was made into wine, but most likely all in the vessels was the same. And in the sacraments water would be far better than drugs and bad liquors colored to resemble wine, if not by faith better to be used than wine referring to this miracle.

10.] *Good wine.*—Pure juice of the grape, unadulterated, unfermented.

11.] *His glory.*—His divine power and love. *Believed.*—Were confirmed in faith, which was as yet feeble in them, animal nature predominating in them, and being thereby blinded as to-day, adhering to the carnal nature body blood life, and its resurrection of body, flesh, and blood: instead of spirit birth of spirit life immortal seed of God's infinite love, in his spirit word Son, which was manifested to mortals in the spirit begotten redemption body sacrifice holy Jesus of Bethlehem and Nazareth, which was the only possible redemption from the death sentence pronounced against Adam and his offspring, by the way soul spirit egg mind impregnation by God's spirit word promise that the seed of the woman Eve, who had first broken God's law command, should bruise the serpent's head (Gen. iii. 15). Heb. ii. 14: Thereby to destroy the death executioner the devil.

17.] *Remembered.*—Ps. lxxix. 9: The reproaches of them that reproach thee are fallen upon me.

18.] *What sign.*—What miracle dost thou work in proof of thy authority to do these things, as at this day? where is thy parchment commission from men in sectarian creeds of men officials? Though it was not a requisite law that governed God's prophets (John x. 41); John did no miracle.

19.] *Three days.*—He refers them to his resurrection and glorification.

20.] *Forty and six years.*—The same misapplication of his words they made, when they accused him before Pilate.

22.] *The Scripture.*—Those passages which foretold his blood life body of woman's seed death, and spirit life immortal.

24.] *Did not commit himself unto them.*—Did not trust his woman's seed nature body in their power, knowing their hypocrisy, and man's fallen nature.

25.] *He knew what was in man.*—He knew all carnal, unspirit born unholy mortals on earth were by nature sin lust birth servants of the devil.

CHAPTER III.

1.] *A ruler.*—A member of the Sanhedrim, or great Jewish council.

2.] *By night.*—For fear of persecution by the Jews (John vii. 13; ix. 22; xii. 42; xix. 38). Knowing how the Jewish priests and men creed officials and office-holders hated Christ Jesus. *Except God.*—He acknowledged Jesus to be a great prophet sent from God.

3.] *Except a man be born again.*—5: Except a man be born of water and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. Earth is the kingdom of death, where the devil death prince of darkness holds most of Adam's race as abject slaves to his false teachings and lusts and vicious sin appetites.

4.] *How can a man be born when.*—Nicodemus, like all blind men creeds, cling to carnal nature birth. Gal. iii. 26: For ye (spirit born holy) are all the children of God by faith in Jesus Christ. 28: There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one (in like new creature spirit bodies, void of sexual appendages, or nature bodies with animal lust desires, corruption and death: immortal life is all from God the father of spirits holy). Heb. xii. 9: Spirit beings.

5.] *Jesus answered, Verily, verily* [In truth and perfect certainty], *I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.*—1 Pet. i.

23: Being born again not of corruptible (sin lust nature Adamic) seed, but of incorruptible. By the word of God (John vi. 63: It is the spirit that quickeneth (maketh alive), the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life), which liveth and abideth forever. John i. 13: Which were born not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. iv. 24: God is a spirit. 1 John iii. 9: Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin: for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. 10: In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil. Heb. xii. 9: Father of spirit life (1 John iv. 16; v. 18). And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory. 1 Tim. vi. 16: Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man (flesh mortal blood life being) can approach unto. 2 Tim. i. 10: But is now made manifest in the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death (of souls who accept salvation by spirit birth from his spirit love seed), and brought life (spiritual) and immortality to light through the gospel. John v. 40: And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life (spiritual immortal). Rom. ix. 8: They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God. John iii. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the spirit is spirit. Gal. vi. 7, 8: Be not deceived: God is not mocked (by being the resurrector of sin lust begotten rotten bodies): for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption (rottenness); but he that soweth to the spirit shall of the spirit reap life everlasting.

7.] *Marvel not that I [Jesus] said unto thee [Nicodemus], Ye must be born again.*—John i. 12, 13: As many as received Christ Jesus, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: which were born not of blood, but of God.

9.] *How can these things be?*—Nicodemus' mind was all blinded by nature birth and Pharisee creed body resurrection. Jesus answered him in the fifteenth verse, That whosoever believeth in Christ should not perish (as all unspirit born must in death of body and soul), but have everlasting life.

10.] *Jesus answered.*—They have been clearly set forth by the

prophets, and you a master teacher among the Jews know not the prophets' teachings.

11.] *We speak.*—I and my disciples do teach doctrines that are certain truth, and are not human invention imaginary myths as your men creed traditions are, or utterly false.

12.] *Earthly things.*—Things which take place on earth, such as being born of the spirit, the evidences of which are obvious to the senses of feeling and wisdom of all spirit born of God's spirit love seed sown by Christ. *Heavenly things.*—Things less plain, relating to God, Christ, heaven, and eternity.

13.] *No man.*—No man of himself, or by the teachings of worldly wisdom of earth's professors of wisdom, or philosophers who are wise in self-conceited myths. But I give you ocular demonstrations of heavenly truths.

14.] *Moses lifted up the serpent.*—Num. xxi. 8, 9. *Be lifted up.*—On the cross, to fulfill by ocular demonstration what the prophets of God had proclaimed, and what had for some four thousand years been typified by sacrifices as a propitiation for the sins of believers in his truth proclamation of grace, on conditions of obedience to his commands.

15.] *Believeth.*—John xi. 25: Jesus saith unto her, I am the resurrection and the life.

16.] *Gave his only begotten Son.*—The highest expression of his infinite compassion and love. Whosoever of all Adam's or Noah's race, without respect of person, or country, seet, or age, but an especial promise is to young early seekers after truth, before vile nature's vicious sin habits have poisoned the soul's mind intellect.

17.] *Might be saved.*—On compliance with the terms of salvation.

18.] *Not condemned.*—All true believers are spirit born, and have the spirit love of Christ and are holy, and are thereby immortal. John xi. 25, 26: Whosoever liveth (soul's spirit born, and living children of God) and believeth (by way of spirit love light holy belief) in me, shall never die. I am the resurrection and the life. He that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only (spirit love) begotten Son of God. Thus showing the judgment day is now; the sinners are condemned, and the repentant sinners pardoned daily each reap life, or death, of body and soul (Ezek. xviii. 4).

19.] *And this is the condemnation.*—Cause of condemnation. *Light is come.*—Spirit life immortal through grace of God pro-

claimed in the Scriptures, and experienced by thousands of witnesses who are spirit born of God's love seed life immortal. And men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.

20.] *For every one that doeth evil hateth the light.*—The incorrigibly wicked hated Jesus and crucified him, and hate the reproofs of his children now.

21.] *But he that doeth truth.*—Preaches the Bible truths and discards all men creeds that accord not with revealed truth and love that God approves of, as clearly stated in his revealed statute laws.

26.] *They came.*—John's disciples of water baptism, moved by jealousy, not by love which all spirit born baptized with the Holy Ghost by the Saviour are, and all such are glad to hear of genuine love birth spirit born holy conversion; whoever may proclaim God's grace proclamation truthfully, as revealed in the Scriptures. *All men come to him.*—All kinds of creeds that repented of evil deeds.

27.] *A man.*—I am no more, and no other man can be more, than God would make him; he hath made me a servant, and therefore both you and I ought to content ourselves with our degree and measure, and yield the sovereign honor to the Lord, which is Christ; or, I have received what light of spirit life immortal I have by God's gift, there is no cause of self-glory for me nor of ambition for you (1 Cor. iv. 7).

28.] *Ye yourselves.*—John reproves his disciples because they believed not what he had told them, that he was but the voice proclaiming Christ's coming.

29.] *Friend of the bridegroom.*—One who acts for him, and rejoices to see him honored.

30.] *He.*—Christ must increase in influence and honor over the earth until his final triumphant overthrow of all who obey the prince of darkness and him also (Heb. ii. 14; 1 Cor. xv. 26).

31.] *Above all.*—He proclaims Christ the king of saints, and commander-in-chief of his army of holiness spirit born love light immortals, who are invincible while they obey his commands, and abide in his love.

32.] *No man.*—Few in comparison to the whole, and none uninfluenced by the Holy Ghost in unison with Christ's love, that like light would illuminate dark minds.

33.] *Hath set to his seal.*—By believing in Christ and receiving

his spirit love life immortal seed into his soul mind, he by spirit birth love knows of a truth experimentally that what God hath said concerning Christ is truth.

35.] *Given all things.*—Pertaining to the salvation of spirit born holy believers of his gospel truths, and fulfillment of prophecies of his prophets. *Into his hand.*—As mediator, that he might give eternal life spiritual to all who accept of his proffered grace mercy mediation and spirit birth love seed from his Father, sovereign of the universe.

36.] *He that believeth.*—Acts in accordance with their soul mind belief, and receives spirit birth love life immortal. *He that believeth not.*—The truth of God in his Son's gospel truth proclamation, gives it no attention, and when blood life closes, shall not see life spiritual immortal. But the wrath of God (the judgment passed on Adam abides on all his race who are of the earth carnal and earthy) abideth on him. Gen. iii. 19: Dust thou art, and unto (death) dust shalt thou return. Abideth on him; no resurrection life can reach him.

CHAPTER IV.

2.] *Baptized not.*—Jesus' baptism was a spirit life baptism, not body blood life repentance baptism. Matt. iii. 11: I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance; but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear. He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire.

4.] *Samaria.*—Lying between Judea and Galilee.

5.] *Sychar.*—Previously called Sychem, and now Nablous, and lies south of Samaria, between the mountains Ebal and Gerizim.

9.] *No dealings with the Samaritans.*—Some apostate Jews had there established a false worship to imitate that of Jerusalem, wherefore they were displeasing to each other and held no friendly dealings.

10.] *Living water.*—Rev. xxii. 17: Whosoever will, let him partake of the water of life freely. Spirit life immortal drink that expandeth eternally and overflows to God the father of all spirits immortal, is spirit love, and to all that are spirit born of God,

and to our neighbors as unto ourselves. No supreme miserly selfishness can inhabit with Christ's spirit love living water, pure spirit love.

11.] *Whence then.*—Her nature mind thought only of spring or well water.

14.] *The water that I shall give him.*—Spirit love from God, who only hath immortality. God is love, and they that are spirit born holy drink of his living water of life through Christ the spirit vine, and pulsate in new creature life spirit love that never dries up, but ever grows by expansion and overflows with love.

15.] *Neither come hither to draw.*—Her dark carnal nature mind could not comprehend spirit birth new creature life, nor its drink. 1 Cor. x. 4: They drank of that spiritual rock that followed them, and that rock was Christ (not Peter).

20.] *This mountain.*—Mount Gerizim. As she perceived him to be a prophet, she desired to have him decide the question of dispute between the Samaritans and the Jerusalem Jews, as to which place was the right place of worship.

21.] *The hour cometh.*—The time is near when in every place on earth suitable for holy worship of God in spirit and in truth, in your secret devotions, but in this mountain or Jerusalem the true spiritual worshipers shall not assemble in your synagogues.

22.] *Of the Jews.*—They had greater light as to divine worship, and from them in part was the Messiah's woman's seed nature in the flesh and blood sacrificial body of the holy Jesus.

23.] *True worshipers.*—God is a spirit, God is love, God is holiness spirit. Truthful worshipers of God are those of his family and kindred spirit, they worship the Father of all spirit life immortal in spirit and in truth; such the Father of spirits begets by his spirit word creation power infinite spirit love Son's good seed sown in the only germinating spirit eggs on earth, the soul's intellect spirit egg mind. Ezek. xiv. 14, 20: Though Noah, Daniel, and Job were in it, as I live, saith the Lord God, they shall deliver neither son nor daughter; they shall deliver but their own souls (not bodies) by their righteousness. xviii. 4: The soul that sinneth it shall die. Acts ii. 41: The same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls. James i. 21: Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word (spirit of Christ, love of God; impregnation of soul), which is able to save your souls. 1 Pet. iv. 19: Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God

commit the keeping of their souls (not bodies) to him in well doing, as unto a faithful creator. Isa. liv. 5: For thy maker is thine husband; of the her soul (Ps. xxxiv. 2).

24.] *God is a Spirit.*—And they that worship him must (if they worship him) worship him in spirit, and in truth. Spirit powers of the mind, distinct from the body. The souls of mortals, the intelligent immaterial spirit, she, that by impregnation of God's immortal life spirit love brings forth the new creature in Christ Jesus love spirit (2 Cor. v. 17). Gal. vi. 15: New creature. Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul shall make her boast in the Lord, the humble shall hear thereof and be glad. 3: O magnify the Lord with me, and let us exalt his name together.

26.] *I that speak unto thee am he*—This was the first time Jesus had openly and explicitly declared himself to be the Christ.

34.] *My meat.*—The Messiah's essential spirit word of God. His spirit Father did not receive any nourishment from the woman's seed blood life which sustained only the flesh body of nature that fed on nature products that composed it. John iii. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the spirit is spirit. Two distinct separate beings; the flesh mortal, the spirit holy and immortal that fed only on spirit food immortal love.

38.] *Other men.*—The prophets; herein is declared the difference between the ministry of the law, and the gospel spirit birth spirit life immortal dispensation of Christ, its holy high priest.

39.] *Believed on him.*—Showed themselves willing to learn, and be obedient to his doctrine of spirit birth, and spirit love's expansion overflowing as doth a living well spring fountain.

41.] *Many more believed.*—This was the harvest of which Jesus had spoken.

42.] *And know.*—By experimental spirit birth love, which accompanied Christ's words. John vi. 63: The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life. *Of the world.*—Saviour of believing Jews and Gentiles.

43.] *Into Galilee.*—Cana, not into Nazareth (Luke iv. 24), where they would thrust him out of his own city for telling them truthfully how to obtain spirit birth love life immortal after blood life's death.

44.] *Jesus himself testified.*—Witnessed that a prophet hath no honor in his own country. Familiarity of good persons with evil beings who by nature are dead to spirit life immortal, and incapa-

ble of appreciating spirit birth life, malign and discredit their neighbor, whom they knew only as a blood life flesh body mortal like themselves.

48.] *Except ye see signs.*—Unless by miracles he showed that he was the Messiah they would not believe him, being blinded by men creeds that taught of flesh body resurrections, and many contradictions of Scripture truths, and wholly void of heavenly spirit birth love life eternal.

50.] *Thy son liveth.*—The nature blood life is wholly dependent on God's mercy, that spares mortals in life that they may repent until probation their appointed time closes; and God can if he sees it best for the mortal prolong in answer to prayer mortal blood life pulsations. The same word of God power that spake, Thy son liveth, giveth to souls quickening spirit life in answer to heart felt prayers, and when at the altar of prayer the soul is spirit born, saved from death (Ezek. xviii. 4), then they can truthfully who know the fact, thy son, or thy daughter liveth. Lord please help me develop my spirit birth love life from thee.

54.] *The second miracle.*—The second he had wrought at Cana, first water into wine.

CHAPTER V.

2.] *Bethesda.*—House of mercy. Many at the pool, into which the water of Gihon came by pipes under ground, had been mercifully healed of their diseases.

9.] *Immediately.*—The sick man was restored by Jesus' word command, when obeyed thus soul's mind is spirit born.

14.] *Sin no more.*—Showing that sin often is punished here on earth by disease. Sin no more lest a worse thing come upon thee, punished here, not hereafter.

21.] *The Son quickeneth.*—Giveth life to whom he will in unison with, and in obedience to, God his Father's will, who only hath immortal life of himself to bestow, and hath commissioned his Son to offer grace pardons conditional proclamation of spirit love birth life immortal.

22.] *Father judgeth no man.*—The spirit word, spirit Son of God Almighty, the Lord God of creation word power, that made man, judgeth him by his word commands, if disobeyed, all nature

inanimate obeys his commands. But sin lust begotten beings of Adam, not spirit begotten in soul, disobey his commands. Rom. viii. 5: For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the spirit (begotten of God's spirit word spirit love, are obedient to his spirit word commands) the things of the spirit. 24: Is passed from death unto life.

25.] *Now is.*—The hour of resurrection from the dead soul mind, the new creature spirit life being, immortal by way of spirit birth (Matt. xiii. 37–40). John iii. 5: Spirit birth. vi. 63: It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing. The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life. Eph. ii. 1: And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and in sins (Col. ii. 13).

27.] *To execute judgment.*—To rule and govern, as king of saints, and judge of all the earth, by his word commands laws, as commander-in-chief. *Because he is.*—By spirit birth the highest order of the woman's seed.

28.] *All that are in the graves.*—All what, and in what graves, shall hear? Graves, any place where the dead are deposited. 25: The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead, in trespasses and in sins (Eph. ii. 1). Col. ii. 13: And you being dead, in your sins, hath he quickened. Spiritually dead, the soul powers are triumphed over by the blood life heart will lust sin flesh appetites and desires; and the mind spirit egg is unimpregnated with spirit love life immortal seed, life immortal resurrection power. John xi. 25, 26: I am (not I will be, the last day of time; but now present tense the hour is now. 25: I am) the resurrection and the life. All the elect that are in the graves of dead works, of trespasses and sins, shall hear his voice; the gospel truth promises of conditional salvation, which if they obey their souls shall live. Ezek. xviii. 27: When the wicked man turneth away from his wickedness that he hath committed, and doeth that which is lawful and right, he shall save his soul alive. Col. iii. 1: If ye be risen with Christ.

29.] *And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life.*—John xi. 25: Jesus saith unto her, I am the resurrection and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live. 26: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die (immortal spirit life of spirit born, John iii. 5), and they that have done evil unto the resurrection of (rotteness). *Damnation*—Damn, to condemn, to decide to be bad.

Matt. xiii. 47, 48: Cast the bad away. Ezek. xviii. 4: The soul that sinneth, it shall die. Isa. v. 24: Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff (Mal. iv. 1; Matt. iii. 12), so their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust: because they have cast away the law of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel.

30.] *I can of mine own self do nothing.*—The woman's seed blood life body of Jesus, unaided by the spirit word creation power.

32.] *There is another.*—God the Father, who hath borne me witness from heaven (Matt. iii. 17). *And I know.*—I do condescend unto, and am content with this witness. And you should be convinced thereby were you not full of malice and obstinacy.

34.] *I receive not.*—I do not take testimony from men, as do earthly judges; I have no need of it; I am the upholder and sustainer of truth, and make use of it for your salvation; to whom John the Baptist's ministry hath been more evident than mine, though both are in unison with truth.

35.] *Shining light.*—2 Pet. i. 19: We have also a more sure word of prophecy. *Were willing.*—You took pleasure in John's doctrine and were touched by it, but without any firm root of faith (Matt. xiii. 20).

36.] *The works.*—The miracles, some of which he had already wrought.

37.] *Hath borne witness.*—By the prophets, and voice from heaven (Matt. iii. 7). *Ye have neither.*—It is no marvel that my father's witness is of so little esteem and weight among you, for his word is as unknown and obscure as his glorious grace provisions for your salvation, which you reject to your own ruin.

38.] *Ye have not.*—Ye have no light, nor experimental spirit birth knowledge, nor faith that worketh by love in God's Scripture truths; wherefore, like blind men, you cannot discern the light of God's witnessing, that God's spirit word creation power Son's word of promise is fulfilling by his only spirit begotten Son in the universe, who is the spirit ark of salvation to all spirit born holy, spirit born of God's spirit word love sown by Christ the only spirit medium mediator, who sows the spirit reconciliation spirit love seed in the souls of believers of his truths.

39.] *Search the Scriptures.*—Not men creed theology, popery, paganism, or rabbi traditions of the elders. You Jews boast of having Moses and the prophets, and being the rich man's sons,

rich in silver, gold, and cattle, and land of Canaan promise, but did you peruse the Hebrew Scriptures as carefully as you do the talmuds, you would receive me, because the Scriptures bear witness of me.

40.] *And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.*—Lev. xvii. 11: For the life of the flesh is in the blood. xviii. 21-24: Defile not ye yourselves in any of these things, for in all these the nations are defiled which I cast out before you. 25: And the land is defiled, therefore I do visit the iniquity thereof upon it, and the land itself vomiteth out her (the land, a female producer of the bodies sustenance. Gen. i. 11: And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed. ii. 7: And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, earth). Vomiteth out her inhabitants. iii. 19: In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread till thou return unto the ground, for out of it (her) wast thou taken; for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. Eccles. xii. 7: Then shall the dust return to earth as it was. John iii. 31: He that is of the earth is earthy. 1 Cor. xv. 47: The first man (Adam) is of the earth, earthy. Gen. vii. 23: Every living substance was destroyed which was upon the face of the earth. Rev. xiv. 3: Redeemed from the earth. Ps. cxlvi. 4: His breath goeth forth, he returneth to his earth, in that very day his thoughts perish. xxxiv. 2: Her soul.

41.] *I receive not honor from men.*—It was not his object to obtain human applause from dying mortals of dust, but the approval of his spirit Father and holy angels of love.

42.] *Have not the love of God.*—This was the reason why they would not embrace him as the Messiah; they preferred official station and men creeds.

43.] *In my Father's name.*—Spirit word creation son power of Almighty Jehovah God, supreme sovereign of the universe; the Lord God.

44.] *Receive honor one of another.*—Titled officials, rabbis, high priests, and now pope, cardinal, bishop, professor, D.D., and all the varied official appellations of men honors, soap bubbles of worldly applause of poor frail human mortals, and seek not the obedience to God's command as regards such titles, and his approval of, Well done, good and faithful servant, when blood life's panoramic dream is past as a vapor, and then receive a welcome escort of angels to the spirit joys of immortal life.

45.] *Do not think that I.*—He did not come to condemn them,

and had no desire to do it. *Moses*.—He had foretold, Deut. xviii. 15–19, the coming of the Messiah, and the condemnation of those who should reject him.

47.] *How shall ye believe my words*.—If you will not believe Moses and the prophets of God, the Scriptures which your ancestors held as a sacred legacy of truth. Thus with Shaw's Day Thoughts, all not scriptural, if any, I discard; if scriptural, as I desire them all to be, and I pray the Lord to give me a warm spirit life immortal light wisdom, and guidance, and bless them to all preachers and people on earth. Those who will not believe God's Bible Scripture truths I do not have hopes of doing them much good, but hope they may see. You reply, It is nothing new to you that I write; it is only the Bible truths, that we have read and learned in Sunday schools; thus blindly said the Jews, and rejected Christ.

CHAPTER VI.

1.] *Over the sea*.—But more properly called lake Gennesaret; on the east side of it lies Tiberias, thus giving that part or arm of the waters the name sea of Tiberias.

2–14.] *Five thousand fed*.—Matt. xiv. 13–21; Mark vi. 32–44; Luke ix. 10–17. The grandest miracles, showing forth the whole process of nature's expansion life products.

14.] *That prophet*.—Deut. xviii. 18–22: The Messiah gave ocular demonstration of his being that prophet by the expansion of the loaves through his blessing and will distribution. And likewise of the fishes.

15.] *Make him a king*.—A temporal sovereign; such as they expected their Messiah would be.

19.] *Five and twenty or thirty furlongs*.—Between three and four miles.

20.] *It is I; be not afraid*.—While I have a conscious existence, never can I forget my vision of the Saviour; his beauty was above all power of mortal pens to describe.

21.] *Immediately*.—The Lord Jesus, by miracle having stopped the contrary wind, caused the vessel to move swiftly to their landing place.

22.] *When the people.*—Found Jesus had crossed over the water without the use of a vessel, part of the way, their curiosity was excited, not their soul life's danger, they were as void of love's spirit wisdom sight as the poor volunteer soldier who perils his own life, and seeks to destroy the life of his fellow-being, often for mere political party strife, for official predominancy, to rule over their fellow-beings on earth.

26.] *Not because ye saw the miracles.*—The display of God's miraculous power over nature food, as over the expansion increase of the earth's seed products, which is a yearly succession of miraculous continued expansion of nature life food from the mother earth in obedience to God's spirit word power (Gen. i. 11), which same power, in soul mind faith that worketh by love, impregnates the new spirit born with love life immortal expansions. Nature appetites of blood life bodies and mere curiosity excited drew the people to seek Jesus again.

27.] *Labor not.*—Solely or principally for temporal blood life food, your body will rot back to nature elements of earth; it is perishable. But labor for spiritual love life's spirit birth, that is obtainable only of God the Father of all spirit love beings immortal, through the spirit truth grace, gospel words of God's infinite spirit love light life, which is not a product of earth, nor obtainable of mortal man creeds, or powers of earth, but through Christ the medium of spirit birth, and spirit food for spirit born holy.

28.] *What shall we do?*—Search the Scriptures to learn what the Lord says.

29.] *Believe on him whom he hath sent.*—Believe his words of eternal truth. The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.

33.] *The bread of God.*—The spirit life of the soul mind when received through the heart blood life will consent as truth, impregnates the intellect spirit mind soul egg, and produces a new spirit love soul creature, of spirit life immortal.

35.] *Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life.*—The door. John x. 9: By me if any man enter in, he shall be saved. No other door to heaven's spirit life immortal.

45.] *In the prophets.*—Isa. liv. 13: And all thy children shall be taught of the Lord; and great shall be the peace of thy children. 17: No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou

shalt condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the Lord, and their righteousness is of me, saith the Lord.

46.] *Seen the Father*.—1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honor and power everlasting. Amen.

49.] *Did eat manna*.—He spoke according to the capacity of the hearers, who looked no further than upon corporal food. *Are dead*.—Which would not have been the case if they had been spirit born holy children of God, and fed on heavenly spirit love of God in me: I am the resurrection life spirit word son creation power of God. No spirit born holy children of God can ever die (John xi. 26). Whereby it appears that manna food, though it came out of the air, and was purer than any earthly produced food; yet it was corruptible in itself, and therefore could not keep soul or body blood life from death and corruption rottenness. Isa. v. 24: Their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust; because they have cast away the law of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel.

50.] *Not die*.—Spirit love infinite cannot die. John iii. 16: God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son that whosoever believeth on him should not perish, but have everlasting life. All who believe truthfully are spirit born of his spirit love seed. (5.) 1 John iv. 8: He that loveth not, knoweth not God; for God is love. 12: If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and love is perfected in us. 13: Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his spirit. Love. 15: Whoso confesseth Jesus is the Son of God; God dwelleth in him, and he in God. Love. v. 12: He that hath the Son (spirit love birth) hath life; and he that hath not the Son hath not life. (Where can the dead wicked get life from, O man creed worshipper (John v. 40)? They will not come to Christ for it.) 1 John v. 18: We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and the wicked one toucheth him not.

51.] *Living*.—Immortal life love of infinite infallible power.

54.] *Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my* [spirit life immortal love] *blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up* [no others but spirit born holy] *at the last day*.—Of blood life, or at death of the body.

55.] *Meat indeed, drink indeed*.—I am the giver and sustainer

of endless spiritual life in all spirit born holy that pulsate spirit love.

56.] *Dwelleth in me.*—1 John iv. 15: Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God God dwelleth in him, and he in God. 13: Hereby we know that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his spirit. 7: Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God. 8: He that loveth not, knoweth not God; for God is love. 9: In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him. 10, 11, 16: God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.

57.] *As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by* [through his immortal life light love spirit imparted to me] *the Father, so he that eateth me* [my spirit life immortal words of love spirit truth are received and eaten by the soul mind, when believed truthfully, which imparteth love's quickening life immortal], *even he shall live by me.*—By way of my atonement and God's love grace seed sown by me, which through its soul mind impregnation produces a new creature that pulsates immortal life love of God holy, while they abide in love from me, obedient to my commands found in Scripture gospel truths. A new spirit being.

58.] *Down from heaven.*—Sent from the Father out of heaven pure holy love life spiritual immortal. Not as your fathers (Jews in the wilderness that sinned) did eat manna (air dewbread), and are dead. (Does not Christ know the truth better than popery inquisition vile false men creeds that clings to flesh nature bodies, and that the wicked are immortal in life in hell fire tortures of misery?) He that eateth of this (spirit love of God in Christ immortal spirit life) bread (spirit love manna) shall live forever. The Jews' manna bread did not save their bodies or souls from death.

60.] *His disciples.*—Disciples is here used in a general sense, for those who attended on his teachings, who can hear it. The same nature blindness and carnal constructions of Christ's spirit love words that Nicodemus used when told that he must be born again, that no nature carnal life flesh blood life mortals in nature habiliments perishable in corruption, no dust mortals, could enter into God's spirit love life immortal spirit kingdom; that none but spirit born, begot of God's spirit love infinite and immortal life, could enter spirit life's immortal kingdom of God (John iii. 4,

5). Nicodemus construes Christ's words carnally, as did the hearers in the synagogue at Capernaum.

63.] *It is the spirit that quickeneth.*—It was the spiritual, not the literal meaning of his words which would profit them if obeyed. *The flesh profiteth nothing.*—John iii. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh. Gen. ii. 7: And the Lord formed man of the dust of the ground. 17: In the day thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die. 24: And they (man and wife) shall be one flesh. iii. 4: And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die. 19: Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. vi. 3: And the Lord said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh, yet his days shall be one hundred and twenty years. 5: And God saw the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. 6: And it repented (regretted) the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved (his love mercy justice regretted man's wickedness) him at his heart. 7: And the Lord said, I will destroy (annihilate as man, in every possible existence of consciousness as man) man whom I have created from the face of the earth, for it repenteth me that I have made them (poor encouragement for married people, unless better children are the result). Ezek. xxiii. 20: Whose flesh is as the flesh of asses. Job xi. 12: For vain man would be wise, though man be born like a wild ass's colt, whose issue is like the issue of horses. Isa. xxxi. 3: Horses are flesh, not spirit. Ps. lxxviii. 39: God remembered that they were but flesh; a wind that passeth away and cometh not again. Jer. xvii. 5: Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the Lord. Luke xxiv. 39: A spirit hath not flesh and bones. Rom. vii. 25: With the mind I (Paul) myself serve the law of God, but with the flesh the law of sin. viii. 1: There is therefore now no condemnation of them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh but after the spirit. 5: For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh, but they that are after the spirit the things of the spirit. 6: For to be carnally minded is death; but the devil in the serpent said, Ye shall not die (Gen. iii. 4). So say men creeds to-day, death is only separation from God they say by sin. O Lord open their eyes to see, please. Acts xvii. 28: In God we live, and move, and have our being. Out of God, separated from his life giving power probation, no mortal can live a moment; if in God we live, out negative,

we cannot live. But to be spiritually minded is life and peace. 7: Because the carnal mind is enmity against God is God's justice power infinite sword flame so helpless that it cannot destroy what dust man begets; does it take eternity to destroy his foes in? What mock madness. Num. xvi. 20, 21: And the Lord spake unto Moses and unto Aaron, saying, Separate yourselves from among this congregation, that I may consume them in a moment. Deut. iv. 24: The Lord our God is a consuming fire. Heb. xii. 29: Our God is a consuming fire. The enemies to God's laws he consumes; not a helpless, quenchable fire, in which they are tortured forever.

66.] *Went back.*—Backslid. Matt. xiii. 3-8: Wayside hearers, stony place hard, or wicked hearts void of love, thorn hearers, care of the world, and deceitfulness of riches choke the word. Good ground, he that heareth the word and understandeth it.

67.] *Will ye also.*—By these words he accuseth the unfaithfulness of those who had forsook him.

68.] *Words of eternal life.*—Nature life words, the Lord God had in creation spirit birth life eternal Jesus brought to earth. Rom. ii. 7; v. 21; vi. 23: For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. 1 Tim. vi. 12: Lay hold on eternal life. Titus i. 2: In hope of eternal life (iii. 7; 1 John i. 2; ii. 25; iii. 15). No murderer hath eternal life abiding in him; whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer. 6: Whosoever abideth in Christ sinneth not; whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him. v. 11: And this is the record that God hath given to us, eternal life, and this life is in his Son. 12: He that hath the Son hath life, and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life. 20: There is no immortality in the wicked.

69.] *And we believe, and are sure.*—Every real child of God spirit born holy believes and knows by experimental spirit birth knowledge that Jesus Christ hath fulfilled in them all he promised to do in the day they sought eternal life of God, the Father of all spirits holy, through Christ the mediator, with all their heart; repenting of all past sins, and asking their forgiveness in Jesus' mediatorial name, and to please create within them a clean heart, and renew a right spirit within their soul mind to quicken them into a new creature spirit being pulsating eternal life love of God the Father of all spirits holy.

CHAPTER VII.

2.] *Feast of tabernacles*.—The Jews had three great annual feasts: the feast of the passover, pentecost, and of tabernacles (Deut. xvi. 1–15), last held from the 15th to 22d of Tizri, which included a part of September and October harvest feast.

3.] *Depart*.—It is likely they feared Herod the king, who governed in Galilee (Luke xiii. 31). *Thy disciples*.—Which are in Judea and receive thy doctrine, which here is rejected.

4.] *These things*.—Miracles which he wrought in proof of his being the Messiah.

5.] *For neither did*.—His brethren believe in him; whereby we are clearly taught the truth that a prophet is not accepted in his own country, and also that spirit birth new creatures alone can discern spirit truth.

6.] *My time*.—You may go to the feast now or any time you please, it is of no importance whatever. I have certain times for certain purposes, the time for me to go up is not full yet.

7.] *The world*.—Ps. ix. 8; xvii. 14; xxxiii. 8; xlix. 1; Isa. xiii. 11; xxxiv. 1; Matt. iv. 8; v. 14; xiii. 38, 40; xvi. 26; xviii. 7; xxiv. 14; Luke xx. 35; John i. 10, 29; iii. 16; vi. 33, 51; viii. 12; xii. 47; xiv. 17, 19, 22, 27, 31; xv. 18, 19; xvi. 33; xvii. 5, 6, 9, 14, 16 (spirit born). They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world (xxi. 25; xviii. 20; Rom. iii. 6, 19; 1 Cor. i. 21; ii. 12; vi. 2; xi. 32).

10.] *In secret*.—Privately, or in a retired manner as a private citizen.

12.] *Murmuring*.—Private discussion pro and con., dissension, some for truth, some for false accusations against Jesus; which same devil spirit Babel creeds of men blind the intellects of mortals, who will not come to the truth light to see whether they are deceived or not. Acting as though their full belief of false creeds would save them, even if they had mistaken the broad way to death for truth's right way to spirit birth holiness and immortal life in God's spirit heaven.

13.] *Fear*.—Fearing a riotous disturbance of the peace by dissensions.

15.] *Letters*.—Earthly learning, which to-day is the great enabling theological enactment requisite to preach sectarian creeds

of men ; like the Jews, they would to-day judge the Lord and his illiterate fishermen as unworthy of being permitted to preach in their spirit Babel men creed churches collation. Colleges are made the *sine qua non* of theology, that doctors college divinities, and teaches the science of the pagan popery traditions of men doctrines of the inquisition preachers of the dark ages of Roman Catholic popery. Whose preachers, Martin Luther, and John Calvin, and their associates, handed down their pagan demon idol myth god as a monster devil, whose power had aided them to burn at the stake poor helpless men and women as heretics if they dissented from their doctrines of devils, who through the priests, bishops, cardinals, popes, and other humbug titled officials in church and State over which popes then ruled with iron powers, and murdered the saints of God. They made a myth devil god like themselves, that after they had burned in the most horrid agony torture the poor man, woman, boy or girl for heresy believing that the Scripture taught a very different doctrine from what popery taught ; any doctrine contrary to the men creed church was held to be heresy. But a heretic, in truth, is a person of any creed, or no creed of men's manufacture that flatly contradicts God's revealed Scripture truths. The doctrines clearly taught by infallible statute laws of God, when contradicted by any mortal or any church association, all such are heretics. 1 Cor. i. 17 : For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel ; not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect. 18 : For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness, but unto us which are saved it is the power of God. 19 : For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. 20 : Where is the wise ? Hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world ? 21 : The world by wisdom knew not God. 25 : The foolishness of God's (people) is wiser than men. 26 : For ye see your calling brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called. 27 : But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise. 31 : He that glorieth let him glory in the Lord ; give all the glory of salvation to God the father of all spirits holy and immortal and to his spirit word power creation Son, father by his spirit word power (Gen. iii. 15) of the Lord Jesus Christ, the only begotten son of the Lord God, who was and is our mediator, Saviour, and redeemer ; by way of his spirit birth alliance with God, his spirit

father, who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto (1 Tim. vi. 16).

16.] *Not mine.*—Man's woman's seed nature, creeds of men, my manufacture of nature earthly vain imaginations. But it is eternal truths from God revealed through me (thus I in writing these Day Thoughts would say, 'Tis Scripture truths I quote).

17.] *If any man will do his will.*—Obey his commands as found in Scripture truths, seek God through Christ with all thy blood life heart will to create within you a clean heart, and renew and impart new creature soul mind spirit birth being that shall pulsate eternal love spirit life gratitude to God; then spirit birth life, and spirit love to God and mankind will pervade your soul mind when you seek God in truth and verity with all your heart, soul mind and strength, desiring fully that God's spirit love life immortal light should fill your soul mind and overflow with love to God and your neighbor as to yourself; then he shall know by experimental faith's spirit birth love peace that spirit birth holiness to the Lord is a truth, and that Christ is the truth, the life spiritual and immortal, and the only way to heaven.

18.] *Of himself.*—Of his own strength, in and of himself independent of God the father of all life spiritual, immortal and holy; and source of all life germs creation power, thus Shaw's Day Thoughts of Scripture truths are dependent wholly upon the Lord, who sent me on my mission from him to the churches on earth who desire truthfully to obey his truths; I of myself am but as a dust atom animate with life from dust nature blood life Adamic, which is limited to probation's brief earthly sojourn. And for spirit birth spirit life immortal I am wholly indebted each moment of its eternal existence to God the father of all spirit life immortal, and to the mediator his spirit word son of creation power, and to his spirit word love mercy promise in Eden, that the seed of Eve who the devil death spirit of evil poison in the serpent had seduced from the way of perfect love holiness obedience to eat of soul's poison, whence all Adam and Eve's offsprings would have been spiritually born from the soul; but the forbidden fruit was the promoter of animal nature's lust desires, which gratified brought Cain the murderer of his brother Abel into existence as its first fruits. John xv. 5: I am the vine, ye are the branches; he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit; for without me ye can do nothing. I should be as helpless as an

infant, in thought, words, or deeds, were it not for the aid I receive through God's goodness, love and mercy.

19.] *None of you keepeth the law.*—Their conduct towards him was a constant violation of Scripture laws of God by his prophets; and to-day, like the Jews with traditions of men, they seduce the people with false men creeds.

24.] *Judge not according to the appearance.*—Nor from prejudice against the person judged, because the humble woman was a Nazarene, that had supplied the woman's seed egg, of which the Lord God's spirit word life (Gen. iii. 15) begot the blood life body of Jesus, the only spirit begotten being the Lord God ever made; and the closing up of sacrificial and ceremonial and parabolic sacrifices and oblations to the Lord God who, with the sacrifice, destroyed soul death by Satan in all who receive his spirit word immortal life's spirit love seed into their souls mind belief, through blood life's heart will door, through which alone can access be had to the soul mind belief receptacle seed egg, which brings forth spirit life immortal beings when God's spirit word truth impregnates them. Earthly judges who know nothing about spirit birth new creature life immortal cannot judge thereof. The perjurer and liar, or lawyer, prejudices the wicked judge against the honest man or woman. Such persons malign and defame the saints of God, as they did the Lord Jesus. If you hear evil accusations against a brother or sister, ask them how it is; not tell every mortal you meet that such persons are guilty, right or wrong.

27.] *We know this man.*—His parentage and place of birth. Thus I have had persons in the church and out of the church claim to know all about me, when in truth they were villainous liars, and knew nothing about me, temporally or spiritually; neither had I any knowledge whatever of them, nor did I desire any. Because the man was born poor, and by industry and saving he becomes honorably well supplied with earthly means, his former poverty has no truth in him then. Christ's spirit father created the earth, and all the gold and silver therein. His wealth is infinite in every wealth of value. They knew not by spirit love birth the Lord God, father by his spirit word life of Jesus spirit life holy, from the Lord God; therefore they falsely said we know whence he is.

28.] *Not come of myself.*—He was sent of God, whom ye know not. Though they had the Scriptures, they did not understand the character of God as a spirit (John iv. 24).

30.] *His hour.*—His time to be taken and slain; the lives of all spirit born holy he protects.

33.] *Yet a little while am I with you.*—He gives them to understand that they can do nothing against him until the time which his Father hath appointed to make the sacrifice arrives; then the blood life alone is freely given to redeem the spirit born from death's power, and in the end of time to destroy last of all enemies,—death, the devil's unclean spirit (1 Cor. xv. 26, 44; Heb. ii. 14).

34.] *Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me.*—After this utter rejection of my last proffered mercy ye shall continue blindly seeking Messias, Saviour, and shall find none, there being no other Saviour but me; and because you do not discern me, and know not what it is to seek God the father, or me, in spirit, you will not know how to find me, and your willful incredulity excludes you from access to my Father, and from life everlasting. *Where I am.*—33: And then I go to him that sent me; and where I am then, ye cannot come. 1 Tim. vi. 16: Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto.

35.] *Unto the dispersed among the Gentiles.*—The Jews and Israelites dispersed among the Gentile nations of earth, and degenerated in religion, language, and customs (James i. 1; 1 Pet. i. 1).

37.] *That great day of the feast.*—Emblem of this last dispensation of spirit soul birth, the eighth day of the feast of tabernacles, a day of solemn assembly (Lev. xxiii. 36; John xix. 31). *Cried.*—Spake with great freedom, not fearing any man. *Saying.*—If any man thirst (for spirit love drink for the soul, John iv. 14). The Jews relate, in their writings, that in this last day of the feast of the tabernacles the people, by an ancient tradition, went and fetched water from the fountain of Siloa, in certain great vessels, and brought it into the temple to the priests, who poured it out upon the altar, singing the third verse of the twelfth of Isaiah. Therefore with joy shall we draw water out of the wells of salvation. 6: For great is the Holy One of Israel in the midst of thee, Zion.

38.] *Rivers of living water.*—Spirit life gospel words of spirit truth love life immortal shall overflow from the soul mind spirit born of love of God in Christ's love infinite, received in impregnation the soul mind with quickening love life immortal spirit love life light, which spirit born soul mind believes Christ's spirit love life words truth.

39.] *The Holy Ghost*.—Acts xix. 2; ii. 2: Suddenly there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing mighty wind (John iii. 8) and filled all the house where they were sitting. 3: And there appeared unto them cloven tongues, like as of fire, and sat upon each of them. 4: And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, spirit love of Christ (Rom. viii. 9), and began to speak with other tongues, as the spirit gave them utterance, which no doubt he referred to.

40.] *The Prophet*.—The prophet who they thought would precede the Messiah (Matt. xvi. 14).

41.] *Galilee*.—The Jews claimed Judea as the exalted place where Messiah should make his appearance. Matt. ii. 6: And thou Bethlehem, in the land of Judea. And Nazareth was despised by the proud wicked Jews, as at this day the proud wicked speak mockingly of places and persons that have been nicknamed or evil spoken of by slanderous liars. The devil's tare seed children are numerous on earth, and hate the righteous, who they malign and nickname, or slander, or all together, and liars prefer lies to wholesale rather than retail truth; lies are of ready sale and swift winged, truth is eternal and moves majestic, strong but slow. And if a saint child of God is spirit born in Sodom, if he abides in full obedience to God's commands like Lot, he is happy in spirit love life holy, though tribulation's sorrows surround him in the wicked that hate him, and malign and persecute him; yet amidst all his troubles, in Christ he hath peace.

42.] *Bethlehem*.—These Jews by their remarks show that they knew little of Christ, not even knowing that he was born in Bethlehem as prophesied; but judged according to the place he frequented and taught the people, even as it now commonly happens among those who being possessed with an unclean devil spirit, or evil opinions of another, and worse affection, judge according to what appears, without investigation. *David was*.—Where the residence of his father's family was, Bethlehem.

46.] *Never man spake like this man*.—Whereby the power of Christ's truth words is seen against his enemies.

49.] *This people*.—The common people, the lay church members to whom the Pharisee priests imputed criminal ignorance of the Scriptures, claiming full knowledge thereof themselves while wilfully disobeying God's commandments on Mount Sinai, Thou shalt not kill; and sought to and did soon after cry, Away with Christ Jesus, crucify, murder him.

CHAPTER VIII.

6.] *Tempting him.*—Should he decide she ought to be put to death, they would have accused him of assuming judicial authority. If he decided the other way, they would accuse him of being opposed to Moses. *On the ground.*—To show that sins can be erased from soul mind's memory when they repent truthfully and sin no more ever after, as writing in the dust can be easily erased; but there is no safety in sin a moment, then you may die.

7.] *He that is without sin among you.*—Christ well knew they were guilty sinners, like the poor wretched girl they had led astray from virtue's peaceful holy way to life, and would now malign and doom to death, when each of them no doubt were equally guilty with her; or far more guilty, being quite likely her seducers by lies, promises of honorable marriage.

10.] *Saw none.*—None of her accusers present to cast the first death stone at the poor sinful mortal, in remorse repentance deep no doubt. Hath no man condemned thee?

11.] *She said, No man, Lord.*—Neither do I exercise this prerogative of the civil magistrate, go, and sin no more.

12.] *Light of life.*—1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto. 2 Tim. i. 10: But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished, conquered, death; and abolished the law of soul death in all who are spirit born holy receivers and believers of God's spirit love life light, whose lamp of life immortal shall eternally burn with expanding spirit life light, and who shall pulsate spirit life immortal love. John vi. 63: It is the spirit that quickeneth, the flesh profiteth nothing. The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit and they are life.

13.] *Of thyself.*—You testify in your own case; if truthfully, who is wronged?

14.] *Record is true.*—Your refusing to receive my witness proceeds from willful malicious suppression of the knowledge which I have given you of my divine calling, and of the full accomplishment thereof by my ascent into heaven, and my future glorification. And thus ought to be reconciled to Christ's saying (John vii. 28).

15.] *After the flesh.*—Rashly, according to outward appear-

ances, under the power of prejudice, with selfish motives and worldly ends. *No man.*—iii. 17 ; xii. 47.

17.] *Your law.*—Deut. xvii. 6 ; xix. 15 ; Matt. xviii. 16 : Whereof you boast. *Is true.*—Sufficient to be a proof to obtain judgment.

18.] *That bear witness.*—He stated the truth concerning himself and confirmed it by miracles, to which the Father added his testimony ; of course his witness is true. And there are thousands of witnesses now living on the earth that by experimental spirit birth, received in obeying Christ's requirements obedience to his commands. I, R. Tennent Shaw, hereby certify that I have met with a change of heart, and soul mind spirit birth, and that I then and ever since that time can truthfully witness that God's immortal life love spirit in Christ, in answer to prayer to God the father through the merits alone of Christ Jesus, and the grace mercy love infinite of God the father of all spirits holy, and his spirit word Son, and only begotten son. I felt his immortal life love light illuminate my soul mind, and gave me new creature life full of love to God, and all who love him, with peace ever deep within, undisturbed by the howls of devils in human form, who are full of hatred toward all truth, and holy light.

19.] *Said they.*—Scoffing brutes, ignorant tare seed children of the devil, and doomed to death ; but the devil in them would taunt the holy Redeemer : Have you another father besides Joseph ? Do not we know you, and your kindred ? Poor ignorant fools that serve the devil, their liar father, faithfully, and was as ignorant of the truthful miraculous spirit birth of the woman's seed body of Jesus, as they were of the spirit birth plan of gospel New Testament dispensation. Grace of God being then extended through infinite love, goodness and mercy to Adam and Eve's sin lust begotten race, it would be like throwing pearls to swine to tell them of his spirit Father. *Ye neither know me, nor my father.*—They were carnal descendants of Adam, unspirit born, and could not therefore know his spirit Father.

20.] *The treasury.*—The apartment in which was kept the money for the support of the temple service.

21.] *Die in your sins.*—Ezek. xviii. 4, 20 : The soul that sinneth, it shall die. The soul is the life of the intellect the same as the heart is the life generator of blood life. 24 : All his righteousness shall not be mentioned that he hath done ; in his sins that he hath sinned, in them shall he die. 27 : When the wicked man

turneth away from his wickedness that he hath committed, and doeth that which is lawful and right, he shall save his soul alive.

23.] *I am not of this world.*—Ye are of this world. Luke xvi. 8: The children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light. xx. 34: Children of this world marry and are given in marriage. John ix. 39: And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world; that they which see not (Gentiles) might see, and that they which see (Jews) might be made blind. xii. 25: He that loveth his (blood) life shall lose it.

24.] *Ye shall die in your sins.*—If ye believe not that I am the Son of the Lord God.

26.] *I have many things to say.*—And to judge of you. He that sent me is truth; and I speak to the world those things he commissions me to say to you. It is not for my salvation, exaltation, or glory, that I tell you of the perils that surround you, and warn you to discard men creeds false teachings; it is your life that is imperiled, your souls, your all beyond the grave is in peril.

28.] *Lifted up the Son of man.*—Crucified him. *Nothing of myself.*—Woman's seed blood life flesh body nature will, and desires for prolonged nature life, all are fully surrendered to perfect holiness, surrender subjection to the will of my spirit Father, whose power and infinite love governs my words and acts (Gen. xxii. 7, 8).

31.] *In my word.*—All who obey the commands of the commander in chief of earth's army of spirit love light immortal, abide in his word; nor seek any other than the Scripture truths for their creeds or confessions of faith or discipline, such are truthful disciples.

32.] *The truth shall make you free.*—Ps. li. 12: Restore unto me the joy of thy salvation; and uphold me with thy free spirit. 13: Then will I teach transgressors thy ways; and sinners shall be converted unto thee. 5: Behold I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me. Isa. lviii. 6: Let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke; Satan's false creeds of men of this world's wisdom and self glory (Jer. xxxiv. 9). Matt. xv. 6: And honor not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the command of God (Exod. xx. 12: Honor thy father and thy mother) of none effect by your tradition (of men creeds) Rom. vi. 18: Being made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness. 20: For when ye were servants of sin ye were free from righteousness. viii. 2: For the law of the spirit of life

in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. 3: God sending his own son in likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh. . Thus the body flesh is left to death and corruption at probation blood life's close. 4: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but in the spirit. 6: For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded (spirit birth from soul's spirit egg mind) is life and peace. 1 Cor. ix. 1: Am I not an apostle? am I not free? xii. 13: Gal. iii. 28; iv. 26: Jerusalem, which is above, is free, which is the mother of us all. 31: So then, we are not children, brethren, of the bond-woman, but of the free. v. 1: Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of (sin) bondage (to Satan death).

33.] *Abraham's seed.*—We are of the blessed rich man's progeny, to whom liberty and domination is promised (Gen. xxv. 23). The elder shall serve the younger, and therefore nobody hath any right to be Lord over us but God.

34.] *Is the servant.*—Your carnal minds think only of body servitude, not soul mind slavery to the devil, death. But I speak to you of faith's spiritual liberty by way of spirit soul mind birth from God's spirit love life immortal, without which all mortals are slaves to sin, the devil's unclean spirit slavery; and while such are children of death, having no heavenly home of life immortal freedom, from sin slavery that ends in death by body and soul; having no spirit birth from God's spirit love seed, sown by Christ in the soul mind, whereby they of spirit birth, new creatures in Christ, become children of God, and free to fly in beatific glory love freedom's eternal life. Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin.

35.] *Abideth not in the house forever.*—In the dust-house; the servant of sin ceases to exist when the life blood dies, and the body soon rots back to nature elements, in the same manner the fruit, grain, and dead animal bodies that they have eaten, and out of which the mortal body is formed, would have done if left to nature death rottenness. The soul also dies (Ezek. xviii. 4).

36.] *If the Son.*—This title of Son of God, and the only spirit begotten of God, belongs to Christ Jesus alone, and he only is free from sin. All Adam's sin lust begotten race are slaves to Satan death by reason of sin. And through Christ's mediation and spirit love of God seed sown in the soul mind which, when it con-

ceives, believes God's spirit words of spirit life immortal to be truths eternal life, and then they become children of God, free from slavery to sin and death; eternal freedom while they are holy.

37.] *Abraham's seed.*—According to the flesh, but not according to the spirit birth faith belief in the promise (Gen. iii. 15; Heb. ii. 14; Rom. iv. 6; ix. 6, 7; Gal. iii. 7). *My word hath no place in you.*—In their soul mind they would not receive his truth unto soul mind impregnation belief unto their spirit birth.

38.] *Seen.*—What is in accordance with the will of the Lord God? *Which ye have seen.*—With the devil death, whom you obey through his seducing evil enticements in the world's recreations, which is his death house.

39.] *Children.*—Truthful believers, as was Abraham's faith in God's promises.

40.] *Of God.*—He speaks in the person of mediator.

41.] *One father.*—Spiritual father (the devil death in truth), but like false men creed worshipers of the devil's Eden creed, that the wicked are immortal, and cannot die. Gen. iii. 4: Ye shall not surely die. God says, Gen. ii. 17, Thou shalt surely die. The devil's children, it would seem natural, agree with their father, the devil death, that God cannot annihilate anything he has made or suffered to come into existence. Ocular evidence of myth mind insanity and devil mockery of God's infinite attributes power. They perceived Christ referred to spirit father.

42.] *If God were your father, ye would love me.*—All regenerated by God's spirit love seed, after spirit birth of spirit loves spirit word gospel truths, dwell in love. If ye were regenerated by God's Spirit, you would know and love me (Gal. iv. 5; 1 John v. 4).

43.] *Why do ye not.*—You cannot pretend ignorance, for it is your malicious, willful resistance to truth only, which the devil hath instilled into your soul minds, and hath engendered in you, through your voluntary inclinations to follow his suggestions, which makes you unapt to learn my doctrine.

44.] *Your father, the devil.*—It is his evil, foul, unclean spirit, tare lies, that hath been sown through your blood life heart will door to soul mind birth belief in your Jewish false men creeds that abrogates even God's commands on Mount Sinai. The devil hath engrafted in you the stem of malice, which appeareth in all your actions, and made you like unto himself full of hatred to love and Scripture truths, and other sins. *A murderer.*—Gen. iii. 4: Ye shall not surely die. 5: Ye shall be as gods, immortal in life,

as now taught in men creeds, (covering the falsehood by seeming justice), but in eternal life torment, flatly contradicting God. Gen. ii. 17: Thou shalt surely die (Gen. iii. 19).

52.] *Shall never taste of death.*—Spiritual soul death. Ezek. xviii. 4: The soul that sinneth it shall die. To taste death, and to see death, are Hebrew modes of speech which signify to die; for the faithful even in blood life death then enter upon their endless spirit soul new creature life, that like the dove chicken bursts its shell body, never more to be closed in thereby, and seeks its spirit father's spirit home in the eternal day summer spirit love life, where no sorrow, pain, or death in any form can enter to poison life immortal.

53.] *Abraham which is dead.*—Luke xx. 37: Now that the dead (in blood life bodies) are raised; not to be raised, but are in soul's new creature spirit born, spirit love life immortal like the angels of God, being his spirit born children of light life holiness; raised from earth nature life body then dead to eternal life spiritual in heaven, even Moses showed at the bush, when he called the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. 38: For he is not a God of the dead (blood life bodies of Abraham or any other of Adam's dust race, that God hath sentenced to death), but of the living.

54.] *If I honor myself.*—With official titles, pope, rabbi, cardinal, bishop, D.D., F.R.S., etc., and assume to be great as man, and not give all the glory to God, who only hath self-existent immortality.

55.] *Ye have not known him.*—By spirit birth knowledge. John iii. 5: Except a man be born of water and of the spirit (love of God), he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

59.] *Stones to cast at him.*—Because he being woman's seed claimed truthfully that the Lord God was his spirit Father. Hid himself by his spirit power, made his body invisible to mortals.

CHAPTER IX.

3.] *Neither.*—Neither his sin nor theirs was the cause of his blindness.

4.] *I must work.*—The works of God perform divine love,

goodness and mercy works. *While it is day.*—While I live in blood life flesh body existence on earth. *The night.*—Death.

5.] *I am the light.*—Spiritual life light immortal, all earth light was transient, death soon closed nature life's day; heavenly spirit life immortal wisdom knowledge.

7.] *Pool of Siloam.*—This was a fountain at the southeast part of Jerusalem, near the foot of Mount Zion, flowing in two streams, which were conducted to two pools, the upper and lower. (Isa. vii. 3, 22; ix.). *Sent.*—The meaning of the Hebrew word Siloam.

16.] *Keepeth not the sabbath.*—He did not keep it as the Pharisee men creed directed; but he did keep it according to the letter of the sixth commandment.

22.] *Be put out.*—Excommunicated, and interdicted by the church (Ezra x. 8).

24.] *Praise.*—The praise of healing him; we know this man is a sinner; lies was their refuge.

25.] *One thing I know.*—All their subterfuge availed not; he knew of a truth and verity, as doth every one spirit born of God. Whereas I was blind, as are millions on earth by false men creeds, after experimental spirit birth (John iii. 5) from God's love spirit life seed. Matt. xiii. 37, 38: Now I see.

29.] *From whence.*—Viz., who hath sent him, or from whom he hath his charge and authority, whether he be of God or not (John viii. 14). Thus false men creed preachers and their adherents will probably say of Shaw's Day Thoughts. But I claim only to be as a dust animate with Christ's love light spirit birth, and quote his Scripture truths. He thus speaks through me.

31.] *God heareth not sinners.*—The man who blasphemes God's name, asking God to damn his or any other person's soul or body, if answered, would soon sweep drunkards and other swearing prayer makers out of existence. Wicked men are always abhorrent to God, as a dead carcase stench to the nostrils of mortals of cleanliness. When sinners repent of their sins, and as vile lepers truthfully with all their heart blood life will for spirit birth new creature life of purity holiness, then the Mediator's blood shed without the city, in efficacy atonement for their past sins, admits them into interceding communication with Christ Jesus the Mediator.

34.] *Cast him out.*—Turned him out of their synagogue church.

35.] *He had found him.*—Even so are all such found of Jesus

Christ's spirit love, who for his name's sake are rejected by men creed churches, or by the world, as all such pertains wholly to this world's short life.

39.] *For judgment.*—That those who feel their spiritual blindness, and apply to me for sight, may receive it. And that those who do not, but proudly imagine that they see enough already, and that their tradition of the elders, or men creeds of tradition are the true church guide, and reject my aid, may sink in deeper darkness and be more blind than ever before. And to the condemnation of proud titled church officials.

41.] *If ye were blind.*—If your sin were a sin of mere ignorance, it might be remissible. 1 Tim. i. 13: But having the knowledge of divine things (John vii. 28) whereof you make profession and show, and which I have declared unto you (John xv. 22), your sin can no way be imputed but to an obstinate self-willed malignity; and, therefore, it becomes incorrigible and irremissible. Matt. xii. 32; Mark iii. 29: Your sin remaineth.

CHAPTER X.

1.] *He that entereth not by the door.*—In this similitude Christ is the spirit life immortal love light narrow way door of truth. His Scriptures are truth's way to heaven by way of spirit birth new creatures in Christ Jesus (spirit born of Christ's spirit word of God promise love spirit seed). Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 1-8; 2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15; Matt. vii. 13: Enter ye in at the strait gate; for wide is the gate, and broad is the (men creeds, spirit Babel) way, that leadeth to destruction (annihilation of conscious existence), and many (creeds and sects, and of no creed or truth in them) there be which go in thereat. 14: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way (no proud, the church, four or six horse coach and six can enter the narrow way; they all run in the broad, popular with the masses, fashionable way).

2.] *Shepherd.*—A true spiritual teacher of the gospel truths of spirit birth holiness.

3.] *Porter.*—Doorkeeper. *The sheep.*—Spirit born new crea-

tures holy in Christ Jesus (2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 15; John iii. 5). True spirit Christians hear his voice, receive and obey his directions (not false creeds).

4.] *Follow him.*—Christ the Lord Scripture truth guidance love.

5.] *Strangers.*—False, irreligious men creed teachers that discard Scripture truths.

6.] *Understood not.*—The meaning of what he had said. He then explained it.

7.] *The door.*—Matt. xiii. 37: He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man (Jesus). 38: The good seed are children of the kingdom. John iii. 5: Except a man be born of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. vi. 7: By spirit birth holiness door. Christ's mediatorial sacrifice by way of God's infinite grace love.

8.] *Came before me.*—As religious guides, without authority from God; teaching men tradition creeds, ceremonial performances, outward vocal prayers of the lips, to be heard by mortal ears (Matt. vi. 5).

9.] *I am the door.*—The only possible way of salvation and immortal spirit life is opened by the infinite love sacrifice and mercy love promise (Gen. iii. 15; Heb. ii. 14). John xi. 25, 26: I am the resurrection and the life (immortal, spiritual, John iii. 5). *Find pasture.*—Spiritual food, love.

10.] *The thief.*—Men who preach false creeds, contradicting Scripture truths, wolves in sheep's outward clothing, which they steal, to serve the devil and self, a good cash salary, if they can get it; and kill and destroy soul minds that God's Scripture truth love spirit life immortal in Christ might, if they had received it, quickened into life. *I am come that they might have life.*—And as few in past ages, since creation of Adam in Eden, have embraced by faith spirit birth life immortal, in the future probation time of blood life existence through me, many more abundantly shall partake of spirit life birth.

11.] *The good shepherd.*—In them which followeth he makes mention of three sorts, two of worldly shepherds, viz.: the spirit birth life immortal truth shepherds; the worldly hireling, who preaches for money salary; and the disguised false creed devouring shepherd—wolf.

12.] *A hireling.*—Serving for wages; one who is hired; venal; mercenary employed for money, or other compensation. One

whose great object in preaching is his own interest (the false D.D.'s, popes, cardinals, and worldly self, and worshiped by fools, titled rabbis. Matt. xxiii. 8: Be ye not called rabbi: lord, rabbi, master. A title assumed by the Jewish doctors, signifying master or lord), and all other corrupters, and men creeds false manufactures, that falsely contradict the Scriptures, also all the violent persecutors that seek to subvert the believers of Scripture truths, faith which every true shepherd ought to endeavor to maintain to the last. *Wolf*.—The enemy of God, and his children, or people. Such preach the same doctrine that Satan in the serpent preached to Eve. Gen. iii. 4, 5: Ye shall not surely die: ye shall be as gods, immortal: now remodeled, sugar coated with deceptions wilful hatred of heretics, you shall be eternally dying in hell fire torture, but never dead. They treat all Scripture truths of God as ambiguous, having two or more meanings, doubtful, being of uncertain signification; susceptible of different interpretations, hence obscure. When the Scriptures plainly say (Gen. ii. 7), And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground. 17: But of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die. A spiritual death severance from immortal soul mind life light. Gen. iii. 19: Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. 22: Lest he take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever. 24: So he drove out the man: and he (the Lord God) placed at the east of the garden of Eden cherubim, and flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life. But all this is ambiguous language, says the wolf preacher; but Gen. iii. 4, 5 means what it says: And the serpent said unto the woman (Eve), ye shall not surely die; ye shall be as gods (immortal). In hell fire torments says the devil's children of inquisition tortures of popery.

13.] *Careth not for the sheep*.—Because he is preaching for pay in this world, a hireling. Rev. xxii. 17: And the Spirit and the bride say, come. And let him that heareth (not is man commissioned to preach, but a hearer shall) say come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

14.] *Know—am known*.—Greatly love my people; and I am loved truthfully and affectionately, and with faith love by them.

15.] *The Father*.—Spirit word creation power son of Jehovah God: *My life for the sheep*.—Woman's seed blood life holy

without sin sacrifice to keep his spirit born holy children of God, from wolf creeds of men on earth, and roaring lion devil prince and power of the air. 1 Pet. v. 8: Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour. 2 Pet. ii. 17: To whom the mist of darkness is reserved forever. 18: For they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh.

16.] *Other sheep.*—Gentile nations. Lazarus the poor man, who like dogs, as it were, and as Abraham is the rich man in gold, silver, and cattle, and promised land in abundance, whose children the Jews' rich nature children of promise till then had called the Gentiles dogs, and all the Gentiles obtained for soul food knowledge from God's revelation Scriptures was crumbs outside the rich man Jewish synagogues. But now the rich man Jews are outside of even their national boundaries, while we Gentiles have the Scriptures, and the conditional gospel regeneration spirit birth promises.

17.] *Therefore.*—He doth not speak of spirit, but of woman's seed of nature blood life spirit begotten holy sacrifice.

18.] *Taketh it from me.*—By power, and superior force, and against my will.

20.] *Is mad.*—Beside himself, crazy. Through the influence of an evil spirit the accusers were crazy, not Christ.

21.] *Eyes of the blind.*—Men creeds and sectarian politics are all full of blindness, made so with their blood life will consent. God only can open their blind intellect soul mind to spirit life immortal sight.

22.] *Feast of the dedication.*—It began on the 15th December, and lasted eight days.

23.] *Solomon's porch.*—A portico on the east side of the temple.

24.] *Make us to doubt.*—Hold us in suspense. They feigned as if they greatly desired to know the truth, that had over and over been demonstrated.

25.] *The works.*—Miracles. Bear witness, prove that I am the Messiah.

26.] *Ye believe not.*—And therefore it is impossible to convert you, and sow in your soul mind spirit love life immortal truths.

28.] *Eternal life.*—No mortal could beget immortals, it is as darkness begetting light. All such creeds are utterly void of truth or reason. I give by way of my sacrificial blood life spirit begotten of immortal life, whereby I impart immortal life seed

impregnation to all receivers of my spirit truths through blood life's heart will door into their soul minds, which is a free grace gift of God's infinite love that all spirits receiving are in unison with, and which alone imparteth immortal life from the Father of spirits holy.

29.] *My Father.*—The spirit Father of all spirits, from whom all immortal in life receive their spirit being life (Heb. xii. 9). *No man is able.*—All the popish bulls and armies of earth combined with all the powers of darkness, devils, demons, and unclean spirits, wicked men, women and children combined, would be in opposition to God's power as a glowworm's lust light of a moment ray, to endless eternity's eternal day sun; or as a dust on a balance to boundless creation power of God, who speaks, Let there be light, and the ponderous sun beams forth his praise, which ages dim not. He creates and he annihilates all his foes.

30.] *I and my Father are one.*—1 John iv. 16: God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.

32.] *From my Father.*—Wherefore my Father is the first author by order of subsistency and operation, and which as mediator I do by his commission and power. *Which of those works.*—What have I done, what have you seen in me beside divine and wonderful miracles, and revealed truths of God's spirit life?

34.] *Your law.*—Old Testament Scriptures. Ps. lxxxii. 6: I have said, Ye are Gods, and all of you are children of the Most High. 1 John v. 18; iii. 10: Children of God.

35.] *If he called.*—Spirit born holy children begotten of God gods, it would be the same as calling the devil's tare seed children devils, or unclean spirits truthfully.

36.] *Sanctified.*—Made holy, consecrated, set apart for sacred services, and exalted to a supreme love to God, being a pure holy sacrifice made wholly for the salvation of repentant believers of truth, sent into the world to do the work requisite to fulfill his Messiah's mission. Zech. xiii. 6, 7: And one shall say unto him, What are these wounds in thy hands? Awake, O sword, against my shepherd, and against the man that is my fellow, saith the Lord of hosts. I have proved by my works that I am the Messiah, I am the spirit begotten Son of God by his word in Eden (Gen. iii. 15; Heb. ii. 14).

37.] *The works of my Father.*—Proclaiming his grace soul mind spirit birth dispensation of his infinite spirit life immortal love light, that without the spirit birth redemption alliance to

Adam man that fell through woman Eve; and by me is restored through woman's seed on compliance with the conditions of gospel grace of the Father of spirits, immortal in spirit life birth spirit love seed which I sow.

38.] *In me, and I in him.*—1 John iv. 16: God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. We are one in love affinity.

39.] *They sought again to take him.*—Because he claimed truthfully his mission and authority as Messiah, the only spirit begotten Son of the Lord God.

41.] *John did.*—Namely, though John the Baptist did not confirm his ministry by any external miracle, yet the event hath fully verified all he said of Christ, and they believe his testimony, and believe Jesus Christ the truth life way.

42.] *Many believed.*—Were spirit born new creatures delighting in truth and love, though Christ found many despisers of his words of truth, as to day on earth, in and out of church creeds of men associations, who prefer false imaginations of men to God's plainly revealed Scripture truths and statute laws. Yet there were always some who received the doctrine of truth. It is hard for me to proclaim the Scriptures to mortals who pretend to believe the Scriptures, and hold firmly to false creeds of men of inquisition murders manufacture, handed down by Roman Catholic priests.

CHAPTER XI.

1.] *Bethany.*—On the side of the Mount of Olives, about two miles from Jerusalem.

4.] *Not unto death.*—Eternal, irrevocable as to bodies that see corruption rottenness. *Might be glorified.*—By raising Lazarus from the dead, thereby showing the power of the Lord God was with him.

6.] *In the same place.*—Bethabara (i. 28). On the east side of Jordan, about thirty miles northeast of Jerusalem.

9.] *Twelve hours in the day.*—John ix. 4: The night cometh (death) when no man can work. If in its proper season a man does that to which God calls him (I believe I am called to write these Day Thoughts), he is wise, safe, and happy in life, in blood

life death, and forever. But if through fear of slanderous opposition, or selfishness ease, he neglects it, he runs the hazard of losing his soul. Lord please help me do thy will, and bear thy message to the churches.

16.] *Thomas—Didymus.*—A twin. *With him.*—Let us go with Jesus if it costs our blood lives.

24.] *In the resurrection at the last day.*—Martha had no doubt been taught by the Pharisee men creeds traditions of the elders, the same as the men creeds falsely teach to-day, that at the close of time, on the last day of earth's evolutions, that all human sin lust begotten flesh bodies would be raised, or resurrected, to immortal life in heaven, or hell fire torture eternal.

25.] *Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection* [now present tense] *and the life* [of those I resurrect, Adam's life or soul has nothing to do with God's spirit begotten and spirit born children (1 John v. 18); Heb. xii. 9: Shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits and live? Christ imparts the spirit life immortal to those he resurrects, no others can possibly be immortal. 1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality. 2 Tim. i. 10: Christ brought life and immortality; not Adam as false creeds of men teach]: *he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live.*—Spiritually dead. Eph. ii. 1: And you (spirit born of God, John iii. 5) hath Christ quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins. 5: God, when we were dead (spiritually, and blood life under the death sentence irrevocable of Adam's sin lust seed; Gen. iii. 19) in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ. 8: It is the gift of God's grace. 18: For by Christ (saint's spirit vine, John xv. 5) we both have access by one spirit unto the Father (of spirits that live, Heb. xii. 9).

26.] *And whosoever liveth* [is quickened, spirit born; John iii. 5; 1 John v. 12: Hath the spirit love of Christ, Rom. viii. 9] *and believeth in me shall never die.*—Believest thou this? I do, verily, amen. *Never die.*—The soul's unclean tare spirit, or second death (Rev. xx. 2, 11; vi. 14; Matt. xiii. 38-40; Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27). Blood life, nature's earthly product all dies, bodies return back to nature elements, which they are. (Gen. iii. 19; Eccles. xii. 7; Isa. vi. 24; Obad. 16; Mal. iv. 1; Matt. iii. 12). Are resurrected when spirit born.

33.] *Was troubled.*—Greatly moved with sympathy and sorrow, in blood life woman's seed sympathetic feelings for Martha and Mary's grief.

35.] *Jesus wept.*—Some three weeks after my conversion, when for three days I shed many tears, but when light above the brightness of the sun shone upon my soul mind (the light love of God in Christ Jesus) then spirit births impregnation of immortal spirit love light lit up my soul mind with new creature spirit birth being, pulsating love to God and man. No foes had I to punish them with eternal hell tortures; no, no, all was love and forgiveness, to the fullest, uttermost, infinite forgiveness of all who ever had done me wrong; love filled me so full, there was no room for anything but what was in unity with love supreme to God, and to all that loved him as myself; and a missionary love that would have brought all Adam's race on earth to the love light fountain of spirit new creature life immortal, to drink of love's spirit river of life, that flows free and abundant for all. Rev. xxii. 17: And the spirit and the bride say come. And let him that heareth say come. And him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely. Then, some three weeks after my spirit birth, the Lord in a robe of white appeared to me, about midnight, in the room where I slept, between my head and the window. Also the angel at the next window, who drew in a night vision, some four weeks previous, the Eden serpent or a monster black serpent of immense size, from the river of life, with a crook similar in appearance to a shepherd's crook, which he struck into the serpent, and drew it with ease over a large solid rock at the edge of the river of transparent, pure water, deep, wide, banks full, river moving peaceful without a ripple. I, without previous knowledge, the moment the angel began to draw the serpent over the rock, found a rod in my hands, and lustily I struck the monster's body, crushing it to the rock at every rapid striking; at last I battled the monster's awful head, striking more rapidly with my rod, and crushing it to mummy; then the vision passed. The Lord's countenance light beamed gloriously and filled the room with heavenly, beatific light, his face features were beautiful above the power of earthly language to describe; earthly beauty sinks into a ray tint infinitesimal; I had raised my head in my right hand, resting on my elbow on my right side, solemnly viewing my heavenly holy visitors, until the Lord wept, when I spoke and said, What is the cause of thy tears? The tears fell over the transparent glorious beyond description beautiful cheeks, and as they fell on the white robe broke into fragments, each glowing like the brightest diamonds a millionfold

increased in brilliancy in the brightest light, would be my faint illustration of the vision, still bright in memory as if last night it had occurred. He replied there would be a great falling away in the churches, or to like import, and I must bear his message to them. Like a fool I became frightened, and covered my head, as the Saviour, who I believe it was, spoke to me to send me, as I believe I am now doing in writing these Scripture connecting comments on the Scriptures. Lord please help me to develop thy Scripture truths; without thy help I can do nothing that will avail in the salvation of my fellow mortals, who like me are wholly dependent on thee for life temporal and immortal (John xv. 5). Help me to abide in thy love, and please I pray thee and beseech, let thy Spirit abide in me, and guide, shield, and protect my new creature life immortal in thy love, and the love of thy spirit Father, and guide thou, please, all my thoughts, here recorded, to thy glory wholly, in time, and through the ceaseless ages of eternity life. After years of sorrow at not knowing what the Lord would have me do, after hearing the M. E. preacher Bond, in old John Street M. E. Church, New York City, the first church of the kind in America (whereof I was a member), in the forenoon of the Sabbath, that afternoon I opened the Scriptures and read Luke xx. 35-38. At the word "worthy" the scales fell from my eyes: They which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry nor are given in marriage: neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection. (Acts ix. 18: And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales; and he received sight forthwith.) Thus it was with my soul mind perceptive spirit faculties, in my new spirit creature spirit born of spirit life immortal, I clearly saw, if that was so, then all men creeds in all the churches of earth are in error. But so fixed in my second nature, by the force of men creeds false teachings, that my Christian exemplary parents, and all the various church preachers embraced, and taught me from my earliest recollections to that Sabbath afternoon, that I after reading from Luke xx. 35 to 38 inclusive, three times, I remember rubbing my eyes, to see if I had not some optical illusion, but no, it plainly stated those accounted worthy of a resurrection was God's children, and as like begets its like, his universal law, they must be spirit being, they were equal unto the angels. Why that was all flat contradiction of every church creed on

earth, out and out heresy ; it must be a misprint, a blunder of the type-setters. Thus like every church member on earth that believes his creed, they thereby become blind fixtures, if a false man creed, poisoned by the devil's tare weed serpent, that persuaded Eve to break God's imperative statute law, in stealing and eating forbidden fruit of death. Deut. xxix. 4: Yet the Lord hath not given you a heart to perceive, and eyes to see, and ears to hear, unto this day. 1 Kings xxii. 23: A lying spirit in the mouth of all these thy prophets (preachers). 25: Behold thou shalt see in that day. 2 Kings vi. 17: And Elisha prayed, and said, Lord, I pray thee open his eyes that he may see. 20: Elisha said, Lord open the eyes of these men, that they may see. And the Lord opened their eyes. Job xxxiii. 28: His life shall see the light (27). xlii. 1, 5: I have heard of thee; but now mine eye seeth thee. (Job did as he said, xix. 26.) Ps. xlix. 12: Man abideth not: he is like the beasts that perish. 14: Death shall feed on them. 15: But God will redeem my soul from the power of the grave: for he shall receive me. Isa. vi. 10: Lest they see. lii. 8: Thy watchman shall see eye to eye, when the Lord shall bring again Zion (now dawning). Jer. vi. 16-21; Joel ii. 28; Acts ii. 17; Matt. v. 8: Pure in heart shall see God. xiii. 14, 15 (Acts xxviii. 27), 16; xv. 31; Luke vii. 22; xvii. 23; John viii. 51; ix. 15, 39; Heb. xii. 14: Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord. 29: For our God is a consuming fire (Ps. cxv. 5). I got a Polyglot Bible, that read the same. I blindly laid that misprint to the type-setter, it flatly contradicted all orthodox, and was heterodox contrary to the faith and doctrines of the true church I belonged to, was the inward leaven feeling of blind second nature, or habits which nature body life forms, hard to be separated from. But the truth of the Scriptures I discarded until I got my New Testament, published by the American Tract Society, 150 Nassau Street, New York, that I had purchased a few days before in Nassau Street. That reading the same as my other Bibles, I then let my church creeds of men fall, and like Balaam, Num. xxii. 31: Then the Lord opened the eyes of Balaam (spirit intellect eyes), and he saw the angel of the Lord standing in the way, and his sword (spirit truth of the Scriptures) drawn in his hand: and he bowed his head, and fell flat on his face. 38: Have I now any power at all to say anything? the word that God putteth in my mouth, that I speak. xxiii. 10: Who can count the dust of Jacob, and the

number of the fourth part of Israel? let me die the death of the righteous, and let my last end be like his. Then I found heterodox was holding opinions repugnant to the doctrines of the Scriptures. I then commenced at Matthew and carefully read the New Testament Scriptures, with prayers to God daily for spiritual wisdom guidance. James i. 5: If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him. I read not to prove orthodox, or any other sectarian political creed of men manufacture, or traditions, but purely to learn what the Lord said: I took copious memorandum notes of different pointed texts of Scripture, with still a bias for our church creeds orthodox as was claimed, but on many vital points touching the resurrection of the body, the immortality of the wicked, and eternal punishment, I could find nothing to prove such a creed; and that orthodox creeds of men were heterodox to Scripture truths, plainly stated. And after reading in like manner the Old Testament Scriptures I found men creeds were in accord with the devil's falsehoods which seduced Eve, our first mother. Gen. iii. 4, 5: Ye shall not surely die; ye shall be as gods (immortal). (If you eat, sin, break God's statute imperative law in the day thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die, Gen. ii. 17. Not immortal in life:) Ever since, when I have met a preacher of men creeds heterodox, which embraces every sect on earth, more or less, I have proclaimed my message from the Lord, by quoting, and connecting as a chain, his Scripture truths as I find them translated and recorded truthfully, with but few important mistranslations: and to reach all ministers of every persuasion and varied creeds of confused discordant ideas, like the result of Babel spiritual towers to heaven, to reach there without spirit birth holiness (John iii. 5; Heb. xii. 14; Rom. viii. 9). Gen. xi. 4: Let us build us a city (each separate creed wants a city of their own manufacture), and a tower (high church steeple, and a creed spirit tower), whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name. Each different men creed tower has a different name. John x. 9: I am the door: by me (Jesus) if any man enter in, he shall be saved. Lord I pray thee, please open the eyes of all that read these Day Thoughts to see light in thy light, of gospel spiritually discerned truths, as revealed in the Scriptures, and incline all thy spirit born children of God to believe thy truths, and have no other creed but the Scriptures, and be united in love to each other; let each watch-

man preacher feel at home in any pulpit, or other place, whom thou Lord hast called and commissioned with thy Scripture truths, without any necessity of their passports being vised by men creed worshipers, who look only upon the parchment vised by men like themselves; who see only the outward dust man, that perishes; let every spirit born holy new creature bear on his person, if any outward equipment, holiness to the Lord, in small letters on an ephod, that all may know they feel called of the Lord to witness truthfully, and preach the gospel Scripture truths of salvation, telling mortals how to become immortals, by experimental spirit birth, John iii. 5. Eph. iv. 24: And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness (holiness, the state of being holy; purity, integrity of moral character; freedom from sin; sanctity). 1 John iii. 1: Behold what manner of love the Father hath bestowed on us, that we should be called the sons of God (let that be the name, sons of God, children of light. 1 Thess. v. 5: Ye are the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of night, nor of darkness): therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not. 6: Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not; whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him. 8: He that committeth sin is of the devil. 9: Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him (the spirit of Christ, Rom. viii. 9): and he cannot sin, because he is (spirit born) born of God. 10: In this the children of God are manifest (a good name for all holy spirit born to call themselves children of God), and the children of the devil (children of death, Heb. ii. 14). iv. 5: They are of the world: and the world heareth them, therefore speak they of the world (things to please people of the world in sin). 6: We are of God: he that knoweth God (spirit born holy) heareth us; he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth and the spirit of error.

39.] *Take ye away the stone.*—Take away your sins and unbelief before your own soul mind, now covered with worldly sins, desires of nature life lusts and appetites for sin narcotics and faithless belief in God's Scripture truths, or your soul mind life egg, like Lazarus's dead body, will rot with corruption death dissolution of nature elements, of which it is formed, will soon end thy flesh blood life's probation body, and to dust shalt thou return (Gen. iii. 19).

40.] *See the glory of God.*—Glorious displays of his power and grace.

42.] *Because of the people.*—His object of thus speaking to the Father in the hearing of the people was, that they might have this additional evidence that he and his Father were one; and that in view of this new display of his life-giving power, they might be led to believe in him as the sent Saviour and deliverance of all spirit born holy immortal spirit love beings.

43.] *Lazarus, come forth.*—As being assured of his Father's will power infinite.

44.] *Loose him.*—This was addressed to the numerous Jews present, so that they should truthfully attest that it was Lazarus whom they had thus tied and buried four days previous: ocular demonstration of Christ's union with God.

48.] *Both our place and nation.*—Which the Roman soldiers under Vespasian did afterwards do, but it was because they did first surrender to Roman soldiers to crucify their best friend.

49.] *Ye know nothing.*—Nothing about the best way to prevent all the people believing Jesus to be the Messiah, and thus preserve the nation from ruin of our creed.

50.] *It is expedient.*—He thought it better that Jesus should be put to death, than that their nation should be ruined, as the rulers said it would be if the people should follow Christ, who would close their ceremonial sacrifices, which his death on the cross accomplished, and opened the spirit love birth.

51.] *He prophesied.*—His motive was impure men creed policy, but what he would avoid by murder was measured in full force upon them and their nation.

53.] *From that day.*—Adopting the counsel of Caiaphas, they sought to kill him.

54.] *The wilderness.*—The rough and thinly settled parts of the country.

55.] *To purify themselves.*—According to Jewish requirements (Lev. xxii. 1-6).

CHAPTER XII.

1.] *Came to Bethany.*—Christ, seeing that the time appointed for the closing of the sacrificial offerings, by their faith being fulfilled in the gift of his spirit begotten of woman's seed blood life.

Lev. xvii. 11: For the life of the flesh is the blood; and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your souls (not bodies; for it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul).

2.] *A supper*.—This supper was at Simon the leper's house, as appears by Matt. xxvi. 6; Mark xiv. 3.

3.] *Mary*.—The sister of Martha (Luke x. 38, 39; John xi. 2). *Spikenard*.—An aromatic plant of fine perfume, from which was made a precious ointment.

6.] *The bag*.—The purse which contained their money, and from which they assisted the poor.

11.] *By reason of him*.—His presence was a living proof of Jesus being Messiah.

16.] *Was glorified*.—Had ascended into heaven.

17.] *Bare record*.—They related what Jesus had done in raising Lazarus from the dead.

19.] *Ye prevail nothing*.—Nothing to stop the people from believing Jesus Messiah.

23.] *Should be glorified*.—By his blood life sacrificial offering for the redemption and salvation of all spirit born holy soul mind believers of his Scripture truths, whose blood life heart will doors were opened to his knocking truths.

24.] *It abideth alone*.—Remains but one grain; its death is essential to its future life and increase; it is spiritually resurrected as its body rots.

25.] *Loveth his life*.—Nature blood flesh life poisoned with evil carnal death to spirit soul mind spirit birth, while its heart blood life will, as a closed door, excludes Christ's spirit love life immortal words of grace and salvation by way of believing Scripture truths of God, and believing them to the impregnating of the soul mind spirit egg, with spirit love life immortal, from God's word, spirit love truth; for God only hath immortal life self existent to impart to his spirit born children, begot by his spirit word power (1 Tim. vi. 16; 2 Tim. i. 10).

26.] *Serve me*.—Matt. iv. 10; Luke iv. 8: Obey his commands of love especially. *Where I am*.—In heaven, where the Father of all spirits honors his spirit children with an eternal life home of beatific glory light life developments.

27.] *This hour*.—The hour of withdrawing blood life body from its honored immortal life Father power, leaving infinite love to humiliate on and the spirit begotten body to suffer pain by way

of the death executioner power of the devil and his tare seed children and spirit of the world power, all in order to destroy the devil and his death power on all souls quickened in mind belief with his spirit word.

28.] *Glorify*.—Thy name, fulfill thy promise in Eden that the woman's seed should bruise the serpent's head (Gen. iii. 15). And help me by thy promise word of victory to thy children to destroy the devil that hath the power of death of all mortal Adamic and nature life bodies, and as I lay down my blood life to redeem all who are spirit born of my sowing spirit love life immortal seed of God the father of all spirits holy.

29.] *Thundered*.—The wicked, unregenerate, unspirit born, void of love, do not understand God's spirit language, nor his spiritually discerned Scriptures. 1 Cor. ii. 14. *Others said, an angel.*—The speaking was words of love, and were all fulfilled.

30.] *For your sakes*.—Came not because of me; I had no need of this vocal answer, still and secretly mentally would have reached me equally as well, having a perfect, internal, and spiritual communication with God; but vocal answer was given to induce you to believe in me, in my words of eternal truth, and that giveth spirit life immortal milt quickening spirit life seed to soul minds that receive and believe.

31.] *Now is the judgment of this world*.—The crisis on which its destiny hangs of life and death of souls. The blood life nature carnal sin lust begotten flesh bodies were irrevocably sentenced to death, and to return back to nature elements.

35.] *The light*.—Heavenly wisdom, spirit birth life truth light immortal, Messiah light, the source of all true spiritual knowledge.

Walk.—While you have the means of knowledge of heavenly life immortal impartations to believers of spirit birth life of soul's intellects, that receive as truth the Scriptures. Improve them while you may, the present moments of light; soon darkness and death will sweep the light of life spirit words from your minds, unless you receive the truth, and earnestly obey my commands of love.

36.] *Believe in the light*.—Open your blood life heart will door, let your soul mind have life immortal spirit quickening love light from my truth words. You are now blinded; your false men manufactured creed has closed and barred inside your will door against my life light immortal truths. Receive and obey my instructions that you may be wise in spirit birth, new creature life light truth, and be instrumental in leading others to the light of gospel truths,

which are all spiritually discerned by all spirit born of spirit life immortal truth.

37.] *Believed not.*—After all Christ wrought, raising the dead, opening the eyes of the blind, curing lepers, casting out unclean spirits, preaching the gospel to the poor, feeding thousands with a few loaves and fishes, and various other miracles by sea and land, yet after all these ocular demonstrations that he was God's spirit begotten Son, still men creed traditions, in paid priest synagogues, blinded their eyes.

38.] *The saying.*—Isa. liii. 1: Who hath believed our report, and to whom is the arm of the Lord revealed, fulfilled by their rejection of Christ.

39.] *They could not.*—Because they would not believe Christ's truth, and leave their false men creed heresies. Isa. vi. 8. Also I heard a voice of the Lord, saying, Whom shall I send, and who will go for us? Then said I, Here am I; send me. 9: And he said go, and tell this people, hear ye indeed, but understand not; and see ye indeed, but perceive not. 10, 11: Nature eyes cannot discern spirits nor spiritual things; they would be useless in heaven, as all other parts of the human body. Gen. xxxvii. 4: And when his brethren saw that their father Jacob loved Joseph more than all his brethren (as God the father of all spirit born holy loved Jesus, spirit begotten, more than any others on earth of Abraham, and David's descendants), they hated him, and could not speak peaceably unto him. John v. 44: How can ye believe, which receive honor one of another, and seek not the honor that cometh from God only?

40.] *He hath blinded their eyes.*—Isa. xlv. 18: For he hath shut their eyes that they cannot see, and their hearts (blood life) that they cannot understand. By presenting plainly his spirit birth, Christianity, the new spirit born creature, in Christ Jesus, in his love. 1 John iv. 16: God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. 2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15: For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature. The great baptism with the Jews' circumcision made them a close or closed communion; the impassable gulf between them and the poor Gentile Lazarus; and the light of God's spirit birth new creature, love pulsating, spirit of Christ, and God, possessing. Rom. viii. 9: Left the Jew's circumcised man in the dust eternal death. 1 Cor. xv. 44: And raised the spirit born of God, new creature in its

spirit body. That spirit birth light of God, developed, made known by the Lord Jesus Christ, was so brilliant and consuming to their emblem allegorical ceremonial creed, and circumcision baptism, which Holy Ghost baptism wholly abrogated. Deut. xxix. 4, 5 : Yet the Lord hath not given you a heart to perceive, and eyes to see, and ears to hear, unto this day.

41.] *His glory*.—The glory of Christ, called by Isaiah the glory of the Lord (Isa. vi. 1).

42.] *Many believed on him*.—Were convinced that he was Messiah. *Did not confess him*.—Did not openly declare their belief, which is necessary to spirit birth salvation holiness life immortal.

44.] *Not on me*.—Not on me only, but also on my Father, and the Father of spirits holy immortal, and full of love holiness to the Lord.

45.] *Seeth me*.—That is to say, knoweth me by the lively light quickening spirit birth, spirit life light immortal love ; love is my propelling power, and the same actuated him that sent me.

46.] *I am come a light into the world*.—Gen. i. 3 : And God said, Let there be light, and there was light. That same God said, 3, 15 : And I will put enmity between thee (the seducing evil devil death serpent), and the woman's seed ; and between thy seed (soul minds begotten by the devil, evil, unclean spirits. Matt. xiii. 38 : But the tares are the children of the wicked one. 39 : The enemy that sowed them is the devil ; the harvest is the end of the world, and the reapers are the angels. 40 : As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of the world) and her seed (Heb. ii. 14).

48.] *The word*.—The Scriptures, the Bible truths of God's children, through whom as patriarchs, prophets, only begotten spirit word Son, and his disciples, God hath revealed his spirit word laws ; thus our Saviour clearly states, The word that I have spoken, truth words upon which hangs the life immortal new creature spirit love begotten of God (1 John v. 18 ; 2 Cor. v. 17 ; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15 ; Matt. xiii. 37, 38 ; John iii. 5 ; xv. 5 ; Heb. xii. 9). And the body and soul death. Gen. ii. 7, 17 ; iii. 19 ; Eccles. xii. 7 ; Isa. v. 24 ; Obad. 16 ; Mal. iv. 1 ; Matt. iii. 12 ; Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27 : The soul that sinneth it shall die. Rev. xx. 11–15 ; xxi. 8 : Which is the second death ; first death of the blood life body ; second soul death ; all statute imperative laws of God. So plain that the wayfaring men (that can read or

hear the Scripture statutes of God read), though fools (in the eyes of the wicked), shall not err therein if spirit born and holy, for it is to them a plain holiness way.

49.] *Of myself.*—Not of my own authority merely, but by the authority and appointment of my spirit truth eternal love, light, Father of spirits immortal (Heb. xii. 9). *What I should say.*—They then that assume to themselves the power to speak in the church of God, according to their own fancies, misconstruing parables, and taking part of the illustration word, and leaving its plain explanation connection words of truths, that all agree with God's statute fixed imperative laws, when united, take more upon themselves than is truth, which the Son of God himself could not and would not do.

50.] *I know.*—I am positive that what I state is truth eternal (John viii. 14). *That his.*—That his word which I propound by his command, being received by a lively faith, is the only and most assured means to obtain everlasting life. Christ's words are spirit, and life impregnating soul mind seed, in all soul's spirit egg minds that receive, retain, and believe his spirit word truth (vi. 63). *His commandment is life.*—To them only who believe and obey, believers obedient, spirit born holy, thereby secure life everlasting. No other life on this earth can be everlasting. The negative is the reverse.

CHAPTER XIII.

1.] *His own.*—His disciples, all spirit born holy, new creatures in his love (2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15). Those that abide in his love. John iii. 5; iv. 24; vi. 63; xi. 25, 26; xv. 5; Rom. viii. 8, 9; 1 Cor. xv. 44; 1 John i. 7: If we walk in the light as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with the other, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin (1 John ii. 6; iii. 2-12; iv. 16; v. 18).

2.] *Devil.*—Evil, death power, evil temptations to do wickedly, comes of the devil's sin death leprosy, that unseen pervades the earth's atmosphere, as doth pestilence and putrid malignant body blood life death diseases, by way of his soul tare seeds.

8.] *If I wash thee not.*—By spiritual washing of regeneration,

or rather (Rom. viii. 9), If you have not the spirit of Christ you are none of his. Matt. xxiii. 12; Whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased, and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted. How our beloved Lord and master humbled himself to set the example of humility for his spirit born holy seed, which his spirit begotten atonement blood cleanses all spirit born holy spiritually.

9.] *Not my feet only.*—Please cleanse my hands that they may do no evil, and my head, that it my soul mind impregnated by thy spirit truth, spirit word seed, and spirit born, may be cleansed by thy spirit atonement that I may never again think evil; and that Satan may find no uncleanness in me in which his tare seeds of evil thoughts may grow and mature.

10.] *Is washed.*—Is baptized with the Holy Ghost, and spirit born of God's spirit love, and remaineth in pure holy love's embrace and pulsations pure and holy of God's immortal life light in Christ Jesus the spirit medium mediator vine, through which life's soul is immortalized (John xv. 5). *Not all.*—Judas was in Satan's power.

14.] *To wash.*—That is to say, to humble yourselves to do all deeds of charity, and the most humble abject kinds of love service necessary to aid one another.

15.] *An example.*—Of humility, condescension, and kindness. To inculcate the importance of love, instead of a domineering dictatorial lording it over the Lord's spiritual heritage, by assuming, or delegating to selfish proud titled officials in the church powers of coercion over God's children. We must always make a difference between that which Christ hath done for our example which we should ever imitate, and that which he did as belonging to his office of Messiah and Saviour; lest we through imitation of his kind treatment works do abuse them according to our own fancies, and neglect the most essential spirit birth regeneration which comes wholly from God by way of Christ's spirit seed from his immortal Father. The kind acts are but fruits of love, not its tree of life Christ's spirit; all the ceremonial acts are of no value to save the soul unless spirit born of God in Christ and having the spirit of birth love (Rom. viii. 9).

16.] *Servant.*—Cannot be a more important personage than the one who sent him, and can make no binding contract with the man that the sender would not confirm. He teaches affable humility.

17.] *These things.*—The truths he had been teaching them, if they do as directed.

18.] *The Scripture*.—Ps. xli. 9: Yea, mine own familiar friend in whom I trusted, which did eat of my bread, hath lifted up his heel against me. I speak not of you all, I know whom I have chosen. It is a glorious provision of the gospel that old ship Zion has the Lord for the captain-commander and the final judge, and not vain corrupt man.

20.] *Whomsoever I send*.—Not sends himself for a stipulated salary, nor is sent by conference of men, nor synods, nor pope, nor any other, but sent by the Lord, the commander-in-chief of the spirit born army of God, children of God, children of light, not servants of popes, cardinals, bishops, or any other mortal in assumed titles not of God, but of vain wicked selfish proud men. Having called his apostles messengers, or men sent, and having instructed them by his example to voluntary humility, he now authorizes and comforts them against the contempt which humility doth breed in the minds of the wicked. Receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. 1 John iv. 16: God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. John x. 30: I and my Father are one. Thus it is easy to reconcile the Scripture expressions with plain truth, if the connecting links of the thoughts spirit chain are united by the context. The sense of a passage of Scripture is often illustrated by the context.

21.] *He was troubled*.—Through the restraining of his power, that could have hurled the devil and his tare seed powers into annihilation death with a word.

23.] *One of his disciples*.—John, the writer of these words of the Lord Jesus Christ.

25.] *Saith unto him*.—Speaking in a whisper no doubt, and the answer the same.

26.] *When he had dipped*.—In the second part of the Jewish supper. *He gave it*.—He would not reveal Judas' treachery unto them all; instructing them thus to conceal private sins of our neighbors, unless public justice demands it.

27.] *Satan entered into him*.—Made a spy traitor of Judas, tempting him with money.

32.] *Glorify him*.—In his blood life sacrificial death and triumphant resurrection early in the morning of the third, or resurrection day. It was an easy conquest, Satan quailed and fled, his lies fraud battery availed him nothing, and his guilt and crimes loomed up in horrid serpent horror before his vision in the resurrection glory light of God's eternal life.

33.] *Little children.*—Matt. xviii. 3: Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter the kingdom of heaven (xix. 13, 14; Gal. iv. 19; 1 John ii. 1; iv. 4: v. 21). Spirit born (John iii. 5). New creatures (2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15). *As I said.*—Not to exclude his disciples as the unbelieving Jews, but to tell them that they were not to die with his blood life sacrifice, their entrance to heaven was delayed.

34.] *New commandment.*—Especial command of love. New as to its peculiar application to Christian fellowship unity in love to each other, as a power not easily broken or severed, like a tightly bound together bundle of many rods that cannot be broken while thus united together in perfect love holiness to the Lord; but take a rod from the bundle, relying upon its own strength it is quickly broken; and separate men creed church organizations void of that union love with each other, and with Christ in God's love power life immortal light, they are easily overthrown by Satan, and broken asunder from Scripture truth's love, and perish.

35.] *If ye have love one to another.*—This is the inner soul mind's new creature spirit love pulsations breath. Love Jesus, never mind the cross, that cannot save you or do you any good. Love fulfills all the law and the prophets (Matt. xxii. 37; Mark xii. 30; Luke x. 27; 1 John iv. 16).

36.] *Follow me afterwards.*—When you are spirit born, and spirit baptized, you shall be further strengthened, then (after me) you shall come to the cross. The cross and its tortures was Roman cruelty hate.

CHAPTER XIV.

1.] *Ye believe in God.*—The Jews believed in God but rejected the woman's seed spirit begotten of God's word in Eden (Gen. iii. 15), because he came as an innocent lamb, for the sacrificial fulfillment of the promises of the Lord God could only thus be made. Matt. xxiv. 35: Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my word shall not pass away. *Believe also in me.*—O love divine, how humble is the dear Redeemer's request, Believe in me. Lord, I believe in thee with all my heart, soul, mind, might and strength, and that without thy opening of the door through thy self sacrifice of

thy spirit begotten sinless holy blood life, in obedience to thy own spirit of the Lord God power love infinite volition, to lay it down and take up the mangled body by thy spirit power, and in union of love's infinite grace mercy of thy Father, that shall fill all the immortal life spirit children of God with grateful adoration of God's infinite love, extension of mercy's infinite grace sceptre to the redemption of rebel atoms (viewed through Isaiah's telescope, xl. 15, 17, in value counting the cost of redemption as infinitely less than nothing). But to us redeemed, Jesus is our friend Saviour that had pity on our lost and helpless state, and we will, he being our helper, praise him and his Father, the father of spirit life immortal, eternally. How hard it must have been to the feelings of the Lord Jesus Christ to find, after all his labor of love in trying to tell the Jews how to obtain salvation in a way that they would receive and believe the truth, and still even in the closing earth life mission, after miracles by sea and land of infinite power, to have to say, Believe in me.

2.] *In my Father's house.*—The eternity of suns and systems of worlds that revolve around the throne of the supreme sovereign of the universe, as seen in the largest telescopes, gives a faint idea to the mortal mind of the magnitude and magnificence of the city of God. His spirit love eternal life home is not for me alone, but for all my believers likewise (Heb. ii. 10). *I go.*—I shall in a few days lay down the blood life sacrifice to fulfill all promises and prophecy, to the end that by my satisfaction I may obtain for you, through my mediatorial sacrifice, everlasting life; and then I will rise again and enter into glory, to make intercession for you forever, and thereby receive you into heaven. And all who are spirit born of my gospel spirit word truth life immortal seed at body death.

3.] *Receive you.*—At blood life body death. I am the resurrection and life immortal of all spirit born holy, from their dead body that soon rots.

6.] *I am the way.*—The way of access to God, and preparation for heaven.

7.] *From henceforth.*—1 John iv. 16: God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. If the fault lie not in you, you may sufficiently know it in me, and by me, considering my person, works, words, and my doctrine commands to love one the other. I am God's love spirit sent.

10.] *I speak not of myself.*—Matt. iii. 16: And he saw the

Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him. The Father that dwelleth by a ray of love power immortal life in my soul mind. He the Lord God doeth the miracles, raising the dead, cleansing the lepers, giving sight to the blind, and strength to the lame, and stilling the tempest.

11.] *Believe me.*—Spirit love life immortal emanates from the only self-existent Jehovah God, who only hath (native of himself) immortality, and dwelleth in the light which no mortal man can approach unto. His spirit word Son of creation power (John i. 1-3). The Lord God spirit word Son of his spirit love Father (John iv. 24; 1 John iv. 16), who hath free access to his spirit Father that dwelleth in the light which no man can approach unto (1 Tim. vi. 16; Heb. xii. 9). The Father of spirits immortal in life holiness love.

12.] *He that believeth on me.*—Mark xvi. 20: The Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Acts ii. 41-43: And many wonders and signs were done by the apostles. The saying of the Saviour is as applicable to faith believers holy spirit born children of God now as it was then.

13.] *In my name.*—In dependence upon, and for the purpose of honoring Christ Jesus.

14.] *Anything.*—In accordance with his plainly declared will, and which would conduce to spirit birth of souls.

15.] *If ye love me.*—To all that are spirit born holy (John iii. 5; 1 John iv. 16), this is an imperative law command to keep God's commandments. To the children of God this command is given; not to children of men, or devils, or of this world, or of darkness void of love to the Saviour of spirit born holy.

16.] *Another.*—The Holy Ghost, infinite mercy of God that imparts peace and joy to all spirit born holy children of God's light life immortal in Christ's love.

17.] *Spirit of truth.*—The holy Spirit of holiness, and sanctification spirit birth of God's revealed Scripture's truths impartation to their soul minds when spirit born holy. *The world.*—Men who seek earthly things as their chief good see him not, they have not the aid of spirit truth light wisdom knowledge and understanding to see truthfully spirit revealed truths; their views of spirit birth holiness are erroneous, they do not feel their need of God's help here every moment. *In you.*—To enlighten their minds, purify their hearts, show them what they should do, and enable them to do it.

18.] *Come to you.*—Blessed promise to the spirit born child of God buffeted by the devil's slandering nicknamers, and liar hounds, and sub rosa snakes in the grass, cheats, and demon tare children of the devil, annoying the peace loving Christian. I will come to your comfort aid, Amen. Jesus soul mind, the Holy Ghost comes in his spirit word promises, in peace love to all who seek God through him, his word received into the soul mind impregnates it with spirit love life immortal.

19.] *Ye see me.*—Enjoy my presence, and after my resurrection ye shall see me, and if faithful spirit born holy at blood life death, all such shall see Christ, and be with his children spirit born holy and angels in glorified spirit bodies eternally. All others die on earth.

20.] *At that day.*—Acts ii. 1-24: When the holy Spirit should come, and they should enjoy the spiritual presence of the Redeemer mutual union of spirit love.

21.] *He it is that loveth me.*—All that keep God's commandments, no others, purely, fully, with will, soul and mind. 1 John iv. 16: God is love; such dwells in love.

22.] *How is it.*—Every one truly spirit born holy knows experimentally, as well as that they have being, love, gratitude and adoration to God and all that love him truthfully, and a missionary love for sinners, and peace.

23.] *Keep my words.*—Shall thereby become impregnated with his and his Father's immortal spirit life love, and intellectual mind light.

24.] *The word which ye hear is not mine.*—These Day Thoughts are I humbly trust the promptings of the Lord who imparts these truths to my mind (John xv. 5). Without his aid I can do nothing of spirit life work.

26.] *All things.*—Necessary to fit each for his spiritual outfit of love, truth and light.

27.] *My peace I give unto you.*—Let no fear of coming or surrounding events mar your peace, trust wholly on my aid (Phil. iv. 7).

28.] *Greater than I.*—His Father was the only Lord God, spirit word creation power Son, acting in unity with him (John i. 1-4; x. 30). His Father was the self-existent Jehovah almighty God, and sovereign supreme of the universe, through whose only self-existent immortal life light rays all life germinators of life receive their power to live, and move, and have a being; none of which is

immortal unless begotten by his word power life immortal light (1 Tim. vi. 16; Heb. xii. 9). Father of spirits holy immortal (1 John iv. 16). All dwelt in unison of spirit love oneness, and in common as all immortal life is of one love fountain, but in power as in mortal's bucket drop to Christ's overflowing well in them of love and his free access to his Father's boundless eternity life ocean. God is love.

29.] *I have told you.*—His blood life death and departure from them. That they might perceive after their fulfillment his foreknowledge.

30.] *Prince of this world.*—Has no interest in heavenly immortal life love, nor had or hath the devil any interest in Christ's atonement, save hatred opposition. The devil could not succeed in annihilating him, but in the end he, Christ, will annihilate the devil death (Heb. ii. 14; 1 Cor. xv. 26).

31.] *That the world may know.*—When my blood life body dies. I obey his command to give or lay down my blood life pure for my believers, and spirit born holy children of God, and resurrection in me, and life eternal (John xviii. 1). He went thence over the brook Cedron.

CHAPTER XV.

1.] *I am.*—This similitude shows that all Adam's race by nature birth have no connecting tie to spirit life immortal. 1 Tim. vi. 16: God only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto. 2 Tim. i. 10: Now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death (to all spirit born holy), and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel. *The true vine.*—Figuratively, and spiritually, the only communicating spirit vine, with the only self-existent spirit God, who only of himself without impartation from another hath immortal life, and dwelleth self-existent spirit life light. He is the keeper of the spirit life immortal vineyard. Mortals of nature birth, fed on nature food, soon die, and can by no means of their earthy being become immortal, or bring forth any spirit fruit life immortal, without partaking of Christ's spirit

love, life immortal nature seed, sown by him. Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5; Rom. viii. 9). Engrafted by faith into Christ's spirit life eternal, by the spirit of new birth. Christ being in full communion with life's spirit love immortal life fountain, as a grapevine is in the ground. I am the vine spirit life through which all partakers of immortal spirit life receive their spirit life light love fruit maturing, spirit wine juice from the river of eternal life. And my Father he is the first author of all this order of earth's Adamic grace spirit life order, by way of soul mind impregnation belief of his spirit truth life eternal spirit love seed.

2.] *Every branch.*—Professed disciple. *Beareth not fruit.*—Of a holy life without sin. 1 John iii. 8: He that committeth sin is of the devil. 9: Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin. Purgeth it, pruneth, purifieth. Dead branches are sin poisoned, or, death soul mind's tare seed worm, that dies not with the nature body probation blood life death, but lives an unclean spirit tare devil, seeking rest and finding none, these, not like Darwin's wild theory of progress, from a mussel to a mortal man, but each species produce their own kind. The unclean spirits seek for rest in the various animate life creatures of earth, but find none; they in carnivorous animals excite them to prey on defenseless life, as did their father the devil in the seducing serpent in Eden on Eve. And the heathen world made an image ring of the serpent, to represent immortal life, promised Eve by their false men creed tare seed father of incorrigible wicked tare seed begotten by the devil father of lies. Who with his unclean spirit children perish in God's consuming justice fire at the close of time (Matt. xiii. 38-40; Heb. ii. 14). Men creeds to-day teaching immortal life to the incorrigible wicked are like the heathen serpent worshipers, that put the serpent's head and tail together and form a ring thereby of its body, as emblems of their eternal life. God said sinners incorrigible should die. Satan taught, as his tare seed worshipers, popes, cardinals, bishops, and D.D.'s, now teach, that the wicked are immortal; when eternal life can only come from God's immortality; every exterior member of the church which by external profession seems to be engrafted in me, though in spirit birth truth they are not (Rom. xi. 17, 20; 2 Pet. i. 8).

3.] *Clean.*—The words of spirit life truths I have uttered have driven from your minds nature's darkness and evil carnal unclean spirit false creed tare seed. *Through the word.*—By my word, accompanied with the efficacy of my spirit (John xvii. 17; Eph.

v. 26 ; 1 Pet. i. 22). And because faith is begotten by the word which purifieth the heart (Acts xv. 9 ; John vi. 63 ; xiii. 10).

4.] *Abide in me.*—Persevere in faith, continue to believe in me, to obey my commands, and depend on me for all needed good, that I may communicate my spirit life.

5.] *Much fruit.*—Conversion of souls through your truths, increase in holiness, virtue, purity, and spirit love birth's immortal life maturity. *Without me.*—Being severed and cut off from my communion. *Donothing.*—In spiritual works of truth, truly full of spirit birth life love, immortal life light, good, holy pure from God, will not flow from me the Mediator spirit vine to you, unless you abide in my love.

6.] *Cast forth as a branch.*—When a branch limb is severed from a vine or tree, it ceases forever to live, bear fruit, or be of any value, and to remove them from being a nuisance, they are burned in the fire as a brush-heap ; never again is such a broken-off branch resuscitated with resurrection, or any other life ; a full description of the dead mortal body, and soul mind bearing intellectual thoughts of the spirit holiness impress or communication imparted by Christ, the spirit intellect mind impregnator, with spirit birth seed spirit love from God the Father of immortal spirit beings holy, while they abide in Christ's love communication with his Father, the husbandman proprietor, and owner, and only fountain of immortal holy spirit life, and of all attributes and powers in the universe that are infinite. The human body dead soon rots and returns to earth elements, and to remove the stench, poor mortals if popes, kings, queens, or any other mortal of the lowest or highest grade, rich or poor, they are all on a level after death, and soon rot and become a nuisance to the living, and are buried out of sight and return like the vine branch or tree limb or tree body ; once all dead, nothing of life remains in them ; they rot as vegetation dung upon the earth. If a man abide not in Christ by living faith.

7.] *My words abide.*—Clearly showing that by faith belief of Christ's words we who are spirit born are united in love to Christ and his Father. *It shall be done.*—Your faith prayers offered in accord with the will of God shall be answered.

8.] *Herein.*—The good works fruits of righteousness, not selfishness desiring self-glory, titles, and bubble effervescent vanity applause of mortals, whom their prompter can in a brief time after cause to cry in regard to the same man, or being, Crucify him.

9.] *So have I.*—The love which God beareth to his righteous spirit born children is grounded upon that love he bears unto his spirit begotten Son Jesus Christ. *Continue ye in my love.*—By continuing to obey my commands, especially of love.

10.] *Keep my.*—The keeping of God's commandments is a testimony of the love we bear unto him.

11.] *That my.*—That you may have a perpetual and full feeling of my grace, in consolation of spirit, without interruption or diminution.

12.] *As I have loved you.*—That ye love one another. Matt. v. 44: Love your enemies. xxii. 37: Jesus said unto them, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart (blood life will subdued by spirit birth's superior spirit life power), and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. Intellectual spirit born righteousness love. 39: Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. 40: On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

14.] *Ye are.*—This friendship shall be known to be true by the effects of a conformity of wills, love, and obedience to my commands.

15.] *All things that I have heard of my Father.*—His commands directing me in reference to you. *I call you not servants.*—But friends, if they obey him.

16.] *Ye have not chosen me.*—They had not first chosen him, but he had chosen them, and their choice of him and love was the fruits of his choice and love to them. *Ordained you.*—Set you apart to the work to which I have called you to persevere in bearing good fruits, durable to yourselves, fit to keep unto eternal life. *In my name.*—Good works is the fruits of righteousness, but all our strength in prayer is through Christ's merits alone. He is our only telegraph wire that reaches to God, our only spirit food vine.

19.] *The world hateth you.*—Governed by the principles and maxims of worldly men, and by carnal nature's sin lust birth (Ps. li. 5) rebels against God's law, sentenced to death (Gen. iii. 19; Eccles. xii. 7; Isa. v. 24; Dan. xii. 2; Mal. iv. 1; Matt. iii. 12; Rom. ix. 22). Vessels of wrath fitted to destruction. By their own wickedness; and nothing is more like their prompter and leader, their tare seed liar father the devil (John viii. 44), than hating God's children on earth, that are the salt that saves the earth from destruction by fire like Sodom and Gomorrah, feeble as they are, and unworthy of God's infinite grace love manifest in Jesus' sacrificial offering.

20.] *Fours also*.—It is one Scripture word, and one doctrine. Scriptures are the only creed of the righteous spirit born children of God. He means this of their ministry, who are called by him to preach Scripture truths; not their own, or other men's tradition creeds that oppose God's statute laws.

21.] *They know not*.—By spirit birth holiness love life. They have not and will not receive any lively knowledge of God, in his appointed way, concerning the mystery of redemption by his son and spirit birth, new creature spirit life.

22.] *They had not*.—To such a degree sinned, because they would not have rejected and sinned against such great light, and miraculous ocular demonstrations of truth that Christ Jesus was the promised Messiah; their sin otherwise might seem the result of carnal nature, blindness, ignorance.

23.] *Hateth me*.—Such hate Christ as through their men creed hypocrisy.

24.] *None other man*.—Christ, both by words and works, showed that God had sent him to be a Saviour of all who accepted his salvation terms.

25.] *Without a cause*.—When Christ or his spirit born seed of God's love hold up God's Scripture truths of spirit birth holiness salvation before any class or sect on earth, and they will not receive his truth message from God, because they like the drunkard from habit love their men tradition falsehood creeds of men better than God.

26.] *Spirit of truth*.—He shall testify through sent of God to the truth and verity of the Scriptures, and the integrity and divinity of Christ's character. *From the Father*.—I am the mediator.

27.] *Ye also*.—The apostles. *From the beginning*.—Of his public ministry.

CHAPTER XVI.

1.] *Offended*.—Apostatise or commit sin to avoid suffering for truth.

2.] *Out of the synagogues*.—Men creed churches will treat you and all children of God spirit born holy believers of Scripture truths as heretics, and would, were they not restrained by God

and common self protection law, even now if in power, be tempted by their devil hatred of Scripture truths that contradict their creeds to kill their opponents, which they did do for centuries, under popish inquisition.

3.] *These things.*—Works of their father the devil death hater of truth light.

4.] *I was with you.*—It was not then, as it had been previously, I preserved you by my presence, and put away all dangers, and never placed you alone upon any great combats and trials, such as await you after my departure.

5.] *None of you.*—Use your soul mind reason, your grief at this time overcomes poor blood life nature with sorrow in contemplating my leaving you in this world with wicked men, women, and children, and devils and tare seed children of the devil, unclean spirits, and all the powers of darkness, death, and evil sins, and carnal self willed fallen sin nature with natural inclinations to evil if unrestrained by reason, and reasons cut off; you should improve the time in asking me for instructions.

7.] *If I go not away.*—If I fulfill not the love sacrifice redemption of spirit born soul minds, and open not through the death sentence pronounced upon Adam and Eve and all their race in Eden (Gen. iii. 19), no Comforter can come from heaven's spirit God of love, light, and life immortal; I am the only being that, through my blood life death can open a door through my sacrifice holy spirit begotten through the devil death, whom your ancestors obeyed in the garden of Eden, and partook of sin death forbidden lust sin fruit, and thereby cut off all retreat, and closed every avenue of escape save one, and that is through me by way of the word of the Lord God that begot me (Gen. iii. 15), to bruise the serpent's head, the devil death. Heb. ii. 14: Forasmuch then as the children (spirit born of God in Christ's love seed, Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5. New creatures (2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15) are partakers of flesh and blood, he (Christ Jesus) also himself likewise took part of the same (woman's seed, Gen. iii. 15). That through death (of woman's seed blood life holy) he might destroy him that had the power of death (of body and soul of Adam's race who sinned, Ezek. xviii. 4), that is the devil. John xi. 25, 26: I am the resurrection and the life; he that believeth, and is spirit born of God (1 John iii. 8-10; iv. 16; v. 18), shall never die. Their blood life bodies die, as doth all nature life. The Egyptian mummies are the product of false creeds of men of this world, blind as to

spirit life and priestly pampering to nature body worship; it is nature's blood life attachment to its own body, placed there in creation to prevent suicide or self destruction.

8.] *Reprove.*—By convincing truth light on the mind, reprove their former life actions of erroneous false suicidal rebellion against God's just laws.

9.] *Of sin.*—Especially the sin of rejecting the Saviour, without whom sin reigns in the world; spirit life eternal alone can beget immortal beings, like begets its like is God's infallible statute law of the universe; mortals cannot beget immortals, it contradicts itself. Heaven's spirit Father only hath immortal life to bestow (Heb. xii. 9).

10.] *See me no more.*—Not in a blood life body after the crucifixion. Mark xiv. 24: This is my blood (typical of his love spirit life eternal) of the New Testament, which is shed for many, all spirit born holy. 2 Cor. v. 16: Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh; yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more. The flesh blood life of Christ Jesus like all nature earth life is the products of earth in obedience to God's command, and returns to its earth elements (Gen. iii. 19). Eccles. xii. 7: Then shall the dust return to earth as it was, and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it.

11.] *Of judgment.*—That as Satan the god of this world, or the essence god of hatred, who as devil death executioner and tempter, seduces and destroys virtue, and all earth life blood, as a vampire he poisons with his arsenic lies breath, being an unclean death spirit power (Heb. ii. 14).

12.] *Many things.*—These things are revealed in the gospel doctrines of the apostles, especially by Paul, the last called apostle of the Gentile dispensation. *Cannot bear them.*—Comprehend spirit birth life beyond the grave, without nature's blood life body, nor gather the fruit of them, by reason of the grossness of your understanding and the weakness of your faith, being blinded by the prince of this world in Jew men creeds.

13.] *Into all truth.*—He shall give you a living light apprehension of the life spirit birth that is immortal, and of the glory and spiritual estate of my kingdom in this world, which hitherto you could not apprehend. Or he shall inspire you with the knowledge of many future things by the spirit of prophecy, all that would be needful to a full revelation of the gospel truth. *That shall he speak.*—He would communicate the will of the Father and the Son

as far and as fast as the people of earth were capable of receiving and comprehending spirit birth life surroundings, and heavenly life immortal, being by nature wholly carnal they were not capable without experimental soul mind spirit birth to comprehend spiritual things, which would be given as God's glory saw best.

14.] *He shall glorify me.*—All that I have done in redemption humiliation shall then produce its glorious effect in spirit birth salvation, and obtain its end, immortal life to truth believers through the merits of my sacrifice of body blood life (Num. xxxv. 33). Lev. xvii. 11: For the life of the flesh is in the blood, and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your souls, for it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul. No atonement is or ever was made for the flesh body, or was ever possible or desirable by infinite wisdom. John iii. 5: Except a man be born of the spirit (which the body cannot be begotten again) he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh (1 Cor. xv. 50, flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God), and that which is born of the spirit is spirit. New creature spirit being pulsating spirit life immortal love of God, who only hath immortality (1 Tim. vi. 16). 1 John iii. 8–10; iv. 16: God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him (v. 18; 2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 5). John vi. 63: It is the spirit that quickeneth, the flesh profiteth nothing. The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life. 68: Thou hast the words of eternal life (Ezek. xviii. 4).

15.] *Are mine.*—That is the spirit God, the Father of spirits immortal holy (Heb. xii. 9), the Father of the spirit word creation power spirit Son. John i. 2: The same was in the beginning with God, and God was his spirit word creation power begotten by his word; and he was called the spirit word Son of God, the Father of spirits immortal holy, who only hath in himself self-existent life eternal, and omnipotent, and infinite in all his attributes consistent with his holiness. The spirit word creation power Son of almighty God, sovereign supreme of the universe, was called the Lord God, and his word promise son (Gen. iii. 15) was the only spirit begotten son of God of woman's seed egg of nature life, Jesus, whose spirit begotten soul mind is the Holy Ghost. All others are begotten of soul's spirit egg mind, through his mediation and spirit word on earth. Begetting power life immortal from almighty God, who only hath immortality self-existent (1 Tim. vi. 16), dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man

hath seen, nor can see. His spirit word Son of creation power (John i. 2) was in the beginning (of creation power) with almighty God, his spirit Father (John iv. 24). He (John i. 10) was in the world (led Israel, clothed a portion of his spirit power life in human form to converse with Moses, Aaron, Abraham, Job, Gideon, and others at sundry times, and was in like power in the spirit word power promise (Gen. iii. 15), that begot of the woman's seed egg of nature life in the virgin Mary the sacrifice body holy without sin, the lamb of God. John i. 10, 19 (Rev. vii. 10; xvii. 14; xxii. 1, 2): He was in the world, and the world was made by him (the Lord God), and the world (unspirit born) knew him not. 12: But as many as received him (in Christ Jesus), to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name. 13: Which were born, not of blood (nature life sin lust, Ps. li. 5), nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God, spirit begot and spirit born (1 John v. 18).

16.] *Shall not see me.*—Not corporally, and in ordinary conversations. *And again.*—In the corporal body, void of blood, or blood life, which he gave for atonement of souls spirit born holy, filled and sustained by spirit life immortal from God the Father of spirits; not dead rotten flesh bodies made of perishable vegetation life products of earth, or worse dead bodies of animate life.

18.] *We cannot tell.*—The disciples showed that they were as yet very ignorant of spirit birth life immortal of God, and had need of experimental spirit birth, and further instruction. Thus ignorant are all Adam's sin lust race, by nature blood life knowledge wisdom of the schools of earth.

20.] *Weep and lament*—At his blood life sacrificial death offering. The world, wicked men tare seed children of the devil, in and out of the Jewish man creed church or synagogue, will with devils rejoice at their conquest. *Turned into joy.*—By his resurrection, triumphant conquest of the devil's death power over his woman's seed body; as at blood life death, when his spirit life holy sent the devil death, and all his vast broad way army of unclean spirits, with lightning speed from his presence, as the morning sun disperses darkness from earth. Thus an easy conquest was had on the third day morning.

24.] *Asked nothing in my name.*—They had not been accustomed before this to pray in the name of Christ; but after that time they would be, and for his sake God would bestow whatever they needed which they asked for, which was in accordance with

God's will, as revealed especially in his love restrictions, requiring love to him supreme, and to our neighbors, especially in forgiving their trespasses against us. Matt. vi. 15: If ye forgive not men their trespasses (trespass, any injury or offense done to another); our trespasses against God are to transgress voluntarily any divine law or command of God, as found in the Scriptures; or to violate any known rule of duty. Eph. ii. 1: And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; and they desire in their men creeds that their neighbors should roast in endless fire, no mercy death.

25.] *In proverbs.*—Or parables, somewhat obscurely, and in such manner that they required him to explain the parables, not understanding their meaning. *The time cometh.*—After his resurrection, and the gift of the Holy Ghost infinite mercy spirit of God that restrains the justice fire sword of God from consuming in a moment the sinners of earth when they sin to repentance prolongation of life until its probation time ends. *Plainly.*—Spirit birth experimental religion; he would by his spirit, when freed from the nature body, more plainly instruct them in spirit life.

30.] *By this we believe.*—26: I will pray the Father for you; he was then clearly stating his mediator Messiahship, possessing spirit birth alliance to God his father, whose spirit word powers were fully developing in him; and by woman's seed blood life alliance he was our only possible friend with power sufficient to crush and destroy the devil death (Heb. ii. 14; Gen. iii. 15). Our lion foe, the devil, was in the serpent head to be bruised.

31.] *Do ye now believe.*—They, like thousands of church members, say they believe when they read plain declarations of Scripture they thus feel; but none can understand heavenly truths fully without experimental spirit new creature life birth (Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5; 2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15; 1 Cor. ii. 14-16). Because they are spiritually discerned.

32.] *The Father is with me.*—Like Abraham with Isaac to make the sacrifice, notwithstanding the strong faith in Christ which they had expressed, they would soon desert him, and return to their homes or places of abode. And so far as human friends were concerned, he would be left alone, clearly proving that all our strength to oppose the powers of the devil death, the hallucinations and temptations of the world and carnal nature, comes wholly from the Lord. John xv. 5: Without me ye can do nothing. Isa. ii. 11: And the Lord alone shall be exalted in that day. lxiii. 3: I have

trodden the winepress alone; and of the people there was none with me. 4: The year of my redeemed is come. 5: And I looked, and there was none to help; and I wondered there was none to uphold. All Adam's race was utterly helpless to extricate themselves or aid Christ in any way to save them from the devil death powers. Therefore mine own arm brought salvation unto me. 16: Doubtless thou art our father, though Abraham be ignorant of us, and Israel acknowledge us (Gentiles) not. Thou, O Lord, art our father, our redeemer, thy name is from everlasting.

33.] *In me.*—Peace, rest of spirit born new creature life and secureness, while you rely wholly upon me for help, and abide in my and my Father's love. In the world of the wicked of earth, the devil's tare seed liars and nicknamers, who called Christ Beelzebub, will annoy and perplex, persecute, malign, and imprison, and murder some of you, my disciples, for doing them good, telling them how to get to heaven. Blood life is short at best, and heaven's joys await you at blood life death. *I have overcome.*—I, head of my spirit birth holy church, all spirit born new creatures in my love (2 Cor. v. 17) have for them overcome what is mortal in the devil's kingdom; your salvation is now out of danger, follow on courageously, your victory is sure in me.

CHAPTER XVII.

1.] *Glorify thy Son.*—The glory of the Saviour was his triumphant overthrow of the devil death, and at his consummation of laying down his blood life body blood as a sacrifice for the sins of all spirit born of his spirit seed holy (Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5; 2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 15). New creature (Rom. viii. 9) having his spirit love resurrection life power. This glory triumph was further consummated in the spirit resurrection of the body of Jesus without blood life, which he had given for redemption (Lev. xvii. 11); for it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul. No atonement was or ever will or can be made for the blood life body.

2.] *Power.*—To give eternal life to those who receive into their soul minds, unto full faith belief, his spirit life words of life im-

mortal truth love light from God (Matt. xiii. 37, 38). John iii. 5; vi. 63; xi. 25, 26: I am the resurrection and the life; whosoever liveth (a spirit birth, spirit new creature life of love) and believeth in me shall never die.

3.] *That they might know.*—By experimental birth knowledge (John iii. 5). That they may enjoy thee by living spirit born love pulsating holy faith, in this blood life tenement of dust, and with beatific glory ineffable sight in thy heavenly eternal life spirit mansion, when blood life dies and frees the new creature love life spirit, to be escorted by guardian angels to their heavenly glory home of spirit being life immortal. *The only true God.*—Or to reveal that in granting salvation in the Father ought to be apprehended the absolute sovereign majesty of the Deity; and in the Son the voluntary and subalternate office of mediator, John xiv. 28.

4.] *Glorified thee.*—That is, honored thee by a perfect obedience, in declaring thy grace spirit birth love proclamation, which as Redeemer and Saviour requires that my spirit life returns to thee, and that I give my woman's seed blood life spirit begotten by thy promise word (Gen. iii. 15), that I may open a door from earth to heaven, through my mediatorial offering, through which all spirit born holy spirit souls new creatures in my love and thine may safely pass, when I have destroyed the devil's death power over such by passing through his death dominions and conquering him and bruising his serpent head (Heb. ii. 14).

5.] *Glory which I had with thee.*—In the spirit word of life; Christ's spirit life alone, without any of the woman's seed blood life body productions, which blood life he was about to give for the redemption of spirit born believers.

6.] *Manifested thy name.*—Proclaimed thy grace conditions by way of spirit birth (John iii. 5). And that thou art a spirit; and that such as would desire immortal spirit life must seek God through Christ the mediator, who has full power to pardon, and is the only resurrection and spirit life medium of eternal existence.

7.] *Now.*—I have caused them to know by my gospel spirit birth love life immortal revelation, and that all the salvation which they have in and from me is of thy sovereign favor, and that all the glory therefore is due to thee as the first cause and author. 1 Cor. i. 30: Of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption. 20: That no flesh should glory in his presence. The flesh

dust Adam seed are all condemned to death and dust. Gen. ii. 7: And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground. 1 Cor. xv. 47: The first man is of the earth earthy. The second (spirit generator of soul minds, imparting spirit life of God immortal new creature spirit being), the second man is the Lord from heaven (48, 49). Gen. iii. 19 (Adam and his seed sentenced to death): Dust thou art and unto dust shalt thou return (Ezek. xviii. 4, 20, 24, 27).

8.] *I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me.*—John vi. 63: It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing (Adam's flesh life was an utter failure, because of his sin, which severed him and his race from God, who only hath immortal life; all others not in union love obedience to him cease soon to exist). The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life eternal, not Adamic life.

9.] *I pray for them.*—All spirit born holy disciples of my love spirit seed of God (Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5). *I pray not for the world.*—Adam's carnal sin lust race, unspirit born, unholy, sentenced to death; and Satan and his tare seed children, unclean spirits, and all others whereof the devil death is the head. *Them which thou hast given me.*—They are thine, being spirit born of thy promise love word. I pray thee that thou wouldst continue thy co-operation with me by thy sovereign power, to the accomplishment of their salvation.

10.] *I am glorified in them.*—By their reception of me as their Saviour, and committing themselves and all their interests to my guidance and disposal.

11.] *Through thine own name.*—1 John iv. 16: God is love; and they that dwell in love dwell in God, and God in them. *No more in the world.*—In a nature woman's seed blood life body, soon to be given as a sacrifice for many; all spirit born holy; manifest thyself to them as their shield and defense, and exceeding great reward if they continue in thy love, obedient.

12.] *I kept them in thy name.*—By the manifestation of thy love character, and with my love instructions and example. *Son of perdition.*—Judas, whose ruin was foretold in the Scripture truths eternal (Ps. cix. 8).

13.] *Fulfilled.*—Made perfect and eternal. *I speak.*—I make this prayer unto thee in their presence, to give them a certain and perfect comfort, and rest of spirit, because of the certainty which they ought to conceive of thy hearing me.

14.] *I have given them thy word.*—John vi. 63: The words I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life (Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5), spirit birth of the word seed of spirit love life immortal from God. *Hated.*—John iii. 19; And this is the condemnation, that light has come into the world (spirit life immortal love light, wisdom), and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. Thus all Christians bearing gospel light are hated and slandered.

15.] *From the evil.*—From the devil's great power, and the world's allurements.

16.] *They are not of the world.*—Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5; 2 Cor. v. 17: Therefore if any man be in Christ he is a new creature, spirit born of God. 1 John iii. 9: Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him, and he cannot sin because he is born of God. Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15; Be not deceived; God is not mocked (with flesh sin lust body resurrections of the rotten bodies of the dead), for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption (rotten body and extinct soul intellect light, Ezek. xviii. 4). But he that soweth to the spirit shall of the spirit reap life everlasting. For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

17.] *Thy word is truth.*—The Scriptures are truth revelations of spirit life immortal, and how to obtain spirit birth life eternal, and that all earth life soon dies, and ends eternally to exist in any form; sanctify them through thy (Scripture) truth. Men creeds false are not God's truth, nor sanctification, which is to cleanse from falsehood and all sin's corruptions; to purify from sin, to make holy by detaching the affections from the world and its defilements, and exalting them to a supreme love to God. To make them free from guilt; to purify, to prepare for divine service, and for partaking of holy things (Exod. xix. 10).

18.] *As thou hast sent me into the world.*—How beautiful! Christ was sent into this world by spirit birth of woman's seed (Gen. iii. 15), to bruise the devil death serpent head of all evil on the earth, for which purpose he assumed the human body (Heb. ii. 14). All spirit born of woman's seed body soul mind egg germs of spirit new creature life are sent when called to preach with a spirit message of Scripture truths from God.

19.] *For their sakes.*—I consecrate my blood life a holy spirit

lamb, begotten by the Lord God's word creation life power (Gen. iii. 15) of woman's seed, a holy redemption sacrifice to open a door from earth to heaven's spirit life immortal light love seed for spirit born soul minds that bear my spirit love life immortal password of truth, gift of the sanctifying Holy Ghost for them, which may regenerate them in new holiness purity, true and permanent newness of immortal life.

20.] *Neither pray I for these alone.*—Apostles, or those who were then disciples. But for all such as through faith receive and believe my gospel Scripture words of truth and life immortal love light spirit born holy, permanent newness of life spiritual from their soul minds being thereby spirit begotten of God (John iii. 5; 1 John iii. 9; v. 18).

21.] *One.*—1 John iv. 16: God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.

22.] *The glory.*—Spirit birth new creature pulsating immortal spirit love life from God. 1 John iii. 9; iv. 16: God is love. and they that pulsate love life immortal in Christ are new spirit life immortals (2 Cor. v. 17). How different from the oneness to-day! The spirit Babel of men creeds and sects of various names, and their self delusions have left them to themselves, when void of spirit love they know not God. 1 John iv. 8: He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love. 7: Every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God. If spirit born holy will obey God, they will throw away all their gnat dissensions and men creeds, and adopt the Bible as their only confession of faith, and become one in love to each other, and see eye to eye, as one army of light warring upon darkness.

23.] *Loved them, as thou hast loved me.*—1 John iv. 16: God is love, and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. Matt. xxii. 37: Jesus said unto them, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart (blood life will), and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. Soul and mind, seat of spirit life immortal spirit birth. 39: Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself,—Presbyterian, Methodist, Episcopal, Baptist, or any in or out of any church that love truthfully, and are spirit born holy, keeping the Scripture commands of God, especially Christ's last eleventh commandment,—love one another. 40: On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. Thus love is the essential spirit blood life immortal new creature life in Christ (2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15).

24.] *With me where I am.*—In heaven's spirit life light love eternal in their soul mind's new creature spirit born love pulsating holy spirit bodies glorified like mine with immortal love life, for the cleansing of their spirits from blood life filthiness of the flesh that thou hast sentenced to death. I give my spirit begotten of woman's seed by thy spirit word power blood life holy. Lev. xvii. 11: For it is the blood that maketh atonement for the soul (not body).

25.] *Not known.*—By spirit birth (Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5; 2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 51) so as to love and obey God's Scripture truths. *These.*—Have known that thou hast sent me, and on the day of pentecost by experimental spirit birth, and ocular Holy Ghost baptism truth demonstration.

26.] *Declared unto them thy name.*—1 John iv. 16: God is love: made thee known to them. *Will declare it.*—That thou art love. John iii. 16: God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

CHAPTER XVIII.

1.] *These words.*—These words in the preceding chapter, which wonderful prayer he had just offered, full of infinite holiness love to his spirit Father and to his disciples, and looking down the centuries to the close of time's point between eternity past and eternity to follow time's close, he exclaims, Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also who shall believe on me through their word. Glorious prayer of love that even reached through some near nineteen centuries down through the dark ages of popish Rome's inquisition; tortures of Christians, and fires and fagots death, still on through all obstructions of Jewish and Gentile men creed tortures of God's children, until its infinite mercy love reached even unworthy me, a dust atom animate with life, and my soul mind was impregnated with his prayer spirit love glory to the Saviour, and to the infinite love his Father bore in pity for our helpless race, that madly obeyed the devil for imaginary gain, and lost their real friend and benefactor. John iii. 16: For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son (O love in-

finite, I love thee) that whosoever believeth in him should not perish (all others perish in death), but have everlasting life. Religion is a business of vital concern to all mortals on earth. Cedron or Kidron, a small stream, which ran through the Valley of Jehoshaphat, on the east side of Jerusalem, between the city and the Mount of Olives (2 Sam. xv. 23; 1 Kings xv. 13).

2.] *Knew the place.*—And that was the reason why Jesus went thither; for knowing the appointed sacrificial hour drew near, he willingly gave his body blood life holy to open a spirit life narrow way for soul mind birth door, and fulfill his Father's infinite love word (Gen. iii. 15; Heb. ii. 14).

3.] *A band.*—A company of the Roman soldiers on garrison duty.

6.] *I am he.*—They went backward and fell to the ground, and there would have remained dead if the Lord had willed it thus; and to show them their helplessness before him, in an instant he could have destroyed in death all his accusers; but that was not the purpose of Christ's mission on earth; they were completely in his power; he could have left, had he chosen to do so, or have summoned legions of angels of power to his rescue.

7.] *Jesus of Nazareth.*—The hardness of their vile hearts was here displayed in their impudence as murderers of the innocent; villains always attempt to lower the standing of those they assail, malign, or plunder. Thieves and murderers are always liars.

8.] *Let these go their way.*—A command that they obeyed, and left his disciples unmolested.

11.] *The cup.*—The suffering of the woman's seed blood life body, which my Father spirit God hath appointed me, shall I not endure them? John iii. 16: For God so loved the world that he gave his only (spirit) begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

15.] *Another disciple.*—Supposed to be John, the writer of this gospel.

28.] *Hall of judgment.*—The place where Pilate, the Roman governor, held his court. *Lest they should be defiled.*—Their tradition men creed thus taught, not Scripture. They would not enter this apartment of a Gentile, lest they should be unfitted to partake of the passover; so careful were they about contracting ceremonial pollution (close communion), while they were seeking to commit the most horrible crime: murder of the holy innocent, pure, spotless, perfect, sinless, crimeless, Lamb of God, to retain

their men creed mode of mock worship forms and spiritless ceremonies.

31.] *Not lawful.*—The power to put one to death had been taken away from the Jews by the Roman government, and this was the reason why they sought to have Pilate condemn him.

32.] *Saying of Jesus.*—Matt. xx. 19: And shall deliver him to the Gentiles, to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify him; and the third day he shall rise again. Crucifixion was the horrid devil Nero, popish inquisition, devil invention of hell torture, a Roman punishment, while the Jewish punishment for the crime of which they accused him was that of stoning (Lev. xxiv. 11–16). By taking Jesus to the Roman governor they fulfilled Christ's prophecy of himself, concerning the manner of the Lord's sacrifice.

33.] *Art thou the king of the Jews?*—The Jewish priests had falsely accused Jesus of claiming as seed of David to be the legitimate king of the Jews, which they supposed would excite the anger of the Roman governor as being treason against his king Cæsar of Rome (Luke xxiii. 2; John xix. 12).

34.] *Of thyself.*—Have you observed anything treasonable in me, or do you ask the question because others falsely told you such was the fact?

36.] *My kingdom is not of this world.*—Christ affirms the truth that he was a spiritual king, and wholly thereby discards all desires or designs upon the throne of David, king of the mortal blood life Jews. But a spiritual king of saints spirit born holy new creatures, in spirit life immortal love light bodies that never grow old and decrepit, where no rival kings, or wars, or death ever enters. But now is my kingdom from hence, not an earthly nature life kingdom.

37.] *Art thou a king then?*—Of any sort. *Thou sayest.*—This was equivalent to saying, I am a spiritual king of saints spirit born holy. To this end I was born (of the woman's seed: Gen. iii. 15. Begotten by the word spirit life eternal of the spirit Son, of the self-existent and only source of immortal spirit love life). He then proceeded to show briefly what kind of a king he was, one who came into the world to make known the truths of spirit life immortal. Pilate saw that his claims were no crime against the Roman government.

38.] *I find in him no fault.*—This the Holy Ghost caused to be written on an imperishable record, that it might stand an eter-

nal monument of the falsehoods of the Jews, and the perfect innocence of Jesus Christ. And the utter overthrow of the Jewish nation is to us a proof of the Scripture truth. Isa. xlix. 26; 22: Thus saith the Lord God, Behold, I will lift up my hand to the Gentiles.

40.] *Not this man, but Barabbas.*—Pilate gave them the choice to free Christ Jesus, whom they had wilfully and falsely accused, or Barabbas, a horrid murderer and robber; yet they preferred a murderer to the Son of God, the Redeemer and Saviour of all spirit born holy. And whosoever wills to do so may to-day partake of the spirit love life river of water freely, without money and without price, who seek of God, through the spirit vine mediator Christ Jesus, spirit life immortal soul birth.

CHAPTER XIX.

7.] *By our law he ought to die.*—Lev. xxiv. 16: He made himself the son of God. I am a living witness that the Lord Jesus Christ's Father, the Lord God, and his father, the only self-existent life immortal being, and source of all life germs, and their offspring expansive life beings in the universe, through whose life rays light impartations I and all on earth live, and move, and have a being. And in Christ Jesus' name I asked for spirit birth new creature life of God, and his light heaven's sun rays of spirit love peace joy shone above the brightness of the sun, plain in view of my spirit soul mind intellect memory vision, and new creature life being was developed in my soul mind spirit. Being full of love to God, and all that loved him, and a missionary spirit full of salvation's love for all Adam's race, desiring that they all might repent of their sins and come to God through Christ, the door through which God's love light shone, I saw, and each for themselves know and taste the sweets of redeeming grace love of God through his spirit vine Christ Jesus. Whom also I have seen in beatific glorified spirit body clothed in heaven's white robe of righteousness, and he commissioned me to bear his spirit truth to the churches of earth who are blinded by creature Adamic blood life resurrections false, and immortality of the wicked, also utterly false and unscriptural, they have no resurrector (Luke xx. 35-38).

They are not accounted worthy of a resurrection, nor is there in the incorrigible wicked dead any thing of life to raise.

8.] *He was the more afraid.*—This was to Pilate a new charge. He saw the Jews were determined to kill him though innocent, and as he claimed to be the Son of God he was therefore more anxious to release him. His wife also had sent to him to have nothing to do with that just man.

9.] *Whence art thou?*—What is thy origin, human or divine? No answer; Jesus had already given all needful information about himself, and he did not think proper to add to it.

10.] *I have power.*—Pilate proudly boasts of his power, not thinking it was limited.

11.] *Thou couldst.*—Thou hast thy office and power by God's permission. Rom. xiii. 1. There is no power but of God.

12.] *Not Cæsar's friend.*—Tiberius Cæsar, then emperor of Rome, fearing they would thus accuse him to the cruel Cæsar, and cause his loss of office or life also; he murdered Jesus.

13.] *Pavement.*—Gabbatha, an elevated place, paved with costly stones:

14.] *Behold your king.*—Pilate spake this in mockery, and by it gives the Jewish priests and people, who falsely accused Jesus of aspirations for David's temporal earthly throne, a severe rebuke.

15.] *Crucify him.*—No doubt many who had previously shouted hosanna when Jesus rode into Jerusalem as a triumphant leader fulfilling prophecy thereby, then shouted with the majority men creed, political priestcraft, carnal worshipers of forms and ceremonial ordinances, straining as to-day at a gnat baptism, and swallowing a camel-load of filthy false self-righteousness darkness, void of one ray of love to their neighbor church-member, who was sprinkled like Moses and the children of Israel, while they, like Pharaoh, are wholly immersed in selfish darkness, as was the Jews when their cry was, his blood be on us and on our children (Matt. xxvii. 25). Water is not a vital saving ordinance, blood is. Levit. xvii. 11: It is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul.

22.] *I have written.*—I will alter nothing: words of contempt for his murderers.

24.] *Cast lots.*—Ps. xxii. 18: They parted my garments among them, and cast lots upon my vesture. Those wicked Roman soldiers fulfilled unknown to them what David had foretold as a prophet of God.

26.] *Woman.*—Gen. iii. 13: And the Lord God said unto the

woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman (Eve) said, The serpent beguiled, deceived me by his devil death spirit liar within him. 14: And the Lord God said unto the serpent, 15: I will put enmity between thee and the woman; her seed shall bruise thy head. Thus the same appellation is given by the Lord Jesus Christ to his blood life flesh body woman's seed of Eve, the first mother of the human race of mortals nature earth life's carnal products of Adam's sin lust quickening seed that his Lord God Father called Eve in Eden, woman. And Abraham gave the same appellation to Isaac, his son's wife. Gen. xxiv. 8: If the woman will not be willing to follow thee, then thou shalt be clear of this my oath. John ii. 4: Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I do with thee? mine hour is not yet come. Then he saith to the disciple (John, the writer of this most likely), Behold, thy mother! (not the mother of God, as Roman Catholics blasphemously teach). And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own home. Matt. xii. 47: Then one said unto Jesus, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee. 48: But Jesus answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren (49, 50)? Mother of Jesus blood life; not Spirit life. 1 John v. 18.

28.] *Scripture*.—Ps. lxxix. 21: They gave me also gall for my meat; and in my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink.

30.] *It is finished*.—Or fulfilled by this sacrificial blood life offering for souls that should or by faith had been spirit born. Levit. xvii. 11: For it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul. By this offering of Christ, man's salvation is completed as far as can be on God's part; the will of the blood life hearts of mortals consenting the soul mind will becomes impregnated with spirit truths of God, and by faith they become, by way of spirit birth of Christ's spirit love seed of God's promise word immortal spirit, new creature beings in Christ (2 Cor. v. 17). All ceremonies of the Mosaic law ended with the fulfillment of faith's sacrifices. It is finished; the last sacrifice. The Jews are a living proof of the fact; no more do they offer sacrifice. *Gave up the ghost*.—Which spirit of Christ went at once triumphantly with the angel hosts of heaven escort to paradise with the soul of the penitent thief, in the glory throng of love safely born to heaven. Then the third day morning the angel's escort returned with the Lord; he removed from death's prison earth the spirit begotten body to

speaking through to the apostles, and ascend with spirit life power, as emblematic of the angelic escort, that in a similar manner angels would escort safely to heaven all spirit born souls new spirit born creatures in Christ Jesus' love spirit life (Luke xx. 35-38), at their blood life death of the body, there is no possible atonement for the mortal body of Adam or any of his lust sin seed race. Ps. li. 5: Behold I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me. Rom. viii. 6: For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. *Spiritually minded*.—The mind is located in the forehead where the reflective thoughts are born; the blood life body could not live a moment in heaven's atmosphere.

31.] *High day*.—Because the feast of the passover fell upon that day. *Besought*.—The Roman magistrate for permission to break their limbs to hasten their death and removal before the Sabbath.

34.] *Pierced*.—Ps. xxii. 16: They pierced my hands and my feet. 18: They parted my garments among them, and cast lots upon my vesture. Zech. xii. 10: And they shall look upon me whom they have pierced.

CHAPTER XX.

9.] *Knew not the Scripture*.—Like most preachers and people on earth to-day with the hundreds of thousands of unread and searched for truth Bibles on earth; novels, political papers, and worthless magazines, full of falsehood, with enough truth to give a tinge coloring mortals diligently read; and the only book of truth revelations of God's conditional pardon and grace salvation of soul minds spirit born holy beyond the grave they read to settle themselves in ease as to their creed belief, instead of searching the Scriptures to learn what the Lord God says with prayer to God for wisdom and light to comprehend their teachings. James i. 5.

14.] *And knew not*.—Dazzled by divine light, or Luke xxiv. 16: Their eyes were kept from discovering who he was at once.

16.] *Saith unto her*.—And restored thereby her sight knowledge.

17.] *I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God and your God*.—Luke xxiii. 43: Jesus said, To-day shalt

thou be with me in paradise. His spirit was like his Father's, the spirit word creation power Lord God, being the only spirit begotten of woman's seed by God's word power in the universe; mortals in flesh blood life bodies know but little of spirit power gradation; spirit love all flows from God the father of spirits (Heb. xii. 9).

19.] *The same day at evening.*—The first day of the week, which was from that time, and has ever since been observed as the Lord's day, the Christian sabbath. The new creature spirit born gospel grace resurrection spirit sabbath day. The ceremonial emblem sabbath day was closed forever, as was all sacrifice, of which the circumcision emblem Jews are a living proof; for they no more obey their law of sacrifice, which was as binding as the Sabbath law. The new gospel spirit soul mind birth dispensation is opened to the whole world with the spirit Lord's memorial sabbath first resurrection triumph over him that ruled earth with death power (Heb. ii. 14; Acts xx. 7; 1 Cor. xvi. 2; Rev. i. 10). I was in the spirit on the Lord's day.

20.] *Showed unto them his hands.*—To convince them that he was certainly risen from the dead, his spirit rose when the blood life died, but Christ's body spirit begotten spirit life took from the tomb.

21.] *Send I you.*—Thus the Lord now sends all whom he commissions to preach his gospel truths as my spirit Father hath sent me, even so send I you, who, like me, are spirit born holy to preach my gospel spirit life truths as I proclaimed my Father's spirit commands to proclaim the gospel, not men tradition false creeds of men's myth imaginations that cleave to the flesh body blood life resurrection, which cannot possibly be; for they are all sentenced to death, Gen. iii. 19. And I died in flesh blood life body not to redeem dead bodies of nature products that decay and see corruption, but my blood made only atonement for the souls of all who believe, and thereby receive spirit birth of my spirit love of my Father's spirit word truth seed (Matt. xiii. 37, 38; John iii. 5; vi. 63; xi. 25, 26; xv. 5; Rom. viii. 9; 2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 15). Lev. xvii. 11: For it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul, not the body sentenced to death corruption. Christ's spirit begotten body did not see corruption.

22.] *He breathed on them.*—The same as the Lord God, his spirit Father, Gen. ii. 7: And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, that was and is man (Gen. iii. 19; Eccles. xii.

7). And breathed into his nostrils the breath of lives: Plural in the original Hebrew, that he might like wheat seed increase in numbers, as all animate life male seed, as well as mortal male seed does to-day. Job xii. 10: In whose hand is the soul of every living thing. And man became a living soul. *And saith unto them* (his apostles and disciples), *Receive ye the Holy Ghost.*—Thus the Holy Ghost baptism was imparted to the spirit-born children of God, which is imparted to each child of God when spirit born, and sanctified, and made holy. Spirit baptism is the only essential baptism of vital immortal life importance (Matt. iii. 11–12). Luke xxiii. 43: And Jesus said unto the repentant, believing thief on the cross, Verily I say unto thee, to-day shalt thou be with me in paradise, thereby baptizing him with the holy breath spirit word life baptism of the Holy Ghost: no water was used which was only an emblem of the spirit baptism (John vi. 63).

23.] *Remit—retained.*—In accordance with his proclaimed conditions and Scripture laws regarding forgiveness and non-forgiveness, conditions of his spirit word proclamation of God's grace, and the same power and authority are here conferred equally upon all the apostles, and not on Peter alone, and no one is in any respect raised above another. The power conferred was under the teachings of the Holy Ghost, Christ Jesus, now as then guiding all spirit-born holy children of God in the way of truth, to declare the way in which men can be pardoned, sanctified, made holy, and saved in new creature spirit-born beings holy (2 Cor. v. 17).

25.] *Print of the nails.*—Spikes driven through the hands and feet of the holy blessed Redeemer for a sacrificial spirit begotten opening door to heaven's spirit life by way of soul mind. New spirit creature life immortal, of which emblems like water baptism had been offered in faith for some four thousand years. Lev. xvii. 11: For it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul. As if Thomas had said, you are deceived, having only seen a shadow, or appearance of a body, not a true one, but a myth, imaginary one.

27.] *Reach hither thy finger.*—This shows that Jesus knew what Thomas had said. *Reach hither thy hand and thrust it into my side.*—Clearly showing no blood life was there, and that the body was not a body desirable to occupy (Luke xxiv. 39). A spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have in heaven's spirit clime. John iv. 24: God is a Spirit. vi. 63: The flesh profiteth

nothing. Rom. viii. 9; 1 Cor. xv. 50: Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God. No life-blood was in Christ's resurrected body. It was spirit life alone that came from God his Father, and like begets its like, and was void of the Virgin Mary's blood life woman's seed (Gen. iii. 15), which was used to accomplish (Heb. ii. 14). To destroy the devil death; which was then accomplished as far as related to any spirit begotten of the soul mind, the new spirit creature (2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15).

28.] *My Lord and my God.*—This was addressed to Jesus Christ, and was commended by him, as a just expression of true faith.

29.] *Blessed are they.*—They who like Thomas have believed in Christ, and though they have not seen him (as I have), as their Lord and their God.

30.] *Signs.*—Miracles in proof of his divinity, and his resurrection from the dead: oaks never become acorns again: onward is God's spirit law also; the worm body dead has no life resurrection of corruption's rottenness death.

31.] *Ye might believe.*—Exercise living faith in Christ, and through this faith be justified, sanctified, and saved. *His name.*—By his atonement, which is all the merits that any of Adam's rebel sin lust begotten race can plead, and the only value we possess before the only immortal self-existent Father of spirits (Heb. xii. 9), who begets us who are spirit born holy by his love life immortal spirit word, which is a spirit born new spirit being by way of Christ Jesus of the soul mind: a new creature spirit being as Adam when created was a new dust nature product of the highest order of earthy nature products animate with life, which returns like all nature earthy life, animate and inanimate, back to nature elements at its death. But the soul breath of the Lord God intellect mind, like the females of animate nature life eggs, is the female spirit egg of the soul. Ps. xxxiv. 2: My soul shall make her boast in the Lord: the Lord sows his spirit love gospel word seeds in the soul, and therefore the soul may well boast in the Lord, when the spirit egg mind is by the Lord's seed impregnated (Matt. xiii. 37, 38), and spirit born (John iii. 5). A new creature (2 Cor. v. 17; Gal. vi. 7, 8, 15).

CHAPTER XXI.

1.] *Sea of Tiberias.*—The same as the sea of Galilee, and the Lake of Gennesaret (Matt. xxviii. 16). Where the apostles had gone from Jerusalem. Then they returned to Jerusalem. Luke xxiv. 50: And Jesus led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands and blessed them. 51: And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.

3.] *A fishing.*—According to his first trade (perhaps necessitated to do so for food, which he had not quite given up, to employ himself wholly in the ministry, as he did after pentecost.

14.] *The third time.*—The third time he appeared to the apostles when together.

15.] *Lovest thou me.*—Loving God supremely over all others was the duty of the apostles, and of all Adam's race. Food, raiment, rains, earth's pleasant atmosphere to breathe, light life, and the sustaining of the earth in its annual evolutions, and restraining the internal liquid fires of the earth to the close of time, and every blessing mortals and immortals receive, all are the free gifts of God, and God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish (be annihilated as to life in any form), but have everlasting life.

18.] *Stretch forth thy hands.*—In the agonies of martyrdom death.

22.] *Follow thou me.*—That is the order of the commander-in-chief of earth's spirit born holy army of love light. Amen. Face front, advance, advance, never look back for loaves and fishes.

24.] *This is the disciple.*—John, the writer of this gospel of truth.

25.] *The world.*—A hyperbolical speech, to show not only the number, but also the immensity of the understanding, and the benefit of Christ's works; or as Lord God Creator of all suns and systems of worlds, and things therein innumerable; and parchment writings were large and cumbrous; printing art was then unknown, and paper, steam, and telegraphings, and thousands of other useful improvements now known upon the earth. Dan. xii. 4: Even to the time of the end. Many shall run to and fro; railroads, steamboats, and knowledge shall be increased, art of printing, power press, telegraph, etc.

DAY THOUGHTS.

ELECTRICITY, that acts on dead body, brain and nerves, is insantly considered by body resurrectors to be the soul mind that actuates the mortal's living muscles, nerves, and brain. Electricity never thinks or lives ; it is merely great in expansive power.

The Pictorial History of England, 6th vol., gives the history of the Church of England. Page 352. Henry VIII., King of England, aspires to rule the Pope of Rome.

Page 354. Clement signed a dispensation granting that Cardinal Wolsey, or any other cardinal delegate, might grant Henry VIII. a divorce from Catherine, but he was scrupulous as to granting the decretal bull ; Mary, Catherine's daughter, was to be legitimatized. Wolsey did not like Anne Boleyn. Clement issues a bull, and appoints Cardinal Campeggio, a Latin cardinal, to act with Wolsey, the bull to be kept secret. Anne Boleyn was taken sick ; Henry frightened at the pestilence, Anne was sent to her father's, Lord Rochford.

Page 358. Wolsey's property taken by Henry VIII. : half a million crowns, and chancellor's seal, and other jewels, etc.

Page 362. In March, 1529, Pope Clement published a breve, forbidding Henry VIII., King of England, to contract a marriage under pain of excommunication from the Roman Catholic Church.

Page 363. Cromwell advised Henry VIII. to deny the authority of the Pope of Rome, and virtually to become the pope-head of the Church of England, then known as the Romish Church ; that by the present division of the spiritual and temporal, Henry VIII. was only half a king ; and that the bishops and clergy ought to be made wholly dependent on the crown, and to absolve themselves wholly from the Pope of Rome. Henry VIII. aspires to be the pope-head of the Church of England. Cromwell was at once sworn of his privy council, and the cardinals, bishops, and clergy of England were involved by the advice of Cromwell in a charge of pre-munire, or accused as factors and abettors of Wolsey in having,

under the pope's bull, acknowledged his authority as legate cardinal. Cromwell hinted to the clergy (who were greatly alarmed, and assembled in convocation), that the royal wrath might be assuaged by a round sum of money. They offered one hundred thousand pounds. Henry refused to accept it or give pardon unless in the preamble to their grant they formally acknowledged him to be the protector and only supreme head of the Church and clergy of England. They took three days to consider the proposition, and by a majority they agreed to make Henry VIII., King of England, their supreme head (or pope), with the limitation, *quantum per legem Christi liceat* (as far as may be by the law of Christ).

Page 364. Thomas Bilney, a learned and amiable man, was burned by order of Henry VIII., at Smithfield, as a heretic, for having attempted to expose the errors of popery.

This was the beginning of the atrocious system pursued during the rest of the reign of Henry VIII., in which Catholic clergy were plundered and hanged on the one side, and the professors of the reformed religion were burned on the other, in pretty equal proportions; the Protestant fires being made to blaze with great fury, whenever any terrible blow was struck by Henry at the established church. Under the guidance of Cromwell, parliament passed an act for the abolition of annates, or first fruits paid yearly to the Pope of Rome; and at the same time abrogated the authority of the clergy in convocation, and annexed the authority to the crown. On the 15th November, 1533, Pope Clement signed a breve, declaring both Henry VIII., King of England, and Anne Boleyn excommunicated, unless they separated. January 25, 1533, they were married.

Page 366. Henry VIII., letter to Archbishop Cranmer. We your king and sovereign do recognize no superior on earth.

Page 367. June 1, 1533, only four days after Archbishop Cranmer had divorced Catherine, Anne Boleyn was crowned Queen of England, Cranmer officiating. July 11, 1533, Friars Peto and Elstow preached against the king, and were, with all the friars, soon after banished from England. D. D. Curwen, who flattered the murderer king, Henry made a bishop of his Church of England; and the bishops gave it the name of Episcopal Church.

Page 369. 1534: Soon after the holy days of Christmas, Parliament met for the discharge of very important business of various kinds, and before it rose (on the 30th of March, 1534) it

wholly severed the ties which for many centuries had united England and Rome. Acting on the impulse already received, the parliament prohibited every kind of payment and every kind of appeal to the Pope of Rome, and confirmed Henry VIII., King of England, as the supreme head of the English Church, or Episcopal Church; and vested in the king alone the right to appoint all bishops, and to decide all ecclesiastical causes. The royal assent which abolished the papal power in England was signed March 30, 1534. Henry found his new quality of supreme head of the church burdensome, and made Cromwell his Royal Vicegerent Vicar-General and chief commissary, with all the spiritual authority belonging to the king. Thus a layman, Cromwell, became superior to the Archbishop of Canterbury. And now, 1873, Episcopal bishops, who are but a continued succession of the Church of Rome and its inquisition hell-fire tortures for one thousand two hundred and sixty years, claim apostolic succession. The Catholic Pope of Rome, to whom these cardinals and bishops and priests of the Church of England had previously sworn allegiance (before their pledged allegiance to Henry VIII., King of England as their supreme (pope) head), was of the succession of popes made by the cardinals after their first pope, who was made by the decree of Justinian, in A.D. 533, the Bishop of Rome was declared the first of the priesthood, "and the head of all the holy churches." But these provisions of the Justinian code, could not go into effect in favor of the Bishop of Rome at the time they were issued, because Rome was in the possession of the Ostrogoths, who were Arians, and violently opposed to the Catholic faith. It was not till the conquest of Rome, in 538, that the Catholic bishop could exercise the power with which he had been clothed by Justinian. The army of Justinian, under Belisarius, who had conquered the Vandals, put an end to the empire and dominion of the Goths at Rome. Belisarius entered Rome December 10, 536. The Goths commenced the siege of Rome, March 537; and in one year and nine months the Goths raised the siege, burnt their tents, and tumultuously repassed the Milvian bridge.—*Gibbon's Decline and Fall*, chap. 41, page 143.

Rev. xiii. 18. 666. The Latin tongue. 16. Mark (with their finger and holy water) on their foreheads (the cross): we see now the Pope of Rome's words of infallibility and death knell of the papacy has sounded in the taking of Rome by the King of Italy, September 21, 1870. And the oath of allegiance

to the King of Prussia by the archbishop, October, 1873. And the King of Austria affiliates at the same date with Victor Immanuel, king of Italy, fully described in the near future. Dan. vii. 11 and Rev. xxii. 17 give the closing spiritual gospel truth free from all popes or earth officials. Christ is the only high-priest and rock of salvation. And the Spirit and the bride say, Come; and let him that heareth say Come; and let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

Heavenly wisdom is not learned at earth's schools or colleges: Christ is the only master-teacher of spirit life immortal truths (Matt. xxiii. 10). Spirit birth life immortal seed, spirit love of the Father of spirits (Heb. xii. 9), is sown by God's bosom love Son, the Holy Ghost, in the only spirit begotten Son's blood life body of woman's seed egg of Adamic mortal nature, Jesus Christ's blood life Son of man, who sows the spirit life immortal seed in the her soul spirit intellect mind egg (Matt. xiii. 37, 38), which is spirit love life immortal seed of the spirit God (John iv. 24), who only hath immortality (1 Tim. vi. 16). For thy maker is thy husband, Isa. liv. 5. My soul shall make her boast in the Lord: the humble shall hear thereof, and be glad (Ps. xxxiv. 2). Begotten of God and born of God (1 John v. 18). iii. 9: Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him, and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. 10: In this the children of God are manifest, not children or descendants of Adam and Eve, who, with all their blood life probation sin lust seed, are sentenced to death (Gen. ii. 17; iii. 19, 22, 24). Ps. li. 5: Behold I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me. Ezek. xviii. 4: The soul that sinneth it shall die. Job xii. 9, 10: In the Lord's hand is the soul of every living thing and the breath of all mankind. John iii. 3: Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. 5: Except a man be born of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the spirit is spirit. iv. 24: God is a spirit. Rom. viii. 8: So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. 9. But ye (spirit born) are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be the spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the spirit of Christ, he is none of his. 1 Cor. xv. 23: Christ the first-fruits (of spirit life resurrection); afterwards they that are Christ's. 2 Cor. v. 17: If any man be in Christ, he is a new creature. Eph. ii. 1: And you hath Christ quickened, who

were dead in trespasses and sins. John xi. 25, 26: Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection and the life. (Adam's breath or soul, or sin lust seed blood life, has nothing whatever in the spirit born of God through Christ the spirit vine life, John xv. 5. The soul does not belong to Adam, Ezek. xviii. 4.) He that believeth in me, though he were (spiritually) dead, yet shall he live; and whosoever liveth (is spirit born of God) and believeth in me shall never die. This is the first resurrection; if they never die, they were dead, or as the animate nature life base germ eggs in the females of each species on earth, which eggs, like the female or her soul mind spirit intellect egg unquickened (Eph. ii. 1), is utterly void of any life, which any farmer can readily test by shutting a hen alone, she will lay eggs, but she cannot from such eggs hatch any chickens; thus soul's mind intellect belief spirit eggs, unquickened by God's spirit life immortal love seed sown by the Saviour, will produce nothing of life immortal. Gal. v. 6: For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh by love. vi. 7; viii. 15: Be not deceived; God is not mocked (as a resurrector of rotten bodies, or a torturer of them in endless fires, or as burning himself in Adam's breath: such mockery of God is blasphemy, and came from Egyptian priests, who embalmed the Egyptian mummies); for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap; for he that soweth to his flesh (blood life sin lusts and appetites), shall of the flesh reap corruption: but he that soweth to the spirit shall of the spirit reap life everlasting; for in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision; but a new creature with new life; Christ is the life of all he resurrects or quickens to life. Nothing of Adam's life whatever is in the new resurrected to immortal life spirit child of God, who is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. The incorrigible wicked, that sow to the flesh blood life desires, reap corruption; a rotten body, and sin death soul is all their store. Isa. v. 24: Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff, so their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust; because they have cast away the law of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel. The second resurrection of the spirit born new creature in Christ from the dead blood life body at its death is fully stated, Luke xx. 35-38. As children of God, not Adam's seed nor Satan's, Christ is the life of all he resurrects. Ps. xc. 10: We fly away.



BS

3540

S55

474223

Shaw

Way thoughts
of the New Testament

2-1507

UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO



48 454 204

